THE TYNDALE BIBLE NEW TESTAMENT

That portion of the word of God known as the New Testament As translated by the "prince of translators" William Tyndale And by God's grace transcribed and compiled by Jim Turner

The Life of William Tyndale

Without speculating as to the whys and wherefores, this man spent eight or more years between Oxford, where he graduated with a BA, and Cambridge, where he had graduated with a MA degree, only to begin his post-graduate career as a tutor to young children. I will ascribe it to God's providence, which becomes clear, when we look at what he did rather than why he did it.

Tyndale was a man driven by a fire in his belly, having a burning desire to translate the word of God from the Hebrew and Greek text, because the only thing being presented as the "word of God" was the corrupt Latin vulgate, and the few printed "bibles" from the corrupt Alexandrian text (Codex Alexandrius). Tyndale's actions, born of his desire, defined a pattern for his life that is clearly seen. His educational achievements were, no doubt, intended to equip and prepare him for the task of translating the word of God from the original language into an English bible.

His spirituality was assaulted by the warped and twisted theology taught at Oxford, so leaving Oxford he enrolled at Cambridge to study the Greek and Hebrew languages. His intent was to translate both the Old and New Testament. His studies and life experiences would serve to kindle a fire in his bosom, and a burning in his soul born of a belief that the word of God was not intended as exclusive for an elite ruling class of Priests, Bishops and Popes. The pure word of God must be translated and printed in the English language if ever there was to be true Gospel preaching of God's power unto salvation in the Congregations of Christ. It is evident that Tyndale was convinced of the apostle Paul's glorious statement in Romans

1:16, "For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ, because it is the power of God unto salvation to all that believe, namely to the Jew, and also to the Gentile" (Tyndale Translation).

In William Tyndale's day, attending a Roman Catholic church was mandatory. The full content of every service was in Latin, a language only few people could understand. This ensured that if a person was unable to understand the language of the service, that person could, in compliance with the law, attend every service in his lifetime without ever hearing a single word of God, yet being told every day he was right with God. The tragic result would be that he would finally die in his sins and be consigned to the lake of fire. William Tyndale was appalled by this, and preached vehemently against it, thus setting the stage for his famous Plough Boy statement. That statement is as follows

One day Tyndale was conversing with a Catholic priest about the necessity of having the word of God in the English language. During the course of their conversation, the priest said to Tyndale that the Bible in the English language was not necessary. He further stated that as long as they had the Bishop of Rome's laws (the canon law of the church) the scriptures were not needed. To that person, Tyndale returned this memorable answer:

"I defy the Pope and all his laws, If God spare my life, I will make the boy that drives the plough to know more of the scripture than thou dost"

What a profound statement this was! To my knowledge Tyndale was not a prophet, yet made a statement that proved true with the printing of the first New Testament in the English language as used in his time. The work here presented was translated from the original Greek and Hebrew. This translated text, are the very words which God had spoken to man, would one day be known as the most accurate rendering

of the Textus Receptus Tyndale declared; that by God's grace he would give the Plough Boy the scriptures in a language he could read and understand.

William Tyndale's life was terminated by being burned alive at the stake, and we are told that his bibles used as fuel to the fire, this before he could complete the Old Testament. Miles Coverdale completed Tyndale's work in the translation of the Old Testament, and both their works were used in the publication of what was known as "The Bishops' Bible." It also was the basis for the Matthew Bible. The Matthew Bible was named for a pseudonym Thomas Matthew, which was the name adopted by those involved in its publication. It was first published in 1537 by John Rogers. Tyndale died under the charge of the heresy for printing the word of God in the English language.

If the King James Bible had never been published, our bibles today would probably look like the Tyndale translation, which would still be God's word, albeit in an old English style. Preachers of truth would be preaching the same truth from the same word.

The people of this world who name the name of Christ, and have in their possession a copy of the beloved King James Bible, owe a debt of gratitude to William Tyndale who dedicated his life to, and actually gave his life for, the labor of love represented by his translation efforts. God used him to translate His word from the otriginal received text into our own English language. Without this work, whether some realize it or not, we might not have a King James Version as we know it (K.J.V.) Bible in our hands, or in our homes, since 92 % of the K.J.V. came directly from the Tyndale text. When Tyndale undertook the task it was against the law, under penalty of death in England, for anyone, to have in their possession a bible transcribed from 14th/15th century English into 16th

century English Such a bible would about the same level of English as our K.J.V. Bibles. Of modern times

Without question, our beloved K.J.V. is the word of God, except where King James violated the command of Revelation 22:18 &19, "I testify unto every man that heareth the words of prophesy of this book, if any man shall add unto these things God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall minish of the words of the book of this prophesy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from, those things which are written in this book."

That wicked King ordered the translators not to use the proper word. They were ordered, probably under threat of death, to treat the Greek word ekklesia (ecclesia) in a manner, that it cannot in any wise or honorable way be used. It was neither translated nor transliterated, rather, the translators were ordered to use the alien word "church" instead of the proper rendering "congregation" or "assembly" which both mean the same thing. Thus, King James foisted upon the world an unscriptural term that supported a universal invisible church heresy. Had our Baptist brothers in the past held firm, and done the right thing, the damage could have been mitigated. Insistence on the use of the proper translation might well have resulted in the use of congregation or assembly which would have provided a powerful scriptural argument for defending the true nature and structure of the Lord's congregations. Since a congregation must be able to congregate, and an assembly must be able to assemble, defenders of truth could have pointed to this true meaning for the Greek ekklesia. A congregation can assemble, and an assembly can congregate, but a universal invisible figment of imagination, as has been conjured up by deception and falsehood through the centuries, can do neither.

FOREWARD

It is an honor, as Brother Jim Turner's Pastor, to write a foreword for this work I met Brother Turner in the early eighties at a Family Bible Camp in Central Oregon. He was a preacher from California that was Pastor of a New Testament congregation in Klamath Falls, Oregon at the time. I was impressed with him right away for his doctrinal stand on Sovereign Grace, Landmark Truth, and the Pre-trib Return of Christ. In the providence of God, the work in Klamath Falls The Lord's Baptist Church in Tacoma, closed down. Washington had a Bible Study group meeting in Port Orchard and felt that it would be good to ask Elder Jim Turner to come and be our Home Missionary in Port Orchard. He accepted the call and moved to Washington with his dear wife Sister They have been among our closest friends since that Elder Turner has served as our adult Bible Study teacher and often fills the pulpit when I am out of town.

A while back, Brother Jim became fascinated with William Tyndale's translation of the Greek New Testament into English. He was particularly thrilled about the way Tyndale translated the Greek word ecclesia as congregation. And the way God closed the door against the prospect of sprinkling or pouring to be passed as Baptism Matthew 3:11, which demands immersion. Brother Turner is a very strong believer and loves the Authorized King James Bible. He does not favor the modern translations that come from the tainted texts of Knowing that the Tyndale work came Wescott and Hort. from the "Received Text" and that the transcribers of our King James Bible relied heavily upon the work of William Tyndale, Brother Jim became burdened about making an edition of the Tyndale New Testament available that is easier to read than the old 16th Century English with enumerated verses, maps, a concordance and all.

With the help of a few volunteers in the congregation, the work of transcribing the Tyndale New Testament from the old 16th

Century spelling to more modern spelling began. In time, the volunteer help faded away and Brother Turner was left to shoulder the bulk of the work himself. He experimented with various different fonts and formats.

He wrestled with the temptation to revise words and phrases but decided that he did not want to fall into the trap of being a "Higher Critic" and decided to stay with the original words and phrases by Tyndale with perhaps a foot note of clarification here or there. I am very thankful that Brother Turner had the steadfast determination to stay with the project. This work is a treasure beyond measure indeed.

Larry J. Killion, Pastor The Lord's Baptist Church Tacoma, Washington

There is a principal which is a bar against all
Information, which is proof against all
argument
And which cannot fail to keep a man in everlasting
ignorance
That principal is condemnation before
investigation

INDEX

The Gospel According to Matthew	1
The Gospel According To Saint Mark	78
The Gospel According To Saint Luke	127
The Gospel According To Saint John	210
The Acts of the Apostles	269
Paul's Epistle to the Romans	348
Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians	381
The Second Epistle to the Corinthians	413
Paul's Epistle to the Galatians	
Paul's Epistle to the Ephesians	445
Paul's Epistle to the Philippians	457
Paul's Epistle to the Colossians	465
Pauls First Epistle to the Thessalonians	472
Second Epistle of Paul to the Thessalonians	479
Paul's First Epistle to Timothy	483
Paul's Second Epistle to Timothy	492
Paul's Epistle to Titus	498
Paul's Epistle to Philemon	502
Paul's Epistle to the Hebrews	504
The Epistle of James	528
The Second Epistleof Peter	537
John's First Epistle	546
John's Second Epistle	552
John's Third Epistle	560
The Epistle of Jude	563
The Revelation of Jesus Christ as Given to John	568
Concordance for Tyndale New Testament	604
BIBLE LAND MAPS	
First Missionary journey of Paul	
Second Missionary journey of Paul	786
Third Missionary journey of Paul	787
Congregations of the Revelation	788

Generation of Jesus Christ

Matthew 1:17

THE GOSPEL OF SAINT MATTHEW

HIS is the book of the generation of Jesus Christ the Son of David the Son also of Abraham

- 2 Abraham begat Isaac: Isaac begat Jacob: Jacob begat Judas and his brethren:
- 3 Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar: Phares begat Esrom: Esrom begat Aram:
- 4 Aram begat Aminadab: Aminadab begat Naasson: Naasson begat Salmon:
- 5 Salmon begat Boaz of Rahab: Boaz begat Obed of Ruth: Obed begat Jesse;
- 6 Jesse begat David the king: David the king begat Solomon of her that was the wife of Urias;
- 7 Solomon begat Roboam: Roboam begat Abia: Abia begat Asa;
- 8 Asa begat Josaphat: Josaphat begat Joram: Joram begat Ozias:
- 9 Ozias begat Joatham: Joatham begat Achaz: Achaz begat Ezekias begat Zorobabel;
- 10 Ezekias begat Mannasses: Mannasses begat Amon: Amon begat Josias:
- 11 Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon;
- 12 And after they were brought to Babylon Jechonias begat Salathiel: Salathiel begat Zorobabel;
- 13 Zorobabel begat Abiud: Abiud begat Eliakim: Eliakim begat Azor;
- 14 Azor begat Sadoc; Sadoc begat Achim: Achim begat Eliud:
- 15 Eliud begat Eleazar: Eleazar begat Matthan: Matthan begat Jacob:
- 16 Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary of which was born that Jesus that is called Christ.
- 17 All the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the captivity of Babylon

Matthew1:18

Birth of Christ

are fourteen generations. and from the captivity of Babylon unto Christ are also fourteen generations;

- 18 The birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise. When his mother Mary was betrothed to Joseph, before they came to dwell together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.
- 19 Then Joseph her husband, being a perfect man, and loth to make an example, of her was minded to put her away secretly.
- 20 While he thus thought behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife, for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost.
- 21 She shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.
- 22 All this was done, to fulfill which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying:
- 23 Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a Son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which is by interpretation, God with us.
- 24 And Joseph as soon as he awoke out of sleep did as the angel of the Lord bade him and took his wife unto him,
- 25And knew her not till she had brought forth her first Son: and called his name Jesus.

CHAPTER 2

- HEN Jesus was born at Bethlehem in Jewry in the time of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men, from the east to Jerusalem,
- 2 Saying: Where is he that is born king of the Jews? We have seen his star in the East, and are come to worship him.
- 3 When Herod the king, had heard this, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.
- 4 And he gathered all the chief Priests, and Scribes of, the people and asked of them where Christ should be born.
- 5 And they said unto him: at Bethlehem in Jewry, for thus it is written, by the prophet,
- 6 And thou Bethlehem in the land of Jewry art not the least

Flee unto Egypt

Matthew 2:17

concerning the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come the captain that shall govern my people Israel.

- 7 Then Herod privately called the wise men, and diligently, enquired of them the time of the star that appeared
- 8 And sent them to Bethlehem saying: Go and search diligently for the child, And when ye have found, him bring me word, that I may come and worship him also.
- 9 When they had heard the king they departed: and lo, the star, which they saw in the East, went before them till it came and stood over the place where the child was.
- 10 When they saw the star they were exceedingly glad:
- 11 and went into the house, and found the child, with Mary his mother, and kneeled down and worshiped, him and opened their treasures, and offered unto him gifts, gold, frankincense, and myrrh.
- 12 And after they were warned of God, in a dream, that they should not go again to Herod, they returned into their own country another way.
- 13 When they were departed: behold the angel of the Lord, appeared to Joseph in dream saying: arise, and take the child, and his mother, and flee into Egypt and abide there till I bring thee word. For Herod will seek the child to destroy him.
- 14 When he arose, he took the child and his mother, by night and departed into Egypt
- 15 and was there, until The death of Herod, to fulfill, that which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, which saith, out of Egypt have I called my Son.
- 16 Then Herod perceiving that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, as many as were two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently searched out of the wise men.
- 17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by the prophet, Jeremiah, saying:

Matthew 2:18

The kingdom of heaven is at hand

- 18 On the hills, was a voice heard, mourning, weeping, and great lamentation: Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they were not.
- 19 When Herod was dead: behold, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,
- 20 Saying: arise, and take the child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the child's life.
- 21 Then he arose, and took the child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.
- 22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Jewry in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither.
- notwithstanding, after he was warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:
- 23 and went and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: to fulfill that which was spoken by the Prophets: he shall be called a Nazarene.

CHAPTER 3

- In those days John the Baptist, came preaching in the wilderness of Jewry,
- 2 Saying; Repent ye: the kingdom of heaven is at hand.
- 3 This is he of whom it is spoken, by the prophet Isaiah, which saith: The voice of a crier in wilderness, prepare ye the Lord's way, and make his paths straight.
- 4 This John had his garment of camels hair, and a girdle of a skin, about his loins. His meat was locusts and wild honey.
- 5 Then went out to him Jerusalem and all Jewry, and all the region roundabout Jordan,
- 6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sin.
- 7 When he saw many of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees come to his Baptism, he said unto them: O generation of vipers, who hath taught you to flee from the vengeance to come?
- 8 Bring forth therefore the fruits belonging to repentance:
- 9 And see that you think not to say in yourselves, we have

I baptize you in water

Matthew 4:4

Abraham to our father: for I say unto you that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham

- 10 Even now is the axe put unto the root of trees: so that every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire
- 11 I baptize you ¹in water in token of repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:
- 12 Which hath also his fan in his hand, and will purge his floor, and gather the wheat into his garner, and will burn the chaff with unquenchable fire.
- 13 Then came Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.
- 14 But John forbade him saying: I ought to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?
- 15 Jesus answered and said to him, Let it be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness. Then he suffered him.
- 16 And Jesus as soon as he was baptized, came straight out of the water. And lo heaven was open over him: and John saw the spirit of God descend like a dove and light upon him.
- 17 And, lo, there came a voice from heaven, saying: This is my beloved Son, in whom is my delight.

CHAPTER 4

THEN was Jesus led away of the Spirit into wilderness to be tempted of the devil.

- 2 And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungered.
- 3 Then came to him the tempter, and said: if thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.
- 4 He answered and said: it is written, man shall not live by bread only, but by every word that procedeth out of the mouth

-

¹ In water denies any other form of baptism apart from Immersion as baptism

Matthew 4:5

Jesus rebuffs Satans temptation

of God.

- 5 Then the Devil took him up into the Holy city, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple,
- 6 And said unto him, if thou be the Son of God, cast thy self down, for it is written, he shall give his angels charge over thee, and with their hands they shall hold thee up, that thou dash not thy foot against a stone.
- 7 And Jesus said to him, it is written also, Thou shalt not tempt thy Lord God.
- 8 The devil took him up again and led him into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and all the glory of them;
- 9 And said to him: all these will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me
- 10 Then said Jesus unto him. Avoid Satan. For it is written thou shalt worship the Lord thy God and him only shalt thou serve.
- 11 Then the devil left him, and behold, the angels came and ministered unto him.
- 12 When Jesus had heard that John was taken, he departed into Galilee;
- 13 And left Nazareth and went and dwelt in Capernaum which is a city upon the sea in the coasts of Zabulon and Nephthalim
- 14 To fulfill that which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet saying:
- 15 The land of Zabulon and Nephthalim the way of the sea beyond Jordan Galilee of the Gentles
- 16 The people which sat in darkness saw great light and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is begun to shine.
- 17 From that time Jesus began to preach and to say: repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand
- 18 As Jesus walked by the sea of Galilee he saw two brethren Simon which was called Peter and Andrew his brother casting a net into the sea for they were fishers

I will make you fishers of men

Matthew 5:10

- 19 And he said unto them follow me and I will make you fishers of men.
- 20 And they straight way left their nets and followed him.
- 21 And he went forth from thence and saw other two brethren James the son of Zebedee and John his brother in the ship with Zebedee their father mending their nets and called them.
- 22 And they with out tarrying left the ship and their father and followed him.
- 23 And Jesus went about all Galilee teaching in their synagogues and preaching the gospel of the kingdom and healed all manner of sickness and all manor diseases among the people.
- 24 And his fame spread abroad throughout all Syria. and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and gripinges and them that were possessed with devils and those which were lunatic and those that had the palsy: and he healed them
- 25 And there followed him a great number of people from Galilee, and from the ten cities, and from Jerusalem, and from Jewry, and from the regions that lie beyond Jordan.

CHAPTER 5

THEN he saw the people, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set his disciples came to him,

- 2 and he opened his mouth, and taught them
- 3 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
- 4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.
- 5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.
- 6 Blessed are they which hunger and thirst for righteousness: for they shall be filled.
- 7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.
- 8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.
- 9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.
- 10 Blessed are they which suffer persecution for righteousness

Matthew 5:11

The sermon on the Mount

sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

- 11 Blessed are ye, when men revile you, and persecute you, and shall falsely say all manner of evil sayings against you, for my sake.
- 12 Rejoice, and be glad for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the Prophets, which were before your days.
- 13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but and if the salt have lost its saltiness, what can be salted therewith? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and to be trodden under foot of men.
- 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that that is set on an hill cannot be hid.
- 15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel but on a candle stick and it lighteth all that are in the house.
- 16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good work, and glorify your Father, which is in heaven.
- 17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: no I am not come to destroy them, but to fulfill them.
- 18 For truly I say unto you till heaven and earth perish, one jot or one title of the law shall not escape, till all be fulfilled
- 19 Whosoever breaketh one of these least commandments and teacheth men so he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven. but whosoever observeth and teacheth them, them the same, shalt be called great in the kingdom of heaven.
- 20 For I say unto you, except your righteousness exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye cannot enter into the kingdom of heaven.
- 21 Ye have heard how it was said unto them of the old time; thou shalt not kill; for whosoever killeth shall be in danger of judgment:
- 22 But I say unto you, whosoever is angry with his brother shall be in danger of judgment: whosoever saith, unto his brother Racha shall be in danger of a council. but whosoever saith thou fool shall be in danger of hell fire.
- 23 Therefore when thou offerest thy gift at the altar and there

Agree with thine adversary quickly

Matthew 5:36

remember that thy brother hath ought against thee;

- 24 Leave there thine offering before the altar, and go thy way first and be reconciled to thy brother and then come and offer thy gift.
- 25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with him; lest that adversary deliver thee to the judge and the judge deliver thee to the minister, and then thou be cast into prison.
- 26 I say unto thee verily thou shalt not come out thence, till thou have paid the utmost farthing.
- 27 Ye have heard how it was said to them, of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery
- 28 But I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a wife lusting after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.
- 29 Wherefore if thy right eye offend thee pluck him out and cast him from thee: better it is for thee that one of thy members should perish than, that thy whole body be cast into hell
- 30 Also if thy right hand offend thee, cut him off, and cast him from thee, better for thee that one of thy members perish, than, that all thy body should be cast into hell.
- 31 It is said, whosoever shall. put away his wife, let him give her a testimonial also of the divorcement.
- 32 But I say unto you: whosoever put away his wife, (except it be for fornication) causeth her to break matrimony, And whosoever shall marry her that is divorced breaketh wedlock.
- 33 Again ye have heard how it was said to them of old time, thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform thine oath to God.
- 34 But I say unto you, sware not at all; neither by heaven; for it is Gods seat:
- 35 Nor yet by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great king:
- 36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst

Matthewe 6:37

Ye shall therefore be perfect

not make one white hair or black:

- 37 But your communication shall be Yea yea; Nay nay; for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.
- 38 Ye have heard how it is said, an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.
- 39 But I say to you that ye resist not wrong: but whosoever give thee a blow on thy right cheek, turn to him the other.
- 40 And if any will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.
- 41 And whosoever will compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.
- 42 Give to him that asketh, and from him that would borrow turn not away,
- 43 Ye have heard how it is said, thou shalt love thy neighbor, and hate thine enemy.
- 44 But I say unto you, love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, pray for them which do you wrong and persecute you;
- 45 That ye may be the children of your Father that is in heaven; for he maketh his sun to arise on the evil and on the good and sendeth his rain on the just and unjust.
- 46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward shall ye have? do not the Publicans even so?
- 47 And if ye be friendly to your brethren only, what singular thing do ye? do not the Publicans likewise?
- 48 Ye shall therefore be perfect even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect

CHAPTER 6

- TAKE heed to your alms, that ye give it not in the sight of men, to the intent that ye would be seen of them: Or else ye get no reward of your Father which is in heaven.
- 2 Whensoever therefore thou givest thine alms, thou shalt not make a trumpet to be blown before thee, as the hypocrites, do in the synagogues and in the streets, for to be praised of men verily I say unto you, they have their reward.

The model prayer

Matthew 6:16

- 3 But when thou doest thine alms let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth
- 4 That thine alms may be secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.
- 5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, because they would be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward.
- 6 But when thou prayest, enter into thy chamber, and shut thy door, and pray to thy Father which seeth in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.
- 7 And when ye pray, babble not much as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much babblings sake.
- 8 Be ye not like them therefore: for your Father knoweth whereof ye have need before, ye ask of him.
- 9 After this manner therefore ²pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name
- 10 Let thy kingdom come. Thy will be fulfilled as well in earth, as it is in heaven.
- 11 Give us this day our daily bread.
- 12 And forgive our trespasses, even as we forgive our trespassers.
- 13 And lead us not into temptation: but deliver us from evil for thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, forever. Amen.
- 14 For and if ye shall forgive other men their trespass your heavenly Father shall also forgive you.
- 15 But and if ye will not forgive men their trespasses, ³no more shall your Father forgive your trespasses.
- 16 Moreover when ye fast be not sad as the hypocrites are. For they disfigure their faces that they might be seen of men how

-

² This is the model prayer the Lord's prayer is John 17

³ A severe warning be quick to forgive

Matthew 6:17

Consider the lilies

they fast. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward.

- 17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face
- 18 That it appear not unto men how that thou fastest: but unto thy Father, which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.
- 19 See that ye gather you not treasure upon the earth, where rust and moths corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal:
- 20 But gather ye treasure together in heaven, where neither rust, nor moths corrupt, and where thieves, neither break up nor yet steal:
- 21 For wheresoever your treasure is, there will your hearts be also.
- 22 The light of the body is thine eye: Wherefore if thine eye be single, all thy body shall be full of light.
- 23 But if thine eye be wicked, then all thy whole body be full of darkness wherefore if the light that is in thee be darkness: how great is that darkness.
- 24 No man can serve two masters: for either he shall hate the one, and love the other: or else he shall lean to the one, and despise the other: ye cannot serve God and mammon.
- 25 Therefore I say unto you, Be not careful for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, for what ye shall put on. Is not the life more worth than meat, and the the body more of value than raiment?
- 26 Behold the fouls of the air: for they sow not, neither reap, nor yet carry into the barns: and yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?
- 27 Which of you (though he took thought therefore) could put one cubit unto his stature?
- 28 And why care ye then for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow. they labor not, neither spin.
- 29 And yet for all that I say unto you, Not even Solomon, in all his royalty was arrayed like unto one of these.

He that seeketh findeth

Matthew 7:11

- 30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grass which is today in the field and tomorrow cast into the furnace, shall he not much more clothe thee, O ye of little faith.
- 31 Therefore take no thought saying: what shall we eat or what shall we drink? or wherewith shall we be clothed?
- 32 After all these things seek the Gentiles: for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.
- 33 But rather seek ye first the kingdom of heaven and the righteousness thereof, and all these things shall be ministered unto you.
- 34 Care not then for the morrow: but let the morrow care for itself. For the day present hath ever enough of its own trouble.

CHAPTER 7

- JUDGE not, that ye be not judged. 2 For as ye judge, so shall ye be judged: and with what measure ye mete, with the same shall it be measured to you again.
- 3 Why seest thou a mote in thy brothers eye, and perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye.
- 4 Or why sayest thou to thy brother: suffer me to pluck out the mote out of thine eye; and behold a beam is in thine own eye.
- 5 Hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to pluck out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

Give not that which is holy, to dogs, neither cast your pearls before swine, lest they tread them under their feet, and the other turn and rend you.

- 7 Ask and it shall be given you seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.
- 8 For whosoever ask receieveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.
- 9 Is there any man among you, which if his son asked him bread, would offer him a stone?
- 10 Or if he asked for a fish, would he proffer him a serpent?
- 11 If ye then, which are evil can give to your children good

Matthew 7:12

This is the law and the prophets

gifts: how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

- 12 Therefore whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, even so do ye to them: this is the law and the Prophets.
- 13 Enter in at the straight gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction: and many there be which go in thereat:
- 14 But straight is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life: and few there be that find it.
- 15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.
- 16 Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of briers?
- 17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit. but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.
- 18 A good tree cannot bring forth bad fruit: nor yet a bad tree can bring forth good fruit.
- 19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit shall be hewn down and cast into the fire.
- 20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.
- 21 Not all they that say unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven: but he that doeth my Fathers will,
- 22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not in thy name prophesied? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name have done many miracles?
- 23 And then will I knowledge unto them, that I never knew them, depart from me ye workers of iniquity.
- 24 Whosoever heareth these sayings of me, and doeth the same, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house on a rock.
- 25 And abundance of rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that same house, and it fell not, because it was grounded on the rock.
- 26 And whosoever heareth these sayings of me, and doeth them

Astonid at his docrtrine

Matthew 8:11

not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:

- 27 And abundance of rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house, and it fell, and great was the fall of it.
- 28 And it came to pass, that when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonid at his doctrine:
- 29 For he taught them as one having power and not as the Scribes.

CHAPTER 8

- WHEN he was come down from the mountain much people followed him
- 2 And behold, there came a leper and worshipped him saying Lord if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.
- 3 And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him saying: I will be thou clean and immediately his leprosy was cleansed.
- 4And Jesus said unto him. See thou tell no man, but go and shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, In witness unto them.
- 5 When Jesus was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a certain Centurion, and besought him
- 6 Saying: Lord my servant lieth sick at home of the palsy, and is grievously pained.
- 7 And Jesus said unto him: I will come and heal him.
- 8 The Centurion answered and said: Sir I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed,
- 9 For I also myself am a man under power, and have soldiers under me: and I say to one go, and he goeth, and to another come, and he cometh: and to my servant do this and he doeth it 10 When Jesus heard it, he marveled, and said, to them that followed him. Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith: no not in Israel.
- 11 I say therefore unto you that many shall come from the East

Matthew 8:12

He took on him our infirmities

and west, and shall rest with Abrahan Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven:

- 12 And the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into utter darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.
- 13 Then Jesus said unto the Centurion, Go thy way and as thou believest so be it unto thee. And his servant was healed the selfsame hour.
- 14 And then Jesus went to Peters house, and saw his wife's mother, lying sick of a fever
- 15 And touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and ministered unto them.
- 16 When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all that were sick:
- 17 To fulfill that which was spoken by Isaiah the Prophet, saying, He took on him our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.
- 18 When Jesus saw much people about him, he commanded to go over the water.
- 19 And there came a scribe, and said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.
- 20 And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests but the Son of man hath not where to rest his head.
- 21 Another that was one of his disciples said unto him: Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.
- 22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead.
- 23 And he entered into a ship, and his disciples followed him.
- 24 And behold, there arose, a great tempest in the sea, [insomuch] that the ship was covered with waves: and he was asleep.
- 25 And his disciples came unto him, and awoke him, saying: Lord, save us we perish.
- faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea, and

Both wind and sea obey him

Matthew 9:3

- 26 And he said unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith
- 27 and the men marveled and said: what man is this that both wind and sea obey him?
- 28 And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed of devils, which came out of the graves, and were out of measure fierce, so that no man might go by that way.
- 29 And behold they cried out saying. O Jesus thou Son of God, what have we to do with thee? Art thou come hither to torment us before the time be come?
- 30 And there was a good way off from them a great herd of swine feeding.
- 31 Then the devils besought him saying: if thou cast us out suffer us to go our way, into the herd of swine.
- 32 And he said unto them, go your ways. Then went they out, and departed into the herd of swine and, behold, the whole herd of swine was carried with violence headlong into the sea, and perished in the water.
- 33 Then the herdsmen fled, and went their ways into the city and told everything and what had happened, unto them, which were possessed of the devils.
- 34 And behold the city all came out and met Jesus: And when they saw him they besought him that he would departout of thrir coasts

CHAPTER 9

- THEN he entered the ship and passed over, and came unto his oun city
- 2 And Lo they brought to him a mansick of the paley, lying on his bed And when Jesus saw himhe said to the sick of the palsey Son be of good cheer thy sins are forgiven thee.
- 3 And certain of the scribes saidwithin themselves:this man blsasphemeth.

Matthew 9:4

Can the wedding children mourn

- 4 And when Jesus saw their thoughts he said: wherfore think ye evil in your hearts?
- 5 Whether is easier, to say thy sins be forgiven thee or to say, arise and walk?
- 6 That ye may know that the Son of man hath power in earth,
- to forgive sins, then said he unto the sick of palsy: arise, take up thy bed, and go home to thine house.
- 7 And he arose and departed to his own house.
- 8 And when the people saw it they marveled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.
- 9 And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, sitting at the receipt of custom, named Matthew, and said to him: ollow me.
- 10 And he arose, and followed him, and it came to pass, as he sat at meat in the house: behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down also with Jesus and his disciples
- 11 When the Pharisees saw that, they said to his disciples: why eateth your Master, with publicans and sinners?
- 12 When Jesus heard that, he said unto them, The whole need not the physician, but they that are sick.
- 13 Go, and learn what that meaneth, I have pleasure in mercy, and not in offerings: for I am not come to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance.
- 14 Then came the disciples of John to him saying: why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?
- 15 And Jesus said unto them: Can the wedding children mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? The time will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.
- 16 No man patcheth an old garment with a piece of new cloth, for then taketh he away the piece again from the garment, and the rent is made greater.
- 17 Neither do men put new wine into old vessels: for then the

Believe ye that I am able to do this

Matthew 9:31

vessels break and the wine runneth out and the vessels Perish, but they pour new wine into new vessels, and so are both saved together.

- 18 While he thus spake unto them, behold there came a certain ruler and worshiped him, saying: my daughter is even now deceased: but come and lay thy hand on her, and she shall live.
- 19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, with his disciples.
- 20 And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood, twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his vesture.
- 21 For she said in herself: If I may touch but even his vesture only, I shall be whole.
- 22 Then Jesus turned him about, and beheld her saying: Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee safe, And she was made whole even that same hour
- 23 And when Jesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people raging
- 24 He said unto them, Get you hence, for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.
- 25 As soon as the people were put forth he went in and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.
- 26 And this was noised throughout all that land.
- 27 And as Jesus departed thence two blind men followed him, crying, and saying: O thou Son of David, have mercy on us.
- 28 And when he was come into the rulers house, the blind came to him, And Jesus said unto them: Believe ye that I am able to do this? And they said unto him: Yea Lord.
- 29 Then touched he their eyes saying: according to your faith be it unto you.
- 30 And their eyes were opened; And Jesus charged them saying: see that no man know of it.
- 31 But they, as soon as they were departed, spread abroad his name throughout all the land.

Matthew 9:32

It is not you that speak

- 32 As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed of a devil.
- 33 And as soon as the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: And the people marvelled saying: it was never so seen in Israel.
- 34 But the Pharisees said: he casteth out devils by the power of the chief devil.
- 35 And Jesus went about all cities and towns, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the glad tidings of the kingdom, and healing all manner sickness and disease among the people.
- 36 But when he saw the people, he had compassion on them, because they were pined away, and scattered abroad, even as sheep having no shepherd.
- 37 Then said he to his disciples: the harvest is great but the laborers are few,
- 38 Wherfore pray the Lord of the harvest, to send forth laborers into his harvest.

CHAPTER 10

A ND he called his twelve. disciples unto him and gave them power over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.

- 2 The names of the twelve apostles are these. The first Simon called also Peter: and Andrew his brother. James the son of Zebedee and John his brother.
- 3 Philip and Bartholomew. Thomas and Matthew the Publican. James the son of Alphaeus and Lebbaeus otherwise called Thaddaeus.
- 4 Simon of Canaan, and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.
- 5 These twelve, sent Jesus and commanded, them saying, Go not into the way that lead to the Gentiles and into the cities of the Samaritans enter ye not.
- 6 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.
- 7 Go and preach saying, that the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

Instruction for the twelve

Matthew 10:23

- 8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out the devils. Freely ye have received, freely give again.
- 9 Possess not gold nor silver nor brass in your girdles
- 10 Nor yet scrip, towards your journey, nether two coats, neither shoes, nor yet a staff. for the workman is worthy to have his meat.
- 11 Into whatsoever city or town ye shall come, enquire who is worthy in it, and there abide, till ye go thence.
- 12 And when ye come in to an house, salute the same.
- 13 And if the house be worthy, your peace shall come upon it. But if it be not worthy, your peace shall return to you again.
- 14 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor will hear your preaching: when ye depart out of that house, or that city, shake off the dust of your feet.
- 15 Truly I say unto you, it shall be easier for the land of Sodom and Gomorra, in the day of judgment, than for that city
- 16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep among wolves: Be ye therefore wise as serpents and innocent as doves.
- 17 Beware of men: for they shall deliver you up to the councils and shall scourge you in their synagogues;
- 18 And ye shall be brought, to the head rulers and kings, for my sake, in witness to them and to the Gentiles.
- 19 But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak, for that shall be given you even in that same hour what ye shall say.
- 20 For it is not ye that speak, but the spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.
- 21 The brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son, and the children shall arise against their fathers, and mothers, and shall put them to death.
- 22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name, but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.
- 23 When they persecute you in one city, flee into another, I tell you for a truth ye shall not finish all the cities of Israel, till the

Matthew 10:24

No peace but a sword

Son of man be come.

- 24 The disciple is not above his Lord: nor yet the servant above his Lord.
- 25 It is enough for the disciple to be as his Lord is, and that the servant be as his Lord is. If they have called the Lord of the house Beelzebub: how much more shall they call them of his household so?
- 26 Fear thee not therefore: there is nothing so closed, that it shall not be opened and nothing so hidden that shall not be known.
- 27 What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye, in light. And what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye on the housetops.
- 28 And fear ye not them, which kill the body, and be not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him, which is able to destroy both soul and body into hell.
- 29 Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and none of them doth light on the ground, without your Father.
- 30 And now are all the hairs of your head numbered.
- 31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.
- 32 Whosoever therefore shall knowledge me before men, him will I knowledge also before my Father which is in heaven.
- 33 But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.
- 34 Think not that I am come to send peace unto the earth: I came not to send peace but a sword
- 35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law:
- 36 And a man's foes, shall be they of his own household.
- 37 He that loveth his father or mother more than me is not meet for me: and he that loveth his son or daughter ⁴more than

⁴ More than me we are to give untoGod our first and formost Love

He that recieiveth you recieveth me

Matthew 11:7

me is not meet for me.

- 38 And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth me, is not meet for me.
- 39 He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.
- 40 He that receiveth you receiveth me: and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.
- 41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a Prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive the reward of a righteous man.
- 42 And whosoever shall give unto one of these little ones to drink, a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, I tell you of a truth he shall not lose his reward.

CHAPTER 11

A ND it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, that he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

- 2 When John being in prison, heard the work of Christ he sent two of his disciples
- 3 And said unto him, Art thou he that shall come: or shall we look for another?
- 4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John what ye have heard and seen:
- 5 The blind see, the halt go, and the lepers are cleansed: the deaf hear, the dead rise again, and the glad tidings is preached to the poor.
- 6 And happy is he, that is not offended by me.
- 7 And as they departed, Jesus began to speak unto the people of John. What for to see, went ye out into the wilderness? Went ye out to see a reed shaken with the wind?

Matthew 11:8

Not a greater than John

- 8 A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings houses.
- 9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea I say to you and more than a prophet.
- 10 For this is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.
- 11 Verily I say unto you among the children of women, arose there not a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.
- 12 From the time of John the Baptist hitherto the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and they that go to it with violence, ⁵pluck it unto them.
- 13 For all the prophets and the law prophesied until the time of John.
- 14 Also if ye will receive it, this is Elias, which should come.
- 15 He that hath ears to hear let him hear.
- 16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children which sit in the market, and call unto their fellows,
- 17 And say: We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and ye have not sorrowed.
- 18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say He hath the devil.
- 19 The Son of man came eating and drinking and they say behold a glutton, and drinker of wine, and a friend unto publicans and sinners. Nevertheless wisdom is justified of her children.
- 20 Then began he to upbraid the cities in which most of his miracles were done, because they repented not:
- 21 Woe be unto thee, Chorazin, woe be unto thee Bethsaida: for if the miracles which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon they had repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

-

⁵ Pluck the violence unto themselves

Lord even of the sabbath day

Matthew 12:4

- 22 Nevertheless I say unto you: it shall be easier for Tyre and Sidon at the day of Judgment than for you.
- 23 And thou Capernaum, which art lifted up unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the miracles, which have been done in thee, had been shewed in Sodom, they had remained to this day.
- 24 Nevertheless I say unto you: it shall be easier for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment than for thee.
- 25 At that time Jesus answered and said: I praise thee O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast opened them unto babes:
- 26 Even so Father, for so it pleased thee.
- 27 All things are given unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Father save the Son and he to whom the Son will open him.
- 28 Come unto me all ye that labor and are laden and I will ease you.
- 29 Take ⁶my yoke on you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls.
- 30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

CHAPTER 12

A T that time went Jesus on the sabbath through the corn and his disciples were an hungered, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat.

- 2 When the Pharisees saw that, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath day.
- 3 He said unto them: Have ye not read what David did when he was an hungered and they also which were with him?
- 4 How he entered into the house of God, and ate the hallowed loaves, which were not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests.

-

⁶ He bore our unbearable burden, his yoke, for us is weightless

Matthew 12:5

He that is not with me is against me

- 5 Or have ye not read in the law, how that the priests in the temple break the sabbath day, and yet are blameless?
- 6 But I say unto you: that here is one greater than the temple
- 7 Wherefore if ye had known what this saying meaneth: I require mercy and not sacrifice: ye would never have condemned the innocent.
- 8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day.
- 9 And he departed thence, and went into their synagogue:
- 10 And, behold, there was a man, which had his hand dried up. and they asked him saying: is it lawful to heal upon the sabbath day? because they might accuse him
- 11 And he said unto them: which of you would it be if he had a sheep, fallen into a pit on the sabbath day, that would not take him, and lift him out?
- 12 And how much is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do a good deed on the sabbath days.
- Then saith he to the man stretch forth thy hand and he stretched it forth; and it was made whole again, like unto the other.
- 14 Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him.
- 15 When Jesus knew it, he departed thence: and much people followed him, and he healed them all
- 16 And charged them that they should not make him known:
- 17 To fulfill that which was spoken by Isaiah, the Prophet which saith.
- 18 Behold my child whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my soul delighteth, I will put my spirit on him and he shall shew Judgment to the Gentiles.
- 19 He shall not strive, he shall not cry, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.
- 20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and flax that begineth to burn he shall not quench, till he send forth Judgment unto victory

A greater than Jonas is here

Matthew 12:33

- 21 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.
- 22 Then was brought to him one possessed with a devil, which was both blind and dumb and he healed him insomuch that he which was blind and dumb both spake and saw.
- 23 And all the people were amazed and said: is not this that son of David?
- 24 But when the Pharisees heard that, they said: This fellow driveth out the devils, not otherwise but by the help of Beelzebub the chief of the devils.
- 25 But Jesus knew their thoughts, and said to them, Every kingdom divided within itself shall be brought to naught. neither shall any city or household divided against itself continue:
- 26 So if Satan cast out Satan, then is he divided against himself? how then shall his kingdom endure?
- 27 Also if I by the help of Beelzebub cast out devils: by whose help do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.
- 28 But if I cast out the devils by the spirit of God: then is the kingdom of God come on you?
- 29 Either how can a man enter into a strong man's house, and violently take away his goods: except he first bind the strong man? and then spoil his house?
- 30 He that is not with me is against me: and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.
- 31 Wherefore I say unto you all manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy of the spirit
- 32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, no neither in this world, nor in the world to come.
- 33 Either make the tree good and his fruit good also: or else make the tree evil, and his fruit evil also: for the tree is known by his fruit.

Matthew 12:34

A fishing boa twas his pulpit

- 34 O generation of vipers how can ye say well, when ye yourselves are evil? for of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.
- 35 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good things, and an evil man out of his evil treasure bringeth forth evil things.
- 36 But I say unto you that of every idol word that men shall have spoken: they shall give account at the day of judgment.
- 37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified: and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.
- 38 Then answered, certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees Master, we would see a sign of thee.
- 39 He answered and said to them, This evil and adulterous generation seeketh a sign; but there shall no sign be given to them, save the sign of the prophet Jonas.
- 40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth
- 41 The men of Nineveh shall rise at the day of judgment with this nation, and condemn them: for they amended at the preaching of Jonas. and behold a greater than Jonas is here.
- 42 The queen of the south shall rise at the day of judgment with this generation, and shall condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the world to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold a greater then Solomon is here.
- 43 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh throughout dry places, seeking rest and findeth none.
- 44 Then he saith: I will return again into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come he findeth the house empty, and swept, and garnished
- 45 Then he goeth his way, and taketh unto him seven other spirits worse than himself, and so enter they in and dwell there: and the end of that man is worse than the beginning. Even so shall it be with this evil nation.

Blessed are your eyes

Matthew 13: 11

- 46 While he yet talked to the people: behold his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.
- 47 Then one said unto him, behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.
- 48 He answered and said to him that told him, who is my mother? or who are my brethren?
- 49 And he stretched forth his hand over his disciples, and said: behold my mother and my brethren.
- 50 For whosoever shall do my Fathers will which is in heaven, the same is my brother, sisters, and mother.

CHAPTER 13

- THE same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side
- 2 And much people resorted unto him, so greatly that he went and sat in a ship, and all the people stood on the shore.
- 3 And he spake many things to them in similitudes saying: Behold, a sower went forth to sow,
- 4 And as he sowed some fell by the wayside, and the fowls came and devoured it up:
- 5 Some seed fell upon stony ground where it had not much earth, and anon it sprung up because it had no depth of earth
- 6 And when the sun was up it caught heat and for lack of roots withered away.
- 7 Some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up, and choked it.
- 8 Part fell in good ground, and brought forth good fruit: some an hundred fold,
- 9 Whosoever hath ears to hear let him hear.
- 10 And the disciples came and said to him, Why speakest thou to them in parables?
- 11 He answered and said unto them, it is given unto you to know the secrets of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

Matthew 13:12

They shall hear and not understand

- 12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given and he shall have abundance: but whosoever hath not: from him shall be taken away even that he hath.
- 13 Therefore speak I to them in similitudes: for though they seeing, they see not: and hearing they hear not: neither do they understand.
- 14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of 1saiah which prophesied saying: with the ear ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and with the eyes ye shall see, and shall not perceive.
- 15 For this people's hearts are waxed gross and their ear were dull of hearing and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their hearts and should turn, that I might heal them.
- 16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear:
- 17 Verily I say unto you, that many prophets and perfect men have desired to see those things which ye see: and have not seen them, and to hear the things which ye hear, and have not heard them.
- 18 Hear ye therefore the similitude of the sower.
- 19 Whosoever heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not: then cometh the evil man: and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart: and this is he, which was sown by the wayside.
- 20 But he that was sown in the stony ground is he that heareth the word of God, and anon with joy receiveth it
- 21 Yet hath he no roots in himself, and therefore dureth but a season: for as soon as tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he falleth.
- 22 He that was sown among thorns is he that heareth the word of God: but the care of this world and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word and so is he made unfruitful.

Similitude of the tares

Matthew 13:34

- 23 He which is sown in the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth some an hundred fold some sixty fold, and some thirty fold.
- 24 Another similitude put he forth unto them saying: The kingdom of heaven is like unto a man, which sowed good seed in his field:.
- 25 But while men slept, there came his foe and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way
- 26 When the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.
- 27 The servants came to the householder and said unto him, sir, sowest not thou good seed in thy fields? from whence then hath it tares?
- 28 He said to them, the envious man hath done this, then the servants said unto him: wilt, thou then, that we go and gather them?
- 29 But he said nay, lest while ye go about to weed out the tares, ye pluck up also with them the wheat by roots:
- 30 Let both grow together till harvest come: and in time of harvest I will say to the reapers, gather ye first the tares and bind them in sheaves to be burnt: but gather the wheat into my barn.
- 31 Another parable he put forth unto them saying: The kingdom of heaven is like unto a grain of mustard seed, which a man taketh, and soweth in his field:
- 32 Which is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown it is the greatest among herbs, and it is a tree: so that the birds of the air come and build in the branches of it.
- 33 Another similitude said he to them, The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman taketh, and hideth in three pecks of meal till all be leavened.
- 34 All these things spake Jesus unto the people by similitudes and without similitudes; spake he nothing to them

Matthew 13:35

Wailing and gnashing of teeth

- 35 To fulfill that which was spoken by the prophet, saying: I will open *my* mouth in similitudes, and will speak forth things which have been kept secret from the beginning of the world.
- 36 Then sent Jesus the people away, and came into the house. and his disciples came unto him saying: declare unto us the similitude of the tares of the field.
- 37 Then answered he and said to them. He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man;
- 38 And the field is the world, and the children of the kingdom are the good seed, and the tares are the children of the wicked.
- 39 And the enemy that soweth them is the devil, the harvest is the end of the world, and the reapers be the angels.
- 40 For even as the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire: so shall it be in the end of this world.
- 41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them, which do iniquity
- 42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.
- 43 Then shall the just men shine as bright as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Whosoever hath ears to hear, let him hear.
- 44 Again the Kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hidden in the field: the which a man findeth and hideth: and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.
- 45 Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant, that seeketh goodly pearls
- 46 Which when he had found one precious pearl, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.
- 47 Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, cast into the sea, that gathered of all kinds of fish:
- 48 Which when it is full, men draw to land, and sit and gather the good into vessels, and cast the bad away
- 49 So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come out, and sever the bad from the good,

Jesus' brothers named and sisters

Matthew 14:6

- 50 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.
- 51 Jesus said unto them: understand ye all these things? They said, Yea Lord.
- 52 Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is taught unto the kingdom of heaven is like an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things both new and old.
- 53 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these similitudes, that he departed thence
- 54 And came into his own country, and taught them in their synagogue in so much that they were astonied, and said: whence cometh all this wisdom and power unto him?
- 55 Is not this the carpenters son? Is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, be called James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?
- 56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? whence then hath this man these things?
- 57 And they were offended by him. Then Jesus said to them, a prophet is not without honor, save in his own country and among his own kin.
- 58 And he did not many miracles there for the unbelievers sake.

CHAPTER 14

A T that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, 2 and said unto his servants: This is John the Baptist; He is risen again from death; and therefore are such miracles wrought by him.

- 3 For Herod had taken John and bound him and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife.
- 4 For John said unto him: It is not lawful for thee to have her.
- 5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the people because they counted him as a prophet.
- 6 But when Herod's birthday was come, the daughter of Herodias danced before them and pleased Herod.

Matthew 14:7

Feeding the five thousand

- 7 Wherefore he promised with an oath that he would give her whatever she would ask
- 8 And she being informed of her mother before said: give me John the Baptists head in a platter.
- 9 And the king sorrowed: nevertheless for his oaths sake, and for their sake, which sat also at the table, he commanded it to be given her.
- 10 And sent, and beheaded John in the prison.
- 11 And his head was brought in a platter, and given to the damsel and she brought it to her mother.
- 12 And his disciples came and took up his body, and buried it: and went and told Jesus
- 13 When Jesus heard that, he departed thence by ship into a desert place out of the way: and when the people had heard [thereof] they followed him him a foot out of their cities.
- 14 And Jesus went forth and saw much people, and his heart did melt upon them, and he healed of them those that were sick.
- 15 When even was come, his disciples came to him saying, This is a desert place, and the day is spent; let the people depart, that they may go into the towns and buy them victuals.
- 16 But Jesus said unto them, They have no need to go away; give ye them to eat.
- 17 And they say unto him, we have here but five loaves, and two fishes.
- 18 And he said, Bring them hither to me.
- 19 And he commanded the people to sit down on the grass: and took the five loaves and the two fishes and looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples gave them to the people.
- 20 And they did all eat, and were sufficed: and they gathered up of the fragments that remained seven baskets full.
- 21 And they that ate were in number about five thousand men, beside women and children.
- 22 And straightway Jesus made his disciples enter into a ship,

O thou of little faith

Matthew 15:1

and to go over before him, while he sent the people away.

- 23 And as soon as he had sent the people away, he went up into a mountain alone to pray: and when night was come, he was there alone
- 24 And the ship was now in the midst of the sea and was tossed with waves for it was a contrary wind.
- 25 In the fourth watch of the night Jesus came unto them walking on the sea.
- 26 And when his disciples saw him walking on the sea they were troubled saying: it is some spirit and cried out for fear.
- 27 And straight way Jesus spake unto them saying: be of good cheer it is I be not afraied.
- 28 Peter answered him and said: master if thou be he, bid me come unto thee on the water.
- 29 And he said come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship he walked on the water to go to Jesus.
- 30 But when he saw a mighty wind he was afraid. and as he began to sink he cried saying, Master save me.
- 31 And immediatly Jesus stretched forth his hand and caught him and said to him: O thou of little faith wherfore didst thou doubt?
- 32 And as soon as they were come into the ship the wind ceased.
- 33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying: of a truth thou art the Son of God.
- 34 And when they were come over, they went in to the land of Gennezaret.
- 35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out in to all that country round abou:t and brought unto him all that were sick

36 and besought him, that they might touch the hem of his vesture only, And as many as touched it were made safe.

CHAPTER 15

HEN came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees from Jerusalem saying:

Matthew 15:2

Doctrines of men

- 2 why do thy disciples transgress the tradions of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.
- 3 He answered and said unto them, why do ye also transgress the commandment of God through your traditions?
- For God commanded saying: Honour thy father and mother and he that curseth father or mother shall suffer death.
- 5 But ye say, every man shall say to his father or mother, That which thou desirest of me to help thee with, is given God;
- 6 And so shall he not honour his father or his mother. And thus have ye made that the commandment of God is without effect through your traditions.
- 7 Hypocrites, well prophesied of you, Esaias, saying:
- 8 This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouths, and honoureth me with their lips; howbeit their hearts are far from me:
- 9 But in vain they worship me teaching doctrines which are nothing but men's precepts.
- 10 And he called the people, unto him and said to them, hear and understand.
- 11 That which goeth into the mouth defileth not the man: but that which cometh out of the mouth defileth the man.
- 12 Then came his disciples and said unto him. perceavest thou not how that the Pharisees are offended in hearing this saying?
- 13 He answered and said: all plants, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be plucked up by the roots.
- 14 Let them alone, they be the blind leaders of the blind. If the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.
- 15 Then answered Peter and said to him: declare unto us this parable.
- 16 Then said Jesus: are ye yet without understanding?
- 17 perceive ye not that whatsoever goeth in at the mouth descendeth down into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?
- 18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth come from the heart and they defile the man.

The whelps eat of the crumbs

Matthew 15:32

- 19 For out of the heart come evil thoughts, murder, breaking of wedlock, whoredom, theft, false witness, blasphemies:
- 20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashed hands defileth not a man.
- 21 And Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.
- 22 And behold a woman which was a Canaanite came out of the same coast and cried unto him saying: have mercy on me O Lord, thou Son of David; my daughter is piteously vexed with a devil
- 23 And he gave her never a word to answer. then came to him his disciples and besought him, saying: send her away; for she followeth us crying.
- 24 He answered and said: I am not sent but unto The lost but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.
- 25 Then she came and worshiped him saying: Lord help me.
- 26 He answered and said: it is not good to take the children's bread and to cast it to whelps.
- 27 She answered and said: truth, Lord: nevertheless the whelps eat of the crumbs which fall from their lords table.
- 28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her. O woman, great is thy faith: be it to thee even as thou desireth. And her daughter was made whole even at that same hour.
- 29 Then Jesus went away from thence and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee and went up into a mountain and sat down there.
- 30 And much people came unto him, having with them halt, blind, dumb maimed, and many other: and cast them down at Jesus feet; and he healed them.
- 31 In so much that the people wondered, to see the dumb speak, the maimed whole, the halt to go, and the blind to see, and they glorified the God of Israel.
- 32 Then Jesus called his disciples to him, and said: I have compassion on the people, because they have continued with

Matthew 15:33

Four thousand fed

me now three days, and have naught to eat: and I will not let them depart fasting, lest they perish in the way

- 33 And his disciples said unto him, whence should we get so much bread in the wilderness, as should suffice so great a multitude?
- 34 And Jesus said unto them: how many loaves have ye? And they said: seven, and a few little fishes.
- 35 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground.
- 36 And took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples gave them to the people.
- 37 And they did all eat, and were sufficed: and they took up of the broken meat that was left seven baskets full.
- 38 And yet they that ate were four thousand men beside women and children
- 39 And he sent away the people and took ship and came into the parts of Magdala.

CHAPTER 16

THEN came, the Pharisees and Sadducees and did tempt him desiring him to shew them some signs from heaven.

2 He answered and said unto them, At evening ye say we shall have fair weather: and that because the sky is red:

And in the morning ye say today shall be foul weather: and that because the sky is cloudy and red. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, and ye cannot discern the signs of the times?

- 4 The froward nation and adulterous seeketh a sign and there shall no other sign be given unto them, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. So left he them and departed.
- 5 And when his disciples were come to the other side of the water, they had forgotten to take bread with them.
- 6 Then Jesus said unto them: Take heed and beware of the leaven of Pharisees and of the Sadducees
- 7 And they thought in themselves saying: because we have brought no bread with us.

Congregations are given the kingdom keys Matthew 16:20

- 8 When Jesus understood that, he said unto them, O ye of little faith why are your minds cumbered because ye have brought no bread?
- 9 Do ye not yet perceive, neither remember those five loaves when there were five thousand men, and how many baskets took ye up?
- 10 Neither the seven loaves when there were four thousand, and how many baskets took ye up?
- 11 Why perceive ye not then that I spake not unto you of bread, when I said beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees
- 12 Then understood they how that he bade not them beware of the leaven of bread: but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees
- 13 When Jesus came into the coasts of the city which is called Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying: Whom do men say that I the Son of man am?
- 14 They said, some say that thou art John the Baptist, some Elias some Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.
- 15 He said unto them, but whom say ye that I am?
- 16 Simon Peter answered and said: Thou art Christ the Son of the living God.
- 17 And Jesus answered and said to him, Happy art thou Simon the son of Barjona for flesh and blood hath not opened this unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven
- 18 And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter: and upon this rock I will build my congregation; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.
- 19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou bind upon earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou loosest on earth shall be loosed in heaven
- 20 Then he charged his disciples that they should tell no man

Matthew 16:21

Lord being here is good for us

that he was Jesus Christ.

- 21 From that time forth Jesus began to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders and of the high Priests and of the Scribes, and must be killed and rise again the third day.
- 22 But Peter took him aside and began to rebuke him saying: Lord favor thyself this shall not come unto thee.
- 23 Then turned he about and said unto Peter: come after me, Satan: thou offendest me because thou savourest not things of God, but worldly things.
- 24 Jesus then said to his disciples, If any man will follow me, let him forsake himself, and take up his cross and follow me.
- 25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it, and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake shall find it.
- 26 What shall it profit a man though he should win all the hole world: if he lose his own soul? Or else what shall a man give to redeem his soul again withal?
- 27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then shall he reward every man according to his deeds.
- 28 Verily I say unto you, There be some among them standing here that shall not taste of death, till they shall have seen the on of man coming in his Kingdom.

CHAPTER 17

AND after. Six days, Jesus took Peter, and James, and John his brother, and brought them up into an high mountain out of the way,

- 2 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his clothes were as white as the light.
- 3 And behold there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.
- 4 Then answered Peter, and said to Jesus: Lord, being here is good for us. If thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.
- 5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud shadowed them,

Why could we not cast him out

Matthew 17: 20

and behold, there came a voice out of the cloud, saying: this is my dear Son in whom I delight; hear ye him.

- 6 And when the disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraid.
- 7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said: arise, and be not afraid.
- 8 And when they looked up they saw no man save Jesus only.
- 9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them saying: see that ye shew the vision to no man until the Son of man be risen again from death.
- 10 And his disciples asked of him, saying: Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come?
- 11 Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come and restore all things.
- 12 And I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not: but have done unto him whatsoever they lusted. In likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.
- 13 Then the disciples perceived that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.
- 14 And when they were come to the people, there came to him a certain man, and kneeled down to him, and said,
- 15 Master have mercy on my son: for he is frantic: and is sore vexed. And oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water
- 16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not heal him.
- 17 Jesus answered and said: O generation crooked, and faithless: how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me
- 18 And Jesus rebuked the devil; and he cast out of him: And the child was healed even that same hour.
- 19 Then came the disciples to Jesus secretly, and said: Why could not we cast him out?
- 20 Jesus said unto them; Because of your unbelief: for I say

Matthew 17:21

Is come to save that which was lost

unto you verily unto you: if ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye should say unto this mountain remove hence to yonder place, and he should remove: neither should anything be impossible fo you to do.

- 21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.
- 22 As they passed the time in Galilee, Jesus said unto them: The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:
- 23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall rise again, And they sorrowed greatly.
- 24 And when they were come to Capernaum, they that were wont to gather poll money came to Peter, and said: Doth your Master pay tribute?
- 25 He saith yea. And when he was come into the house, Jesus spake first to him saying, What thinkest thou Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take tribute or poll money? Of their children, or of strangers?
- 26 Peter saith unto him, of strangers. Then saith Jesus unto him again: Then are the children free.
- 27 Nevertheless, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea and cast in thine angle, and take the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of twenty pence: that take, and pay for me and thee.

CHAPTER 18

THE same time the disciples came unto Jesus saying: who is the greatest in the Kingdom of heaven?

- 2 Jesus called a child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,
- 3 And said, Verily I say unto you: except ye turn and become as children, ye cannot enter into the kingdom of heaven.
- 4 Whosoever therefore humble himself as this child, the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.
- 5 And whosoever receiveth such a child in my name receiveth me.
- 6 But whosoever offends one of these little ones which believe

Despisee not one of these little ones

Matthew 18:17

in me: it were better for him that a millstone were about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

- 7 Woe be unto the world because of offences, howbeit it cannot be avoided but that, offences shall be given, nevertheless woe be to the man by whom the offence cometh.
- 8 Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut him off, and cast him from thee: It is better for thee to enter into life halt or be maimed, rather than thou shouldest having two hands or two feet to be cast into hell fire
- 9 And if also thine eye offend thee, pluck him out and cast him from thee: It is better for thee to enter into life with one eye than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.
- 10 See that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you that in heaven their angels always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.
- 11 Yea, and the Son of man is come to save that which is lost.
- 12 How think ye? If a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave ninety and nine, and go into the mountains and seek that one which is gone astray?
- 13 When it happen that he find him, verily I say unto you: he rejoiceth more of that sheep than of the ninety and nine, which went not astray.
- 14 Even so it is not the will of your Father in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.
- 15 Moreover if thy brother trespasses against thee, Go and tell him his fault between him and thee alone: If he hear thee, thou hast won thy brother:
- 16 But if he hear thee not then take yet with thee one or two that in the mouth of two or three witnesses all things may be established.
- 17 If he hear not them, tell it unto the congregation: If he hear

Matthew 18:18

The parable of the evil servant

not the congregation, take him as an heathen man and as a publican.

- 18 Verily I say unto you whatsoever ye bind on earth shall be bound in heaven. and whatsoever ye loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.
- 19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree in earth upon any manner thing whatsoever they shall desire: it shall be given them of my Father which is in heaven.
- 20 For where two or three are gathered together in my ⁷name there am I in the midst of them.
- 21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall I forgive my brother if he sin against me seven times?
- 22 Jesus saith unto him: I say not unto thee seven times But seventy times seven
- 23 Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants
- 24 And when he had began to reckon, one was brought, unto him which owed him ten thousand talents:
- 25 Whom because he had naught to pay that which he owed, his Lord, commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and his children, and all that he had and payment to be made.
- 26 The servant fell down and besought him saying: Sir give me respite and I will pay it every whit.
- 27 Then had the Lord pity on that servant and loosed him and forgave him the debt.
- 28 And the said, servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and laid hands on him and took him by the throat saying: pay me that thou owest.
- 29 And his fellowservant fell down and besought him saying: have patience with me and I will pay thee all.
- 30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he

⁷ In my name that is by my authority

Because of the hardness of your hearts

Matthew 19:9

should pay the debt.

- 31 When his other fellow servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came, and told, unto their Lord all that had happened.
- 32 Then his Lord, called him, and said unto him, O evil servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou besought me: was it not meet also that thou,
- 33 Shouldest have had compassion on thy fellow servant, even as I had pity on thee?
- 34 And his Lord was wroth, and delivered him to the jailors till he should pay all that was due to him.
- 35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do unto you, except ye forgive with your hearts each one his brother their trespasses.

CHAPTER 19

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished those sayings, he got himself from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Jewry beyond Jordan;

- 2 And much people followed him; and he healed them there.
- 3 Then came unto him the Pharisees, tempting him, and saying to him: is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for all manner of causes?
- 4 He answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, how that he which made man at the beginning made them man and woman
- 5 And said: for this thing, shall a man leave father and mother, and cleave unto his wife: and they two shall be one flesh.
- 6 Wherefore now are they not two, but one flesh. Let not man therefore put asunder that which God hath coupled together.
- 7 Then said they unto him why did Moses command to give a testimonial of divorcement and to put her away?
- 8 He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.
- 9 I say therefore unto you, whosoever putteth away his wife, (except it be for fornication) and marrieth another breaketh

Matthew 19:10

He went away mourning

wedlock: and whosoever marrieth her, which is divorced doth commit adultery.

- 10 Then said his disciples to him, if the matter be so between man and wife, then is it not good to marry.
- 11 He said unto them: all men cannot receive that saying, save they to whom it is given.
- 12 There are chaste, which were so born out of their mothers belly, and there are chaste, which be made of men, and there be chaste, which have made themselves chaste for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that can take it let him take it.
- 13 Then were brought to him young children, that he should put his hands on them and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.
- 14 But Jesus said: suffer the children, and forbid them not, to come to me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.
- 15 And when he had put his hands on them, he departed thence.
- 16 And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?
- 17 He said unto him: why callest thou me good? [there is] none good but one, and that is God: but if thou will enter into life, keep the commandments.
- 18 The other said to him which? And Jesus said: break no wedlock kill not, steal not, bear not false witness,
- 19 Honour thy father and mother: and love thine neighbor as thyself.
- 20 And the young man said unto him, I have observed all these things from my youth, what lack I yet?
- 21 And Jesus said unto him, if thou will be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give it to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.
- 22 When the young man heard that saying, he went away mourning: for he had great possessions.
- 23 Then Jesus said unto his disciples: Verily I say unto you: it

A lesson On fairness

Matthew 20:6

is hard for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven.

- 24 And moreover I say unto you: it is easier for a Camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.
- 25 When his disciples heard that, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, who then can be saved?
- 26 Jesus beheld them and said unto them, with men this is impossible but with God all things are possible.
- 27 Then answered Peter and said to him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have?
- 28 Jesus said unto them: verily I say to you, when the Son of man shall sit in the seat of his majesty, ye which follow me in the second generation shall sit also upon twelve, seats, and judge the twelve tribes of Israel
- 29 And whosoever forsaketh houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my names sake, the same shall receive an hundred fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.
- 30 Many that are first; shall be last and the last shall be first. CHAPTER 20

P OR the kingdom of heaven is like unto an householder which went out early in the morning to hire laborers into his vineyard.

- 2 And he agreed with the laborers for a penny a day, and sent them into his vineyard.
- 3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace,
- 4 And said unto them go ye also into my vineyard: and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.
- 5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.
- 6 And he went out about the eleventh hour, and found others standing idle, and said unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

Matthew 20:7

I do thee no wrong

- 7 They said unto him, because no man hath hired us. He said to them, go ye also into my vineyard, and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.
- 8 When even was come the Lord of the vineyard said unto his steward: call the labourers and give them their hire, beginning at the last till thou come to the first.
- 9 And they which were hired about the eleventh hour, came and received every man a penny.
- 10 Then came the first supposing that they should receive more: and they likewise received every man a penny.
- 11 And when they had received it they murmured against the good man of the house,
- 12 Saying, these last have wrought but one hour and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day
- 13 He answered to one of them saying friend, I do thee no wrong: didst thou not agree with me for a penny?
- 14 Take that which is thy duty, and go thy way. I will give unto this last as much as to thee.
- 15 Is it not lawful for me to do as I listeth with mine own? Is thine eye evil because I am good?
- 16 So the last shall be first, and the first shall be last: for many are called and few be chosen.
- 17 And Jesus ascended to Jerusalem and took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said to them.
- 18 Behold we go up to Jerusalem: and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief Priests and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles to be mocked and to be scourged, and to be crucified: and the third day, he shall rise again.
- 20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him.
- 21 And he said unto her: what wilt thou have? She said unto

The Lord hath need of them

Matthew 20:34

him: grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left hand, in thy kingdom.

- 22 Jesus answered and said: Ye wot not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I shall be baptized with? They answered to him that we are.
- 23 And he said unto them: Ye shall drink of my cup and shall be baptised with the baptism that I shall be baptised with. but to sit on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give: but to them for whom it is prepared of my father.
- 24 And when the ten heard this they were disdained at the two brethren,
- 25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said. Ye know that the lords of the Gentiles have dominion over them, and they that are great, exercise power over them.
- 26 It shall not be so among you, but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister,
- 27 And whosoever will be chief, let him be your servant.
- 28 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life for the redemption of many.
- 29 And as they departed from Jericho, much people followed him.
- 30 And, behold, two blind men sitting by the wayside, when they heard Jesus pass by, cried saying: O Lord, have mercy on us, thou son of David.
- 31 And the people rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more saying: have mercy on us thou Lord, which art the son of David.
- 32 Then Jesus stood still, and called them, and said: what will ye that I should do to you:
- 33 They said to him, Lord that our eyes may be opened.
- 34 Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes. And

Matthew 21:1

Behold thy king cometh

immediately their eyes received sight.

CHAPTER 21

WHEN they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto Mount Olivet: then sent Jesus two of his disciples

- 2 Saying to them. Go into the town that lieth over against you, and anon ye shall find an ass bound, and her colt with her: loose them and bring them to me
- 3 And if any man say ought unto you, say ye that the Lord hath need of them, and straightway way he will let them go.
- 4 All this was done to fulfill that which was spoken by the prophet saying,
- 5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass used to the yoke.
- 6 The disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them
- 7 And brought the ass and the colt and put on them their clothes and set him thereon.
- 8 And many of the people spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.
- 9 Moreover the people that went before, and they also that came after, cried, saying: Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.
- 10 And when he was come in to Jerusalem all the city was moved, saying, who is this?
- 11 And the people said: this is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth a city of Galilee.
- 12 And Jesus went in to the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money chargers, and the seats of them that sold doves,
- 13 And said to them: It is written my house shall be called the

Who gave thee this power

Matthew 21: 25

house of prayer, but ye have made it a den of thieves.

- 14 And the blind and the halt came to him in the temple, and he healed them.
- 15 When the chief priests and scribes saw the marvels that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David, they disdained,
- 16 And said nto him: Hearest thou what these say? Jesus said unto them yea: have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast ordained praise?
- 17 And he left them, and went out of the city unto Bethany: and had his abiding there.
- 18 In the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered.
- 19 And spied a fig tree in the way, and came to it and found nothing thereon, but leaves only and said to it, never fruit grow on thee henceforward. And the fig tree withered away.
- 20 And when his disciples saw that, they marveled, saying: How soon is the fig tree withered away?
- 21 Jesus answered and said unto them: Verily I say unto you, if ye shall have faith, and shall not doubt, ye shall not only do that which I have done to the fig tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, take thyself away, and cast thyself into the sea it shall be done.
- 22 And whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive it.
- 23 And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said: and who gave thee this power?
- 24 Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask of you a certain question, which if ye answer me I in likewise will tell you by what authority I do these things.
- 25 The baptism of John: whence was it? from heaven or of men? Then they reasoned among themselves, saying: if we shall say from heaven; he will say unto us Why did ye not then believe him

Matthew 21:26

Ye believed him not

- 26 But and if we shall say of men; then fear we the people; for all men held John as a prophet.
- 27 And they answered Jesus and said: we cannot tell. And he likewise said unto them: Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.
- 28 What say ye to this? A certain man had two sons; and came to the elder and said: son go and work today in my vineyard.
- 29 He answered and said I will not: but afterward repented and went.
- 30 Then came he to the second and said likewise. And he answered and said: I will sir: yet went not.
- 31 Whether of the two did the will of the father? And they said unto him: The first. Jesus said unto them: verily I say unto you, that the publicans and the harlots shall come into the kingdom of God before you.
- 32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: And yet ye (though ye saw it) were not yet moved with repentance that ye might afterward, have believed him.
- 33 Hearken another similitude: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it roundabout, and made a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange country:
- 34 When the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, to receive the fruits of it.
- 35 And the husbandmen caught his servants, and beat one, killed another, and stoned another.
- 36 Again, he sent other servants, more than the first: and they served them Likewise.
- 37 But last of all he sent unto them his own son, saying: they will fear my son.
- 38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves: This is the heir: come let us kill him, and let us take his inheritance to our selves.

He was even speechless

Matthew 22:6

- 39 And they caught him, and thrust him out of the vineyard, and slew him. What will he do with those husbandmen?
- 40 When the Lord of the vineyard cometh,
- 41 They said unto him: he will cruelly destroy those evil persons, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall deliver him the fruit at times convenient
- 42 Jesus said unto them: Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone, which the builders refused, the same is set in the principle part of the corner: this was the Lords doing and it is marvelous in our eyes.
- 43 Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and shall be given to the Gentiles, which shall bring forth, the fruits of it.
- 44 And whosoever shall fall on this stone he shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall upon, it will grind him to powder.
- 45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees heard these similitudes, they perceived that he spake of them.
- 46 And they went about to lay hands on him but they feared the people because they took him as a Prophet.

CHAPTER 22

A ND Jesus answered and spake unto them again in similitudes, saying.

- 2 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which married his son.
- 3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.
- 4 Again, he sent forth other servants saying. Tell them which are bidden: Behold, I have prepared my dinner; mine oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready, come unto the marriage.
- 5 But they made light of it, and went their ways: one to his farm place another about his merchandice
- 6 The remnant took his servants, and entreated them ungodly,

Matthew 22:7

What think ye of Christ

and slew them.

- 7 When the king heard that he was wroth: and sent forth his warriors, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their city.
- 8 Then said he to his servants: the wedding was prepared. But they which were bidden were not worthy.
- 9 Go ye therefore out into the highways, and as many as ye find, bid to the marriage
- 10 The servants went out into the highways, and gathered together as many as they could find both good and bad and the wedding was furnished with guests.
- 11 Then the king came in, to visit the guests and spied there a man which had not on a wedding garment,
- 12 And said unto him, Friend, how fortuned it that thou camest in hither and hast not on a wedding garment? And he was even speachless.
- 13 Then said the king to his servants, take, and bind him hand and foot, and cast him into utter darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.
- 14 For many are called, and few be chosen.
- 15 Then went the Pharisees, and took council how they might tangle him in his words.
- 16 And they sent unto him their disciples with Herod's servants, saying, Master, we know thou art true, and teachest the way of God truly, neither carest for any man: for thou considerest not men's estate.
- 17 Tell us therefore: how thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar or not?
- 18 Jesus perceived? Their wickedness and said , why tempt me ye hypocrites?
- 19 Let me see the tribute money. And they took him a penny.
- 20 And he said unto them: whose is this image and superscription?
- 21 They said unto him, Caesars. Then said he unto them. Give

Love thine neighbor as thyself

Matthew 22:38

therefore to Caesar that which is Caesars; and give unto God that which is God's.

- 22 When they heard that, they marveled, and left him and went their way.
- 23 The same day the Sadducees came to him (which say that there is no resurrection) and asked him
- 24 saying: Master Moses said, if a man die having no children, that the brother marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.
- 25 There were with us seven brothers: and the first married and deceased, without issue, and left his wife unto his brother,
- 26 Likewise the second, and the third, unto the seventh.
- 27 Last of all the woman died also.
- 28 Now in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for all had her.
- 29 Jesus answered and said unto them, ye are deceived, and understand not the scriptures, nor yet the power of God.
- 30 For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are married: but are as the angels of God in heaven.
- 31 As touching the resurrection of the dead: have ye not read what is said unto you of God, which saith:
- 32 I am Abraham's God, and Isaac's God, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead: but of the living.
- 33 And when the people heard that, they were astoned at his doctrine.
- 34 When the Pharisees had heard how that he had put the Sadducees to silence they drew together.
- 35 And one of them which was a doctor of law asked a question tempting him and saying:
- 36 Master, which is the chief commandment in the law?
- 37 Jesus said unto him, Love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.
- 38 This is the first and the chief commandment. love thine Neighbor as thyself

Matthew 22:39

Woe be unto you blind guides

- 39 And there is another like unto this. Love thne neghbour as thy self
- 40 In these two Commandments hang all the law and the Prophets.
- 41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked
- 42 Them, saying: what think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They said unto him: the son of David.
- 43 How then doth David in spirit call him Lord saying?
- 44 The Lord said to my Lord, sit on my right hand: till I make thine enemies thy footstool.
- 45 If David call him Lord: how is he then his son?
- 46 And none could answer him again one word: neither durst any from that day forth ask him any more questions.

CHAPTER 23

- HEN spake Jesus to the people, and to his disciples, 2 saying, The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat:
- 3 All whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but after their works do not:
- 4 For they say, and do not. Yea and they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders: but they themselves will not heave at them with one of their fingers.
- 5 All their works they do for to be seen of men: they set abroad their phylacteries, and make large borders on their garments,
- 6 And love to sit uppermost at feasts, and to have the chief seats in the synagogues,
- 7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi.
- 8 But ye shall not suffer yourselves to be called Rabbi. for one is your Master that is to wit, Christ; and all ye are brethren.
- 9 And call no man your father upon earth for there is but one your Father, and he is in heaven.
- 10 Be not called masters: for there is but one your master, and he is Christ.
- 11 He that is greatest among you shall be your servant
- 12 But whosoever exalteth himself shall be brought low. And

The damnation of hell

Matthew 23:25

he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

- 13 Woe be unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven before men: ye yourselves go not in, neither suffer them that come to enter in.
- 14 Woe be unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: ye devour widows houses, and that under a color of praying long prayers: wherefore ye shall receive greater damnation.
- 15 Woe be unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: which compass sea and land to proselyte one to your belief: and when he is brought, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than ye yourselves are.
- 16 Woe be unto you, blind guides which say whosoever swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever swear by the gold of the temple, he offendeth.
- 17 Ye fools and blind: whether is greater, the gold, or the temple, that sanctifieth the gold?
- 18 And, whosoever sweareth by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the offering, that layeth upon the altar offendeth
- 19 Ye fools and blind: whether is greater, the offering, or the altar which sanctifieth the offering?
- 20 Whosoever therefore sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all there is on it.
- 21 And whosoever sweareth by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.
- 22 And he that sweareth by heaven, sweareth by the seat of God and by him that sitteth theron.
- 23 Woe be to you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Which tithe, mint, anise, and cummin, and leave the weightier matters of the law undone: judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to have left the other undone.
- 24 Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel 25 Woe be to you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: which make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter: but within

Matthew 23:26

The beginning of sorrows

they are full of bribery and excess

- 26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first the inside of the cup and platter that the outside of them may be clean also.
- 27 Woe be to you Scribe and Pharisees hypocrites for ye are like unto painted tombs which appear, beautiful outward, but are within full of dead bones, and of all filthiness.
- 28 So are ye, for outward ye appear righteous unto men, when within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.
- 29 Woe be unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: Ye build the tombs of the prophets and garnish the sepulchers of the righteous,
- 30 And say: If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partners with them in the blood of the prophets.
- 31 So then ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.
- 32 Fulfil ye likewise, the measure of your fathers.
- 33 Ye serpents, and generation of vipers, how should ye escape the damnation of hell?
- 34 Wherefore behold, I send unto you prophets, wise men, and scribes, and of them, ye shall kill, and crucify, and of them ye shall scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city to city
- 35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood that was shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias the son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.
- 36 Verily I say unto you, all these things shall light upon this generation.
- 37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest prophets, and stonest them which are sent to thee: how often would I have gathered thy children together, as the hen gathered her chicks under her wings but ye would not:
- 38 Behold, your habitat shall be left unto you desolate.

Tribulation forewarned

Matthew 24:14

39 For I say to you, ye shall not see me henceforth, till that ye say: blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAPTER 24

A ND Jesus went out, and departed from the Temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the Temple.

- 2 Jesus said unto them, see ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you there shall not be here left one stone upon another that shall not be cast down.
- 3 And as he sat upon the Mount Olivet, his disciples came unto him secretly, saying, Tell us when these things shall be? and what sign shall be of thy coming, and of the end of the world?
- 4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, take heed that no man deceive you.
- 5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.
- 6 Ye shall hear of wars and of the rumours of wars: but see that ye be not troubled: For all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.
- 7 For nation shall rise against nation, and realm against realm: and there shall be pestilence, hunger, and earthquakes, in all quarters.
- 8 All these are the beginning of sorrows.
- 9 Then shall they put you to trouble, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my names sake.
- 10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one the other.
- 11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceive many.
- 12 And because iniquity shall have the upper hand, the love of many shall abate.
- 13 But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be safe.
- 14 ⁸And these glad tidings of the kingdom shall be preached in

Matthew 24:15

It is near even at the doors

all the world for a witness unto all nations: and then shall the end come.

15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination that betokeneth desolation spoken of by Daniel the prophet stand in the holy place

16 Then let them which be in Jewry, flee into the mountains:

17 And let him which is on the house top not come down to fetch. anything out of his house.

18 Neither let him which is in the field return back to fetch his Clothes

19 Woe be in those days to them that are with child, and to them that give suck.

20 But pray that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day.

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not from the beginning of the world to this time, nor shall be.

22 Yea and except those days should be shortened should no flesh be saved but for the chosen's sake those days shall be shortened

23 Then if any man shall say unto you: lo, here is Christ, or there is Christ: believe it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall do great miracles and wonders insomuch that if it were possible, the very elect should be deceived.

25 Take heed, I have told you before.

⁸ What is the end that shall come? It is not the end of the tribulation, for it has not yet begun, it is not the end of time, or of the world, for much is yet to come to pass. That which is ending is the age of the Commission, The time of the Saints to be taken home, The time of grace for Gentiles is passed, The time of New Testament Saints on earth is ended. The time for the rapture is come. Time for Jacobs trouble to begin. culminating in the salvation of all Israel

Therefore be ye ready

Matthew 24:36

- 26 Wherefore if they shall say unto you: behold he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in the secret place, believe not.
- 27 For as the ⁹lighting cometh out of the east and shineth unto the west: so shall the coming of the Son of man be.
- 28 For wheresoever a dead carcass is, even there will the eagles resort.
- 29 Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened: and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven shall move:
- 30 And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven. and then shall all the kindred of the earth morn, and they shall see the Son of man come in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.
- 31 ¹⁰And he shall send his angels with the great voice of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his chosen from the four winds, and from the one end of the world to the other.
- 32 Learn, a similitude of the fig tree: when his branches are yet tender and his leaves tender, and his leaves spring forth ye know that summer is nigh,
- 33 So likewise ye, when ye see all these things, be ye sure that it is near, even at the doors.
- 34 Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these be fulfilled.
- 35 Heaven and earth shall perish: but my words shall abide.
- 36 But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the

-

⁹ Lighting that is the sun rising in the East

¹⁰ Verse 31- This is not a rapture it is a gathering, The saints in heaven are gathered, so, to return to earth with Christ. The Elect Jews on earth will be gathered together for the saving of all Israel Romans 11:26 The Gentiles yet alive will be gathered for destruction Joel 3:9-13

Matthew 24:37 Ye know not what hour your Lord will come

angels of heaven, but my Father only.

- 37 As the time of Noah was, so likewise shall the coming of the Son of man be.
- 38 For as in the days before the flood: they did eat, and drink, marrying and giving in marriage even unto the day that Noah entered into the ship,
- 39 and knew of nothing till the flood came and took them all away. So shall also the coming of the Son of man be.
- 40 Then two shall be in the field; the one shall be received, and the other shall be refused.
- 42 Wake therefore: because ye know not what hour your Lord will come.
- 43 Of this be sure, that if the good man of the house knew what hour the thief would come: he would surely watch and not suffer his house to be broken up.
- 44 ¹¹Therefore be ye also ready, for in the hour ye think he would not: will the Son of man come.
- 45 If there be any faithful servant and wise, whom his Lord hath made ruler over his household, to give the meat in season convenient?
- 46 Happy is that servant whom his Lord (when he cometh) shall find so doing.
- 47 Verily I say unto you, he shall make him ruler over all his goods.
- 48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, my Lord will defer his coming
- 49 And begin to smite his fellow servants, yea and to eat and to drink with the drunken;
- 50 That servants Lord will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of,
- 51 And will divide him, and give him his reward with hypocrites, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

-

¹¹ God's people should ever be ready for his return

The wise and foolish virgins

Matthew 25:16

CHAPTER 25

HEN the kingdom of heaven shall be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went to meet the bridegroom:

- 2 five of them were foolish, and five were wise.
- 3 The foolish took their lamps, but took no oil with them.
- 4 But the wise took oil with them in their vessels also.
- 5 While the bridegroom tarried, all slumbered and slept
- 6 And even at midnight there was a cry made: behold the bridegroom cometh; go out against him.
- 7 Then all those virgins arose and prepared their lamps.
- 8 And the foolish said to the wise: give us of your oil; for our lamps go out?
- 9 But the wise answered saying, not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.
- 10 And while they went to buy the bridegroom came: and they that were ready went in with him to the wedding and the gate was shut up:
- 11 Afterwards came also the other virgins, saying: Lord, Lord, open to us.
- 12 But he answered and said: Verily I say unto you: ¹²I know you not.
- 13 Watch therefore: for ye know neither the day nor yet the hour when the Son of man shall come.
- 14 Likewise, the kingdom of heaven, is as a certain man ready to take his journey to a strange country, called his servants, and delivered to them his goods.
- 15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to every man after his ability and straightway departed.
- 16 Then he that had received the five talents went and bestowed them, and won other five talents.

 12 Never, will one of his children, hear him say I know you not

-

Matthew 25:17

Enter into thy Mastter's joy

- 17 Likewise he that received two, gained other two
- 18 But he that received the one went and digged a pit in the earth and hid his master's money.
- 19 After a long season the Lord of those servants came, and reckoned with them.
- 20 Then came he that had received five talents and brought other five talents, saying: master thou deliverdst unto me five talents: I have gained with them five talents more
- 21 Then his master said unto him: well good servant and faithful, behold, thou hast been faithful in that little, I will make thee ruler over much: enter into thy master's Joy.
- 22 Also he that received two talents came and said: master thou deliverdst unto me two talents: behold, I have won two other talents with them.
- 23 And his master said unto him well, good servant, and faithful; thou hast been faithful in that little, I will make thee ruler over much: go in into thy master's Joy.
- 24 Then he which had received the one talent came and said: master I considered that thou wast an hard man, which reapest where thou hast sown not, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:
- 25 And was therefore afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: behold thou hast thine own.
- 26 His Lord answered and said unto him: thou evil servant and slothful thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not and gather where I strawed not:
- 27 Thou oughtest therefore to have had my money to the changers, with increase.
- 28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.
- 29 For unto every man that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: and from him that hath not shall be taken away even that he hath.

Judgment of the nations

Matthew 25:43

- 30 And cast that unprofitable servant into utter darkness:there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.
- 31 When the Son of man cometh in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the seat of his glory:
- 32 And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth the sheep from the goats:
- 33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, and the goats on the left.
- 34 Then shall the king say to them on his right hand: Come ye blessed children of my Father inherit ye the kingdom prepared for you from the beginning of the world:
- 35 For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I thirsted: and ye gave me drink. I was harbourless, and ye lodged me.
- 36 I was naked and ye clothed me. I was sick and ye visited me. I was in prison and ye came unto me
- 37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, master, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed thee? or a thirst, and gave thee drink?
- 38 When saw we thee a harbourless, and lodged thee? or naked, and clothed thee?
- 39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?
- 40 And the king shall answer and say unto them: Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren ye have done it to me.
- 41 Then shall the king say unto them that shall be on the left hand: depart from me; ye cursed into everlasting fire, which is prepared for the Devil and his angels:
- 42 For I was anhungered, and ye gave me no meat, I thirsted, and ye gave me no drink.
- 43 I was a harbourless, and ye lodged me not. I was naked, and

Matthew 25:44

Be told as a memorial of her

ye clothed me not, I was sick, and in prison and ye visited me not.

- 44 Then shall they also answer him saying: master when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or harbourless, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?
- 45 Then shall he answer them and said: verily I say unto you in as much as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.
- 46 And these, shall go into everlasting pain: And the righteous, into life eternal.

CHAPTER 26

A ND it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples:

- 2 Ye know that after two days shall be passover and the Son of man shall be delivered to be crucified.
- 3 Then assembled together the chief Priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, to the palace of the high priest called Caiaphas
- 4 And held a council how they might take Jesus by subtlety, and kill him.
- 5 But they said not on the holy day, lest any uproar arise among the people.
- 6 When Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,
- 7 There came unto him a woman, which had an alabaster box of precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at the board.
- 8 When his disciples saw that, they had indignation, saying. what need of this waste?
- 9 This ointment might have been well sold, and given to the poor.
- 10 When Jesus understood that, he said unto them: Why trouble ye the woman? She hath wrought a good work upon me.
- 11 For ye shall have poor folk always with you: but me shall ye

What will you give me

Matthew 26:26

not have always.

- 12 And in that she casted this ointment on my body, she did it to bury me withal.
- 13 Verily I say unto you, wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout all the world, there shall also this that she hath done, be told for a memorial of her.
- 14 Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests
- 15 And said: what will ye give me and I will deliver him unto you? And they appointed unto him thirty pieces of silver.
- 16 And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.
- 17 The first day of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him: where will thou that we prepare for thee to eat the paschal lamb?
- 18 And he said: Go into the city unto such a man, and say to him: the Master saith, my time is at hand I will keep mine passover at thy house with my disciples.
- 19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and made ready the passover lamb.
- 20 When the ¹³even was come, he sat down with the twelve.
- 21 And as they did eat he said: Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.
- 22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began everyone of them to say unto him: is it I Lord?
- 23 He answered and said: he that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me
- 24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe be to that man by whom the Son of man shall be betrayed. It had been good for that man if he had never been born.
- 25 Then Judas, which betrayed him answered and said: is it I Master? He said unto him, Thou hast said.
- 26 As they did eat, Jesus took bread, and gave thanks, brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said: Take eat this is my body.

-

¹³ Even –Evening had come

Matthew 26:27 Gethsemane

27 And he took the cup, and thanked, and gave it them saying: drink of it everyone.

- 28 For this is my blood of the new testament, that shall be shed for many for the remission of sins.
- 29 I say unto you: I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine tree, until that day when I shall drink it new with you in my Fathers kingdom.
- 30 And when they had said grace they went out into Mount Olivet.
- 31 Then said Jesus unto them: all ye shall be offended by me this night. for it is written. I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.
- 32 But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.
- 33 Peter answered and said unto him: though all men should be offended by thee, yet would I never be offended.
- 34 Jesus said unto him. Verily I say unto thee, that this same night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.
- 35 Peter said unto him: If I should die with thee, yet would I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.
- 36 Then went Jesus with them into a Place which is called Gethsemane, and said unto the disciples sit ye here while I go yonder and Pray
- 37 And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to wax sorrowful and to be in an agony.
- 38 Then said Jesus unto them: my soul is heavy even unto the death. tarry ye here, and watch with me.
- 39 And he went a little apart, and fell flat on his face, and prayed saying: O my Father if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt.
- 40 And he came unto the disciples, and found them asleep and saith to Peter, what, could ye not watch with me one hour?
- 41 Watch and pray, that ye fall not into temptation, the spirit is willing but the flesh is weak.
- 42 He went away once more, and prayed saying: O my father,

Peters third denial

Matthew 26:55

If this cup cannot pass away from me, but that I drink of it, thy

will be fulfilled.

- 43 And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy.
- 44 And he left them, and went again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.
- 45 Then came he to his disciples, and said unto them: Sleep henceforth, and take your rest. take heed, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of sinners.
- 46 Rise let us be going: behold, he is at hand that shall betray me.
- 47 While he yet spake: lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, sent from the chief Priests and elders of the people
- 48 And he that betrayed him had given them a token saying: whomsoever I kiss that same is he: lay hands on him.
- 49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said: hail, Master; and kissed him.
- 50 And Jesus said unto him: Friend wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.
- 51 And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest, and smote off his ear.
- 52 Then said Jesus unto him: Put up thy sword into his sheath: for all that lay hand on the sword shall perish with the sword.
- 53 Neither thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father and he shall give me more than twelve legions of angels?
- 54 But how then should the scriptures be fulfilled: for so must it be
- 55 The same time said Jesus to the multitude: ye be come out as it were unto a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily teaching in the temple, among you and ye took me not

Matthew 26:56

Answered him never a word

- 56 All this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled.
- 57 Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled. And they took Jesus and led him to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.
- 58 And Peter followed him afar off unto the high Priests palace: and went in and sat with the servants, to see the end.
- 59 The chief Priests, and the elders, and all the elders sought false witnesses against Jesus, for to put him to death;
- 60 But found none: insomuch that when many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses,
- 61 And said: This [fellow] said: I can destroy the temple of God, and build it again in three days.
- 62 And the chief priest arose, and said to him: answerest thou nothing? How is it that these bear witness against thee?
- 63 But Jesus held his peace: And the chief priest answered and and said tell us whether thou be Christ, the Son of God.
- 64 Jesus said to him: thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and come in the clouds of the sky.
- 65 Then the high priest rent his clothes saying: He hath blasphemed: what need we of any more witnesses? Behold now ye have heard his blasphemy:
- 66 What think ye? They answered and said: he is worthy to die.
- 67 Then spat they in his face, and buffeted him with fists. And others smote him with the palm of their hands
- 68 On the face saying: tell us thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?
- 69 Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came to him saying: Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee:
- 70 but he denied before them all saying: I know not what thou sayest.

I have betrayed innocent blood

Matthew 27:9

- 71 When he was gone out into the porch, another wench saw him, and said unto them that were there: This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth.
- 72 And again he denied with an oath, that he knew the man.
- 73 And after a while came unto him they that stood by and said unto Peter: Surely thou art even one of them; for thy speech betrayeth thee
- 74 Then began he to curse and to swear immediately the cock cock crew.
- 75 And Peter remembered the words of Jesus which said unto him: before the cock crow thou shalt deny me thrice: and went out the doors and wept bitterly

CHAPTER 27

- HEN the morning was come, all the chief Priests and the elders of the people held a council against Jesus to put him to death,
- 2 And brought him bound, and delivered him unto Pontius Pilate the deputy.
- 3 Then when Judas, which betrayed him, saw that he was condemned, he repented himself, and brought again the thirty plates of silver to the chief Priests and elders,
- 4 Saying: I have sinned betraying the innocent blood. And they said: what is that to us? See thou to that.
- 5 And he cast down the silver plates in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.
- 6 And the chief Priests took the silver plates, and said: it is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.
- 7 And they took council and bought with them a potter's field to bury strangers in.
- 8 Wherefore that field is called the field of blood until this day.
- 9 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet saying: and they took thirty silver plates the price of him of him that was valued, whom they bought of the children of Israel,

Matthew 27:10

They sat and watched him

- 10 And they gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.
- 11 Jesus stood before the deputy: and the deputy asked him saying: Art thou the king of the Jews? Jesus said unto him: thou sayest.
- 12 And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.
- 13 Then said Pilate unto him, hearest thou not how many things they lay against thee?
- 14 And he answered him to never a word: in so much that the deputy marveled greatly.
- 15 At that feast the deputy was wont to deliver unto the people a prisoner whom they would desire.
- 16 He had then a notable prisoner called Barabbas.
- 17 And when they were gathered together Pilate said unto them: whether will ye that I give loose unto you Barabbas or Jesus, which is called Christ?
- 18 For he knew well that for envy they had delivered him.
- 19 When he was set down to give judgment his wife sent to him saying: have thou nothing to do with that just man for I have suffered many things this day in a dream about him.
- 20 But the chief Priests and the elders had persuaded the people that they should ask Barabbas and should destroy Jesus.
- 21 Then the deputy answered and said unto them: whether of the two will ye that I let loose unto you? And they said Barabbas.
- 22 Pilate said unto them: what shall I do then with Jesus which is Called Christ? they all said to him, let him be crucified.
- 23 Then said the deputy: what evil hath he done? And they cried the more saying: let him be crucified.
- 24 When Pilate saw that he prevailed nothing but that more business was made he took water and washed his hands before the people saying: I am innocent of the blood of this just

And put it in his new tomb

Mattthew 27: 40

person and that ye shall see.

- 25 Then answered all the people and said: his blood be on us and on our children.
- 26 Then let he Barabbas, loose unto them, and scourged Jesus, and delivered him to be crucified.
- 27 Then the soldiers of the deputy took Jesus unto the common hall, and gathered unto him all the company.
- 28 And they stripped him, and put on him a purple robe.
- 29 And platted a crown of thorns, and put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand and bowed their knee and mocked him. Saying hail king of the Jews
- 30 and spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.
- 31And when they had mocked him, they took the robe off him again, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify him.
- 32 And as they came out they found a man of Cyrene, named Simon: him they compelled to bear his cross.
- 33 And when they came unto the place called Golgotha, (that is to say, a place of dead men's skulls)
- 34 They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall, And when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.
- 35 When they had crucified, him they parted his garments, and did cast lots: to fulfill that was spoken by the prophet, they divided my garments among them, and upon my vesture did cast lots.
- 36 And they sat and watched him there;
- 37 And they set up over his head the cause of his death written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS
- 38 And there were two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.
- 39 They that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads
- 40 And saying: Thou that destroyest the temple of God and buildest it in three days save thy self. If thou be the Son of God

Mattthew 27: 41

Put it in his new tomb

come down from the cross.

- 41 Likewise also the high priests mocking him, with the scribes of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.
- 43 He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said I am the Son of God.
- 44 That same also the thieves, which were crucified with him, cast in his teeth.
- 45 From the sixth hour was there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.
- 46 And about the ninth hour, Jesus cried with a loud voice saying: Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, my God my, God, why hast thou forsaken me?
- 47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that said, This man calleth for Elias.
- 48 And straightway way one of them ran, and took a sponge and filled it full of vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink.
- 49 Other said, let be: let us see whether Elias will come and deliver him.
- 50 Jesus, cried again with a loud voice, and yielded up the ghost.
- 51 And, behold the veil of the temple did rent in two from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the stones rent;
- 52 and graves did open: and the bodies of many saints which slept arose,
- 53 And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and came into the holy city, and appeared unto many.
- 54 When the centurion, and they that were with him watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things which happened, they feared greatly, saying, of a surety this was the Son of God 55 And many women were there beholding him afar off, which

He is not here he is risen

Matthew 28:2

followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him.

- 56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.
- 57 When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, which same also was Jesus' disciple.
- 58 He went to Pilate and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.
- 59 And Joseph took the body, and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth
- 60 And put it in his new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock and rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulcher and departed.
- 61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulcher.
- 62 The next day, that followeth good Friday the high priests and Pharisees got themselves to Pilate
- 63 And said: Sir, we remember that this deceiver said while he was yet alive after three days I will arise again.
- 64 Command therefore that the sepulcher be made sure until the third day, lest peradventure his disciples come, and steal him away, and say unto the people, he is risen from death: and the last error be worse than the first.
- 65 Pilate said unto them, Take watchmen: go and make it as sure as ye can.
- 66 And they went, and made the sepulcher sure, with watchmen, and sealed the stone.

CHAPTER 28

THE sabbath day at even, which dawneth the morrow, after the sabbath Mary Magdalene and the other Mary came to see the sepulcher.

2 And behold there was a great earthquake, for the angel of the

Matthew 28:3

Commission given to the congregation

Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door and sat upon it.

- 3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.
- 4 And for fear of him the keepers were astonied and became as dead men.
- 5 The angel answered and said to the women fear ye not, I know that ye seek Jesus which was crucified:
- 6 He is not here; he is risen, as he said, come, and see the place where the Lord was put:
- 7 And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from death; and behold, he will go before you into Galilee; there ye shall see him. Lo, I have told you.
- 8 And they departed quickly from the sepulcher with fear and great Joy: and did run to bring his disciples word.
- 9 And as they went to tell his disciples, behold Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held him by the feet, and worshiped him
- 10 The said Jesus unto them, be not afraid: go and tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.
- 11 When they were gone: behold some of the keepers came into the city, and shewed unto the high priests all the things that were happened.
- 12 And they gathered them together, with the elders, and took council, and gave large money unto the soldiers,
- 13 saying: Say that his disciples came by night and stole him away while ye slept.
- 14 And if this comes to the ruler's ears, we will appease him, and save you harmless.
- 15 And they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is noised among the Jews unto this day.

Lo I am with you always

Mathew 28:20

- 16 Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.
- 17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some of them doubted.
- 18 And Jesus came and spake unto them saying: All power in heaven and in earth, is given, unto me
- 19 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Ghost:
- 20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I commanded you: And, lo, I am with you always, even until the end of the world. Amen

Mark 1: 1

than I cometh A stronger after me

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT MARK

$T_{ m God}^{ m HE}$ beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of

- 2 As it is written in the Prophets, behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.
- 3 The voice of a crier in the wilderness, prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.
- 4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preached the Baptism of repentance for the remission of sins.
- 5 And all the land of Jewry, and they of Jerusalem, went out unto him and were all baptized of him in the river Jordan confessing their sins.
- 6 John was clothed with camels hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins; and he did eat locusts and wild honey;
- 7 And preached, saying: A stronger than I cometh after me, whose shoe latchet I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.
- 8 I have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.
- 9 And it came to pass, in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth city of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan
- 10 And as soon as he was come out of the water, John saw heaven open, and the Holy Ghost descending upon him, like a dove.
- 11 And there came a voice from heaven: Thou art my dear Son, in whom I delight.
- 12 And immediately the Spirit drove him into wilderness
- 13 And he was there in the wilderness and was with wild beasts; and the angels ministered unto him.
- 14 After John was taken, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God
- 15 And saying: The time is come, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent and believe the gospel.
- 16 As he walked by the Sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother, casting nets into the sea, for they were

Peter's mother in law was sick

Mark1:30

fishers.

- 17 And Jesus said unto them: follow me and I will make you fishers of men.
- 18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.
- 19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, even as they were in the ship mending their nets.
- 20 And anon he called them: and they left their father Zebedee, in the ship with his hired servants, and went their way after him.
- 21 And they entered into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught.
- 22 And they marveled at his learning: for he taught them as one that had power with him and not as the Scribes.
- 23 And there was in their synagogue a man vexed with an unclean spirit; It cried,
- 24 Saying: Let be, What have we to do with thee? thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us I know thee what thou art even that Holy of God.
- 25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying Hold thy peace, and come out of him.
- 26 And the unclean spirits tare him, and cried with a loud voice and came out of him.
- 27 And they were all amazed, in so much that they demanded one of another among themselves, saying: what thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for, he commandeth the foul spirits, with power and they obeyed him.
- 28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout the entire region bordering on Galilee.
- 29 And forthwith, as soon as they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James, and John.
- 30 And Simon's mother in law lay sick of a fever, and anon, they told him of her.

Mark 1:31

A solitary place and prayed

- 31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lifted her up and the fever forsook her, by and by and she ministered unto them.
- 32 And at even, when the sun was down, they brought to him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils.
- 33 And all the city gathered together at the door
- 34 and he healed many that were sick of diverse diseases, And he cast out many devils; and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.
- 35 And in the morning, very early Jesus arose, and went out, into a solitary place and there prayed.
- 36 And Simon and they that were with him followed after him.
- 37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee.
- 38 And he said unto them: Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for truly I came out for that purpose.
- 39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast the devils out.
- 40 And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeled down unto him, and said to him: If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.
- 41 And Jesus had compassion on him, and put forth his hand, and touched him, and said to him: I will, be thou clean.
- 42 And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosy departed from him and he was cleansed.
- 43 And he charged him, and sent him away forthwith.
- 44 And said unto him: See thou say nothing to any man, but get thee hence, and shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimonial unto them.
- 45 But he (as soon as he was departed) began to tell many things, and to publish the deed insomuch, that Jesus could no

That ye may know

Mark 2:13

more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places and they came to him from every quarter.

CHAPTER 2

A FTER a few days, he entered into Capernaum again, and it was noised that he was in a house.

- 2 And anon many gathered together, in so much that now there was no room to receive them no not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them
- 3 And there came unto him, that brought one sick of the palsy, borne of four men.
- 4 And because they could not come near unto him for the press, they uncovered the roof of the house where he was: and when they had broken it open, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay.
- 5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the sick of the palsy, Son thy sins are forgiven thee.
- 6 And there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts:
- 7 How doth this fellow so blaspheme? who can forgive sins but God only?
- 8 And immediately when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned in themselves he said unto them: Why think ye such things in your hearts?
- 9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsy, thy sins are forgiven thee, or to say arise, take up thy bed and walk?
- 10 That ye may know that the Son of man hath power in earth to forgive sins, he spake unto the sick of the palsy:
- 11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and get thee hence into thine own house
- 12 And by and by he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all: insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God saying: we never saw it on this fashion.
- 13 And he went again unto the sea side; and all the people resorted unto him, and he taught them.

Mark 2: 14

Which is not lawful

- 14 And as Jesus passed by, he saw¹⁴ Levi the son of Alphaeus sit at the receipt of custom, and he arose and followed him.
- 15 And it came to pass as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat at meat also with Jesus and his disciples, for there were many that followed him.
- 16 And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners?
- 17 When Jesus heard it, he said unto them they that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick. I came not to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance.
- 18 And the disciples of John and the Pharisees did fast: and therefore came and said unto him. Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, and thy disciples fast not?
- 19And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the wedding, fast while the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them they cannot fast.
- 20 But the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them and then shall they fast in those days.
- 21 Also no man soweth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for then taketh he away the new piece from the old, and so is the rent worse.
- 22 In likewise no man poureth new wine into old vessels: for if he do, the new wine breaketh the vessels and the wine runneth out and the vessels are marred: but new wine must be poured into new vessels.
- 23 And it chanced, that he went through the corn fields on the sabbath day and his disciples as they went on their way began to pluck the ears of corn.
- 24 And the Pharisees said unto him: behold why do they do on the Sabbath day, that which is not lawful?

¹⁴ Levi also known as Matthew

Ordained twelve Mark 3:8

25 And he said to them: Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungered, both he and they that were with him?

26 How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the hallowed loaves, which is not lawful to eat but for the priests only: and gave also to them which were with him?

27 And he said to them: The sabbath day was made for man, and not man for the sabbath day.

28 Wherefore the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day.

CHAPTER 3

A ND he entered again into the synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand.

- 2 And they watched him to see whether he would heal him on the Sabbath day; that they might accuse him.
- 3 And he said unto the man who had the withered hand: Arise and stand in the midst.
- 4 And he said to them: Whether is it lawful to do, a good deed on the sabbath days, or an evil? To save life, or to kill? But they held their peace.
- 5 And he looked round about on them angrily, mourning on the blindness of their hearts, and said to the man, stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out, and his hand was restored even as whole as the other.
- 6 And the Pharisees departed, and straightway gathered a council with them that belonged to Herod against him, that they might destroy him.
- 7 And Jesus avoided with his disciples to the sea, and a great multitude followed him from Galilee and from Jewry,
- 8 And from Jerusalem and from Idumaea, and from beyond Jordan, and they that dwelled about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, which when they had heard what things he did, came unto him.

Mark 39

The apostles are given names

- 9 And he commanded his disciples, that a ship should wait on him because of the people lest they should throng him.
- 10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.
- 11 And when the unclean spirits, saw him they fell down before him, and cried, saying: thou art the Son of God.
- 12 And he straightly charged them that they should not utter him.
- 13 And he went up into a mountain, and called unto him whom he would: and they came unto him.
- 14 And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them to preach:
- 15 And that they might have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils:
- 16 And he gave unto Simon to name Peter;
- 17 And he called James the son of Zebedee, and John, James' brother, and gave them Boanerges, to name which is to say the sons of thunder.
- 18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and Simon of Canaan
- 19 and Judas Iscariot, which same also betrayed him: and they came unto a house.
- 20 And the people assembled together again, so greatly that they had not leisure so much as to eat bread.
- 21 And when they that belonged unto him heard of it, they went out to hold him, for they thought, he had been beside himself.
- 22 And the Scribes, which came from Jerusalem, said, he hath Beelzebub, and by the power of the chief devil casteth out devils.
- 23 And he called them unto him, and said unto them in similitudes, How can Satan drive out Satan?

The unforgivable sin

Mark 4:4

- 24 For if a realm be divided against itself, that realm cannot endure.
- 25 Or if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot continue:
- 26 So if Satan makes insurrection against himself, and is divided, he cannot continue but is at an end.
- 27 No man can enter into a strong man's house, and take away his goods, except he first bind that strong man; and then spoil his house.
- 28 Verily I say unto you, all sins shall be forgiven unto men's children, and blasphemy wherewith they blaspheme:
- 29 But he that blasphemies against the Holy Ghost shall never have forgiveness: but is in danger of eternal damnation:
- 30 Because they said, he had an unclean spirit.
- 31 Then came his mother and his brethren and stood without, and sent unto him, and called him.
- 32 And the people sat about him, and said unto him: Behold thy mother and thy brethren seek for thee without.
- 33 And he answered them, saying: Who is my mother, and my brethren?
- 34 And he looked round about on his disciples which sat in compass about him and said: behold, my mother and my brethren.
- 35 For whosoever doeth the will Of God he is my brother, my sister, and mother.

CHAPTER 4

And there gathered together unto him much people, so greatly that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea and all the people were by the sea side on the shore.

- 2 And he taught them many things in similitudes, and said unto them in his doctrine:
- 3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a sower to sow:
- 4 And it came to pass, as he sowed that some fell by the way side

Mark 4:5

The sower soweth the word

and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up.

- 5 Some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth: and by and by sprang up because it had not depth of earth:
- 6 But as soon as the sun was up, it caught heat and because it had not rooting, withered away.
- 7 And some fell among the thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, so that it gave no fruit.
- 8 And some fell upon good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and grew and brought forth: some thirty fold, some sixty fold, and some an hundred fold.
- 9 And he said unto them: He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.
- 10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve asked him of the similitude.
- 11 And he said unto them, To you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, shall all things be done in similitudes:
- 12 That when they see they shall see, and not discern: and when they hear they shall hear, and not understand: lest at any time they should turn, and their sins should be forgiven them.
- 13 And he said unto them: Perceive ye not this similitude? How then should ye understand all other similitudes?
- 14 The sower soweth the word.
- 15 And they that are by the way side, where the word is sown are they to whom as soon as they have heard it Satan cometh immediately and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.
- 16 And likewise they that are sown on the stony ground, are they: which when they have heard the word, at once receive it with gladness;
- 17 Yet have no roots in themselves, and so endure but a time: and anon as trouble and persecution arises for the words sake, they fall immediately.

A tiny seed becomes a great tree

Mark 4:32

- 18 And they that are sown among the thorns are such as hear the word:
- 19 And the care of this world and the deceitfulness of riches and the lusts of other things enter in and choke the word and it is made uunfruitful.
- 20 And those that were sown in good ground are they that hear the word and receive it and bring forth fruit some thirty fold some sixty fold some an hundred fold.
- 21 And he said unto them: is the candle lighted to be put under a bushel or under the table and not rather to be put on a candlestick?
- 22 For there is nothing so privy that shall not be opened: neither so secret but that it shall come abroad.
- 23 If any man have ears to hear let him hear.
- 24 And he said unto them: take heed what ye hear. With what measure ye mete with the same shall it be measured unto you again. And unto you that hear shall more be given.
- 25 For unto him that hath shall it be given: and from him that hath not shall be taken away even that he hath.
- 26 And he said: so is the kingdom of God even as if a man should sow seed in the ground
- 27 And should sleep and rise up night and day: and the seed should spring and grow up he not aware.
- 28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself: first the blade then the ears after that full corn in the ears.
- 29 And as soon as the fruit is brought forth anon he thrusteth in the sickle because the harvest is come.
- 30 And he said: where unto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it?
- 31 It is like a grain of mustard seed which when it is sown in the earth is the least of all seeds that be in the earth:
- 32 but after that it is sown, it grows up and is greatest of all herbs: and bears great branches; so that the fowls of the air may dwell under the shadow of it.

Mark 4:33

Both wind and sea obey him

- 33 And with many such similitudes he preached the word unto them, after as they might hear it.
- 34 And without similitude spake he nothing unto them: But when they were apart, he expounded all things to his disciples.
- 35 And the same day, when even was come, he said unto them: Let us pass over unto the other side.
- 36 And they left the people, and took him even as he was in the ship. And there were also with him other ships.
- 37 And there arose a great storm of wind, and dashed the waves into the ship so that it was full.
- 38 And he was in the stern asleep on a pillow: and they awoke him, and said to him: Master, carest thou not that we perish?
- 39 And he rose up and rebuked the wind and said unto the sea: Peace, and be still. And the wind allayed and there followed a great calm.
- 40 And he said unto them: why are ye so fearful? how is it that ye have no faith?
- 41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, what fellow is this? For both wind and sea obey him.

CHAPTER 5

A ND they came over to the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes.

- 2 And when he was come out of the ship, there met him out of the graves a man possessed of an unclean spirit,
- 3 Which had his abiding among the graves, and no man could bind him, no, not with chains
- 4 Because that when he was often bound with fetters and chains he plucked the chains asunder, and brake the fetters in pieces, neither could any man tame him.
- 5 And always, night and day he was in the mountain and in the graves, and beat himself with stones.
- 6 When he had spied Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him

My name is Legion

Mark 5:20

- 7 And cried with a loud voice and said: what have I to do with thee, Jesus the son of the most highest God? I require thee in the name of God that thou torment me not.
- 8 For he had said unto him: Come out of the man, thou fowl spirit.
- 9 And he asked him: What is thy name? And he answered saying: My name is Legion: for we are many.
- 10 And he prayed him instantly that he would not send them away out of the country.
- 11 And there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding
- 12 And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the herd of swine, that we may enter into them.
- 13 And anon Jesus gave them leave. and the unclean spirits went out and entered into the swine: and the herd startled and ran headlong into the sea, they were about two thousand swine; and they were drowned in the sea.
- 14 And the swine herders fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they came out for to see what had happened:
- 15 And came to Jesus, and saw him that was vexed with the devil, and had the legion, sit, both clothed, and in his right mind: and were afraid.
- 16 And they that saw it told them how it had happened unto him, that was possessed with the devils: and also of the swine.
- 17 And they began to pray him that he would depart from their coasts.
- 18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had the devil prayed him that he might be with him.
- 19 Howbeit Jesus would not suffer him, but said unto him:go home into thine own house and to thy friends, and shew thm what great things the Lord hath done unto thee, and how he had compassion on thee.
- 20 And he departed, and began to publish in the ten cities what great things Jesus had done unto him, and all men did marvel.

Mark 5:21

Thy faith hath msde thee whole

- 21 And when Jesus was come over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him: and he was nigh unto the sea.
- 22 And behold there came one of the rulers of the Synagogue whose name was Jairus: and when he saw him, he fell down at his feet
- 23 And besought him greatly, saying: my daughter lieth at point of death: I pray, thou wouldest come and lay thy hand on her, that she might be safe, and live.
- 24 And he went with him: and much people followed him, and thronged him.
- 25 And there was a certain woman, which was diseased of an issue of blood twelve years,
- 26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and felt none amendment at all, but waxed worse and worse,
- 27 When she had heard of Jesus: she came into the press behind him and touched his garment.
- 28 For she thought, If I may but touch his clothes, I shall be whole.
- 29 And straightway her fountain of blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of the plague.
- 30 And Jesus immediately felt in himself the virtue that went out of him and turned him roundabout in the press and said: who touched my clothes?
- 31 And his disciples said unto him. seest thou the people thrust thee and yet asketh thou, who did touch me?
- 32 And he looked round about for to see her that had done that thing
- 33 The woman feared and trembled, (for she knew what was done within her) and she came and fell down before him, and told him the truth of everything.
- 34 And he said to her, Daughter thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace and be whole of thy plague.
- 35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the

Talitha cumi Mark 6:4

synagogues house certain which said, Thy daughter is dead: why dis-easest thou the master any further

- 36 As soon as Jesus heard that word spoken he said unto the ruler of the synagogue, be not afraid, only believe.
- 37 And he suffered no man to follow him except Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.
- 38 And he came unto the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and saw the wondering and them that wept and wailed greatly
- 39 And went in, and said unto them: why make ye this ado, and weep? The maiden is not dead, but sleeps.
- 40 And they laughed him to scorn. Then he put them all out, and took the father and the mother of the maiden, and them that were with him and, entered in where the maiden lay.
- 41 And took the maiden by the hand, and said unto her: Talitha cumi: which is by interpretation: maiden I say unto thee, arise.
- 42 And straightway the maiden arose, and went on her feet; for she was of the age of twelve years. And they were astounded at it out of measure.
- 43 And he charged them straightly that no man should know of it and commanded to give her meat.

CHAPTER 6

A ND he departed thence and came into his own country, and his disciples followed him.

- 2 And when the Sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many that heard him were astonied, and said: from whence hath he these things? and what wisdom is this that is given unto him, and such virtues that are wrought by his hands?
- 3 Is not this that carpenter, Mary's, son the brother of James, and Joses and of Juda and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? and they were offended by him.
- 4 And Jesus said unto them: A prophet is not despised but in his own country and among his own kin and among them that are of the same household.

Mark 6:5

Easier fot Sodom and Gomsorrha

- 5 And he could there shew no miracles, but laid his hands upon a few sick folk and healed them.
- 6 And he marvelled at their unbelief. And he went about by the towns, that lay on every side teaching.
- 7 And he called the twelve and began to send them two and two; and gave them ¹⁵power over unclean spirits;
- 8 And commanded them that they should take nothing unto their journey save a rod only: neither script, neither bread, nor money in their purses:
- 9 But should be shod with sandals. and that they should not put on two coats.
- 10 And he said unto them: wheresoever ye enter into a house, there abide, till ye depart thence
- 11 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust that is under your feet for a witness unto them. I say verily unto you it shall be easier for Sodom and Gomorrha, at the day of Judgment, than for that city.
- 12 And they went out and preached that they should repent:
- 13 And they cast out many devils, and they anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.
- 14 And king Herod heard of him (for his name was spread abroad) and said: John the Baptist is risen again from death and therefore miracles are wrought by him.
- 15 Others said, it is Elias: and some said: it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.
- 16 But when Herod heard of him he said: It is John, whom I beheaded he is raised from death again.
- 17 For Herod himself had sent forth and had taken John, and bound him and cast him into prison for Herodias sake which was his brother Philips wife: for he had married her.
- 18 John said unto Herod: It is not lawful for thee to have thy brothers wife.

¹⁵ Power that is authority

Give me John the Baptist's head

Mark 6:30

- 19 Herodias laid wait for him and would have killed him but she could not.
- 20 For Herod feared John knowing that he was a just man and an holy: and gave him reverence: and when he heard him he did many things and heard him gladly.
- 21 But when a convenient day was come: Herod on his birthday made a supper to the Lords, captains and chief estates of Galilee;
- 22 And the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced and pleased Herod and them that sat at board also, then the king said unto the maiden: ask of me what thou wilt and I will give it thee
- 23 And he swore unto her whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, and I will give it thee. even unto the one half of my kingdom.
- 24 And she went forth and said to her mother: What shall I ask? And she said: John the Baptist's head.
- 25 And she came in straight way with haste unto the king, and asked saying: I will that thou give me by and by on a platter the head of John the Baptist.
- 26 And the king was sorry: howbeit for his oaths sake, and for their sakes which sat at supper, also he would not put her beside her purpose.
- 27 And immediately the king sent the hangman, and commanded his head to be brought in. and he went and beheaded him in the prison
- 28 And brought his head on a platter, and gave it to the maiden: and the maiden gave it to her mother.
- 29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his body and put it in a tomb.
- 30 And the apostles gathered themselves together to Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

Mark 6:31

Sheep which had no shepherd

- 31 And he said unto them: Come ye apart into the wilderness, and rest a while for there were many comers and goers, that they had no leisure so much as to eat.
- 32 And he went by ship, out of the way, into a desert place.
- 33 But the people spied them when they departed: and many knew them, and came together unto him.
- 34 And Jesus, went out, and saw much people, and had compassion on them, they were like sheep which had no shepherd: and he began to teach many things.
- 35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, saying: This is a desert place, and now the day is far passed
- 36 Let them depart that they may go into the country round about and into the towns and buy them bread: for they have nothing to eat.
- 37 He answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said unto him: Shall we go and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat
- 38 He said unto them: How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they had searched they said: five, and two fishes.
- 39 And he commanded them to make them all sit down by companies upon the green grass.
- 40 And they sat down here a row and there a row by hundreds, and by fifties.
- 41 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looked up to heaven, and blessed and brake the loaves, and gave them to
- his disciples to put before them: and the two fishes he divided among them all
- 42 And they all did eat and were satisfied.
- 43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments and of the fishes.
- 44 And they that ate were about five thousand men.
- 45 And straight way he caused his disciples to go into the ship

Jesus walked upon the sea

Mark 6:56

and to go over the water before unto Bethsaida while he sent away the people.

- 46 And as soon as he had sent them away he departed into a moutain to pray.
- 47 And when even was come the ship was in the midst of the sea and he alone on the land
- 48 and he saw them troubled in rowing for the wind was contrary unto them. and about the fourth quarter of the night he came unto them walking upon the sea and would have passed by them.
- 49 When they saw him walking upon the sea they supposed it had been a spirit and cried out:
- 50 For they all saw him and were afraied. And anon he talked with them and said unto them: be of good cheer it is I be not afraid.
- 51 And he went up unto them into the ship and the wind ceased and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure and marveled.
- 52 For they rememberd not of the loaves because their hearts were blinded.
- 53 And they came over and went into the land of Gennesaret and drew up into the haven.
- 54 And as soon as they were come out of the ship straight way they knew him
- 55 And ran forth throughout all the region round about and began to carry about in beds all that were sick to the place where they heard tell that he was.
- 56 And whithersoever he entered into towns, cities, or villages, they laid their sick in the streets and prayed him that they might touch and it were but the edge of his vesture. and as many as touched him were safe

Mark 7:1

Commandments of men

CHAPTER 7

And the Pharisees, came together unto him and the divers of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

- 2 And when they saw certain of his disciples ate with common hands (that is to say with unwashen, hands) they complained.
- 3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands often, eat not, observing the traditions of the elders.
- 4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have taken upon them to observe as the washing of cups, and cruses, and of brazen vessels. and of tables.
- 5 Then the Pharisees, and scribes, asked him, why walk not thy disciples according to the traditions of the elders, but eat bread with unwashed hands?
- 6 He answered and said unto them: Well prophesied Isaiah of you hypocrites, as it is written this people honoureth me with [their] lips, but their heart is far from me:
- 7 In vain they worship me, teaching doctrines, which are nothing but the commandments of men.
- 8 For ye lay the commandment of God. apart and observe the ¹⁶ traditions of men, as the washing of cruses, and of cups, and many other such like things ye do.
- 9 And he said unto them: Full well, ye cast aside the commandment of God to observe your own traditions.
- 10 For Moses said: Honour thy father, and thy mother: and whosoever curses father or mother, let him die for it.
- 11 But ye say: a man shall say to father or mother Corban: which is: that thou desire of me to help thee with, is given to God.
- 12 And so ye suffer him no more to do for his father or his mother
- 13 Making the word of God of none effect through your own

96

-

¹⁶ We must make certain that we are obedient to God's word Mark 7:35 not traditions of men ie Celebrating pagan holidays.

Are you so without understanding

Mark 7:28

traditions, which ye have ordained: And many such things ye do.

- 14 And he called all the people unto him, and said unto them: Hearken unto me everyone of you, and understand:
- 15 There is nothing without a man that can defile him when it enters into him: but those things which proceed out of him, are those which defile the man.
- 16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.
- 17 And when he came to the house away from the people, his disciples asked him of the similitude.
- 18 And he said unto them: Are ye so without understanding? Do ye not yet perceive, that whatsoever thing from without enters into a man, it cannot defile him:
- 19 Because it enters not into his heart, but into the belly: and goeth out into the draught that purges out all meats?
- 20 And he said: That defileth a man, which cometh out of a man.
- 21 For from within, even out of the heart of men, proceeds evil thoughts, adultery, fornication, murder,
- 22 Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, uncleanness and a wicked eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness.
- 23 All these evil things come from within and defile a man.
- 24 And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into a house and would that no man should have known: but he could not be hid.

For a certain woman whose daughter had a foul spirit heard of him and came and fell at his feet.

- 26 The woman was a Greek out of Syrophenicia, and she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.
- 27 And Jesus said unto her: Let the children first be fed, for it is not meet to take the children's bread and to cast it unto whelps.
- 28 She answered and said unto him, even so master:

Mark 7:29

Whelps also eat of the children's crumbs

nevertheless the whelps also eat of the children's crumbs, under the table,

- 29 And he said unto her: For this saying go thy way: the devil is gone out of thy daughter.
- 30 And when she was come home to her house, she found the devil departed and her daughter laid on the bed.
- 31 And he departed again from the coast of Tyre and Sidon and came unto the sea of Galilee through the midst of the coasts of the ten cities.
- 32 And they brought unto him one that was deaf, and stammered in his speech and prayed him to lay his hand upon him.
- 33 And he took him aside from the people, and put his fingers in his ears and did spit and touched his tongue
- 34 and looked up to heaven, and sighed, and said unto him: Ephphatha that is to say, be opened.
- 35 And straight way his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed and he spake plain.
- 36 And he commanded them that they should tell no man: but the more he forbade them, so much the more a great deal they published it
- 37 And were beyond measure astonid, saying he hath done all things well and hath made both the deaf to hear and the dumb to speak

CHAPTER 8

- N those days when there was a very great company and had nothing to eat Jesus called his disciples to him and said unto them,
- 2 I have compassion on this people, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat,
- 3 And if I should send them away fasting to their own houses they should faint by the way. for divers of them came from far.
- 4 And his disciples answered him: where should a man have bread here in the wilderness to satisfy these?

Feeding the four thousand

Mark 8:19

- 5 And he asked them: How many loaves have ye? They said: Seven.
- 6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: And he took the seven loaves, gave thanks, brake, and gave to his disciples, to set before them, and they did set them before the people.
- 7 And they had a few small fishes. and he blessed them, and commanded them also to be set before them
- 8 And they ate and were sufficed: and they took up of the broken meat that was left seven baskets full.
- 9 And they that ate were in number about four thousand: and he sent them away.
- 10 And anon he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.
- 11 And the Pharisees came forth and began to dispute with him seeking of him a sign from heaven, and tempting him.
- 12 And he sighed in his spirit, and said: Why doth this generation seek a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.
- 13 And he left them, and went into the ship again and departed over the water.
- 14 And the disciples had forgotten to take bread with them; neither had they in the ship with them more than one loaf.
- 15 And he charged them saying. Take heed, and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod.
- 16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying: because we have no bread.
- 17 And when Jesus knew that, he said unto them: why take ye thought because ye have no bread? Perceive ye not yet, neither understand? Have ye your hearts yet blinded?
- 18 Have ye eyes and see not? and have ye ears and hear not? Do ye not remember?
- 19 When I broke Five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of broke meat took ye up? They said unto him

Mark 8:20

Whom do men say that I am

twelve.

- 20 When I broke seven among four thousand, how many baskets of the leavings of broken meat took ye up? They said seven.
- 21 And he said unto them: How is it that ye understand not?
- 22 And he came to Bethsaida; and they brought a blind man unto him, and desired him to touch him.
- 23 And he caught the blind by the hand, and led him out of the town; and spat in his eyes, and put his hands upon him, and asked him whether he saw ought.
- 24 And he looked up, and said: I see the men, for I see them walk, as they were trees.
- 25 After that he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him see. and he was restored, to his sight and saw every man clearly.
- 26 And he sent him home to his house saying neither go into the town nor tell it any it any in the town.
- 27 And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns that belong to the city called Caesarsea Philippi. And by the way he asked his disciples saying: whom do men say that I am?
- 28 And they answered: some say that thou art John the Baptist: some say Elias: and some, one of the prophets.
- 29 And he said unto them: But whom say ye that I am? Peter answered and said unto him: Thou art very, Christ.
- 30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of it.
- 31 And he began to teach them how that the Son of man must suffer many things, and should be reproved of the elders, and of the high priests, and scribes, and be killed and after three days arise again.
- 32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him aside and began to chide him.
- 33 Then he turned about and looked on his disciples, and rebuked Peter saying: Go after me Satan: for thou savourest not the things of God but the things of men.

This is my dear Son hear him

Mark 9:8

- 34 And he called the people unto him, with his disciples also, and said unto them: Whosoever will follow me, let him forsake himself and take up his cross and follow me.
- 35 For whosoever will save his life shall lose, it but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospels, the same shall save it.
- 36 What shall it profit a man, if he should win the entire world, and lose his own soul?
- 37 Or else what shall a man give, to redeem his soul again?
- 38 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words among this adulterous and sinful generation: of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the Holy angels.

CHAPTER 9

A ND he said unto them: Verily I say unto you: There is some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

- 2 And after six days Jesus took, Peter, James, and John, and led them up into a high mountain out of the way alone and he was transfigured before them.
- 3 And his raiment did shine, and was made very white even as snow; so white as no fuller can make upon the earth.
- 4 And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they talked with Jesus.
- 5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Lord it is good for us to be here. Let us make Three tabernacles; one for thee, one for Moses, and one for Elias.
- 6 And yet he wist not what he said; for they were afraid.
- 7 And there was a cloud that shadowed them: And a voice came out of the cloud saying: This is my dear Son: hear him.
- 8 And suddenly, they looked roundabout them and saw no man any more than Jesus only with them.

Mark 9:9

Transfiguration on the mountain

- 9 And as they came down from the hill, he charged them that they should tell no man what they had seen, till the Son of man was raised from death again.
- 10 And they kept that saying with themselves, and demanded one of another what rising from death again should mean?
- 11 And they asked him saying, why say then the scribes that Elias must first come?
- 12 He answered and said unto them Elias verily shall first come, and restore all things. and also the Son of man as it is written shall suffer many things and shall be set at naught.
- 13 Moreover I say unto you that Elias is come, and they have done unto him whatsoever pleased them, as it is written of him.
- 14 And he came to his disciples, and saw much people about them, and the scribes disputing with them.
- 15 And straight way all the people, when they beheld him, were amazed, and ran to him and saluted him.
- 16 And he said unto the Scribes: What dispute ye with them?
- 17 And one from the multitude answered
- and said, Master, I have brought my son which hath a dumb spirit.
- 18 And whensoever he taketh him, he teareth him, and he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pines away, and I spoke to thy disciples that they should cast him out and they could not
- 19 He answered him, and said: O generation without faith, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.
- 20 And they brought him unto him, and as soon as the spirit saw him, he tare him; and he fell down on the ground wallowing and foaming.
- 21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this hath happened to him? And he said of a child,
- 22 And often times it casteth him into the fire, and also into the water, to destroy him, but if you can do anything, have mercy

I believe help thou my unbelief

Mark 9:36

on us, and help us.

- 23 And Jesus said unto him, but if you couldest believe, all things are possible to him that believes.
- 24 And straight way the father of the child cried with tears, saying: Lord I believe; help thou my unbelief.
- 25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, unto him he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.
- 26 And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out: and he was as one that had been dead, insomuch that many said he is dead.
- 27 But Jesus caught his hand and lifted him up: and he arose.
- 28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him secretly, Why could not we cast him out?
- 29 And he said unto them: This kind can by no other means come forth, but by prayer and fasting.
- 30 And they departed thence, and took their journey through Galilee; and he would not that any man should have known it.
- 31 For he taught his disciples and said unto them the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and after that he is killed, he shall rise again the third day.
- 32 But they knew not what that saying meant, and were afraid to ask him.
- 33 And he came to Capernaum, And when he was come to the house he asked them, What was it that ye disputed between yourselves by the way?
- 34 And they held their peace: for by the way they reasoned among themselves, who should be the greatest.
- 35 And he sat down and called the twelve unto him, and said to them: If any man desires to be first, the same shall be last, of all and servant unto all.
- 36 And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and

Mark 9:37

Who should be greatest

took him in his arms and said unto them.

- 37 Whosoever receives any such a child in my name, receives me and whosoever receives me, receives not me, but him that sent me.
- 38 John answered him saying: Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, which followeth not us, and we forbade him, because he followeth us not.
- 39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man that shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.
- 40 Whosoever is not against you is on our part.
- 41 And whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink for my names sake, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.
- 42 And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is his better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were cast into the sea
- 43 Wherefore if thy hand offend thee, cut him off. It is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:
- 44 Where their worm dieth not and the fire never goeth out.
- 45 Likewise, if thy foot offend thee cut him off:for it is better for thee to go halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:
- 46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire never goeth out.
- 47 Even so, if thine eye offends thee, pluck him out. It is better for Thee to go into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire:
- 48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire never goeth out.
- 49 Every man therefore shall be salted with fire: and every sacrifice shall be seasoned with salt.
- 50 Salt is good. but if the salt be unsavory, what shall you salt therewith? See that ye have salt in yourselves: and have peace among yourselves, one with another.

Twain shall be one flesh

Mark 10:15

CHAPTER 10

A ND he arose from thence, and went into the coasts of Jewry through the region that is beyond Jordan: and the people resorted unto him afresh: and as he was wont he taught again

- 2 And the Pharisees came and asked him a question: whether it were laufull for a man to put away his wife? to reprove him.
- 3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses bid you do?
- 4 And they said: Moses suffered to write a testimonial of divorcement and to put her away.
- 5 And Jesus answered and said unto them: For the hardness of your heart he wrote this precept unto you.
- 6 But at the first creation God made the man and woman.
- 7 And for this things sake shall man leave his father and mother, and abide by his wife;
- 8 And they twain shall be one flesh. so then are they now not twain but one flesh.
- 9 Therefore what God hath coupled, let not man separate.
- 10 And in the house his disciples asked him again of that matter.
- 11 And he said unto them: Whosoever puts away his wife, and marries another, breaketh wedlock against her.
- 12 And if a woman forsakes her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.
- 13 And they brought children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.
- 14 When Jesus saw that, he was displeased, and said to them, suffer children to come unto me, and forbid them not. For of such is the kingdom of God.
- 15 Verely I say unto you whosoever shall not receave the kingdom of God as a child, he shall not enter therein.

Mark 10:16

One thing is lacking unto you

- 16 And he took them up in his arms, and put his hands upon them and blessed them.
- 17 And when he was come into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?
- 18 Jesus said to him, why do you call me good? There is no man good, but one which is God.
- 19 You know the commandments: break not matrimony: kill not: steal not: bear not false witness: defraud no man: honour thy father and mother.
- 20 He answered and said to him, Master, all these I have observed from my youth.
- 21 Jesus beheld him and had a favor to him, and said unto him, One thing is lacking unto thee, go, and sell all that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come take up thy cross, and follow me
- 22 But he was discomforted with that saying, and went away mourning, for he had great possessions.
- 23 And Jesus looked roundabout and said unto his disciples: What a hard thing is it for them that have riches to enter into the kingdom of God!
- 24 And his disciples were astounded at his words. But Jesus answered again and said unto them: Children, how hard it is for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God,
- 25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.
- 26 And they were astounded out of measure, saying between themselves: who then can be saved?
- 27 Jesus looked upon them and said: With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.
- 28 And Peter began to say unto him, Lo we have forsaken all, an d have followed thee.
- 29 Jesus answered and said verily I say unto you there is no man that forsaketh house, or brethren or sisters, or father or mother or wife, or their children, or lands, for my sake, and

Who then can be saved

Mark 10:42

the gospels,

- 30 Which shall not receive a hundred fold now in this life: houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children and lands, with persecutions: and in the world to come, eternal life.
- 31 Many that are first, shall be last: and the last first.
- 32 And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before them: and they were amazed and as they followed were afraid. And Jesus took the twelve, again and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,
- 33 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the high priests, and unto the Scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles:
- 34 And they shall mock him, and scourge him, and spit upon him and kill him: And the third day he shall rise again.
- 35 And then James and John, the sons of Zebedee, came unto him saying: Master, we would that thou should do for us what so ever we desire.
- 36 He said unto them: What would ye I do unto you?
- 37 They said to him: grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.
- 38 But Jesus said unto them: Ye wot not what ye ask: Can ye drink of the cup that I shall drink of? And be baptized in the baptism that I shall be baptized in?
- 39 And they said unto him: that we can. Jesus said unto them: Ye shall drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and be baptized with the baptism that I shall be baptized in,
- 40 But to set on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give; but to them for whom it is prepared.
- 41And when the ten heard that, they began to disdane atJames and John.
- 42 But Jesus called them unto him and said to them: Ye know that they which seem to bear rule among the Gentiles reign as lords over them; and they that are great among them exercise

Mark 10:43

Threw away his cloke and robe

authority over them.

- 43 So shall it not be among you: but whosoever of you will be great among you, shall be your minister:
- 44 And whosoever will be chief, shall be servant unto all.
- 45 For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life for the redemption of many.
- 46 And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples and a great number of people, Bartimaeus which was blind, the son of Timaeus, sat by the highway side begging.
- 47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry and to say: Jesus the son of David, have mercy on me.
- 48 And many rebuked him that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more a great deal, [Thou] son of David have mercy on me.
- 49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called. And they called the blind saying unto him, be of good comfort: rise; he calleth thee.
- 50 And he threw away his cloak, and rose and came to Jesus.
- 51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I do unto thee? The blind said unto him: Lord, that I might see.
- 52 Jesus said unto him: Go thy way; thy faith hath saved thee. And by and by, he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

CHAPTER 11

A ND when they came night to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany besides Mount Olivet, he sent forth two of his disciples

- 2 And said unto them, Go your way into the town that is over against you: and as soon as ye are entered into it, ye shall find a colt bound whereon never man sat; Loose him, and bring him.
- 3 And if any man say unto you: Why do ye so? Say that the Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will send him

Bartimaeus's blindness healed

Mark 11:16

hither.

- 4 And they went their way, and found a colt tied by the door without in a place where two ways met, and they loosed him.
- 5 And divers of them that stood there said unto them, what do ye, loosing the colt?
- 6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded them: and they let them go.
- 7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him: and he sat upon him.
- 8 And many spread their garments in the way: others cut down branches of the trees, and strawed them in the way.
- 9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried,
- 6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded saying: Hosanna: Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord:
- 10 Blessed be the kingdom of him, that cometh in the name, of him that is Lord of our father David, Hosanna in the highest.
- And the Lord entered into Jerusalem, looked roundabout upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.
- 12 And on the morrow when they were come out from Bethany, he hungered
- 13 And spied a fig tree a far off having leaves and went to see whether he might find anything thereon: but when he came thereto he found nothing but leaves, for the time of figs was not yet.
- 14 And Jesus answered and said to it. never man eat fruit of thee hereafter while the world standeth. And his disciples heard it.
- 15 And they came to Jerusalem. and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out the sellers and buyers in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the stalls of them that sold doves;
- 16 and would not suffer that any man carry a vessel through

Mark 11:17

Was it from heaven or men

the temple.

- 17 And he taught saying unto them: Is it not written, my house shall be called the house of prayer unto all nations? But ye have made it a den of thieves.
- 18 And the Scribes and high priests heard that, and sought how to destroy him for they feared him, because all the people marveled at his doctrine.
- 19 And when evening was come, he went out of the city.
- 20 And on the morrow, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up by the roots.
- 21 And Peter remembered and said unto him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou cursed is withered away.
- 22 And Jesus answered and said unto them: Have confidence in God.
- 23 Verely I say unto you that whosoever shall say unto this mountain: take away thyself, and cast thyself into the sea; and shall not waver in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he says shall come to pass; whatsoever he saith shall be done to him.
- 24 Therefore I say unto you whatsoever Ye desire when ye pray that ye shall have it, and it shall be done unto you
- 25 And when ye stand and pray, forgive if ye have anything against any man, that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.
- 26 But if ye forgive not, neither will your Father in heaven forgive your trespasses
- 27 And they came again to Jerusalem: and as he walked in the temple, there came to him the high priests, and the scribes, and, the elders.
- 28 And said unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?
- 29 Jesus answered and said unto them: I will also ask of you a certain thing: and answer ye me, and I will tell you by what

The evil tenants Mark 12:10

authority I do these things.

- 30 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.
- 31 And they thought in themselves, saying: if we shall say from heaven: he will say why then did ye not believe him?
- 32 but if we shall say of men: then fear we the people: for all men counted John, that he was a very prophet.
- 33 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell.

And. Jesus answered and said unto them, neither will I tell you by what authority I do these things.

CHAPTER 12

A ND he began to speak unto them in similitudes. A certain man planted a vineyard, and compassed it with a hedge, and ordained a winepress, and built a tower in it. and let it out to hire, unto husbandmen, and went into a strange country.

- 2 And when the time was come, he sent to the tenants a servant, that he might receive of the tenants of the fruit of the vineyard.
- 3 And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him again empty.
- 4 And moreover he sent unto them another servant, and at him they cast stones, and brake his head, and sent him again all shamefully treated.
- 5 And again he sent another, and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some.
- 6 Yet had he one son whom he loved tenderly. him also he sent at the last unto them, saying: they will fear my son.
- 7 But the tenants said amongst themselves: this is the heir: come let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.
- 8 And they took him and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.
- 9 What shall then the Lord of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the tenants, and let out the vineyard to others.
- 10 Have ye not read this scripture; the stone which the builders

Mark 12:11

Whose wife shall she be

did refuse is made the chief stone in the corner:

- 11 This was done of the Lord, and is marvelous in our eyes?
- 12 And they went about their way to take him but they feared the people for they perceived that he spake that similitude against them: and they left him and went their way
- 13 And they sent unto him certain of the Pharisees with Herod's servants, to take him in his words.
- 14 And as soon as they were come they said unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for you consider not the degree of men, but teachest the way of God truly: Is it lawful to pay tribute to Caesar or not?
- 15 Ought we to give or ought we not to give? He understood their simulation and said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny that I may see it.
- 16 And they brought it. And he said unto them whose image and superscription is this and they said unto him Caesars
- 17 And Jesus answered and said unto them, then give to Caesar that which belongeth to Caesar, and to God that which pertaineth to God. And they marveled at him.
- 18 Then came the Sadducees, unto him which say there is no resurrection, and they asked him saying,
- 19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man's brother die, and leave his wife behind him, and leave no children, that, then his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.
- 20 There were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and when he died, left no seed behind him.
- 21 And the second took her, and died: neither left any seed. And the third likewise.
- 22 And seven had her, and left no seed behind them. Last of all, the wife died also.
- 23 In the resurrection then, when they shall rise again, whose wife shall she be of them? for seven had her to wife.
- 24 Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye not therefore

Thou art not far from the kingdom of God

Mark 12:35

deceived, and understand not the scriptures, neither the power of God?

- 25 For when they shall rise again from death, they neither marry nor are married: but are as the angels, which are in heaven.
- 26 As touching the dead, that they shall rise again: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying: I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?
- 27 He is not the God of the dead but the God of the living ye are therefore greatly deceived.
- 28 And there came, one of the scribes, that had heard them disputing together, and perceived that he had answered them well, and asked him, Which is the first of all the commandments?
- 29 Jesus answered him: The first of all the commandments is. Hear Israel; The Lord God is one Lord:
- 30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.
- 31 And the second is like unto this, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.
- 32 And the Scribe said unto him, Well Master thou hast said the truth that there is one God and that there is none but he,
- 33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the mind, and with all the soul, and with all the strength: and to love a man's neighbor as himself, is a greater thing than all burnt offerings and sacrifices.
- 34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly he said unto him: Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.
- 35 And Jesus answered and said, teaching in the temple, how say the Scribes that Christ is the son of David?

Mark 12:36

These are the beginning of sorrows

- 36 For David himself inspired with the Holy Ghost said: The Lord said to my Lord, sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool. much people heard him gladly.
- 38 And he said unto them in his doctrine: beware of the Scribes, which love to go in long clothing: and love salutations in the market paces
- 39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and to sit in the uppermost rooms at feasts:
- 40 And devour widows houses and that under color of long praying: these shall receive greater damnation.
- 41 And Jesus sat over against the treasury: and beheld how the people put money into the treasury. and many that were rich cast in much.
- 42 And there came a certain poor widow and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.
- 43 And he called unto him his disciples, and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast more in, than all they, which have cast into the treasury.
- 44 For they all did cast in of their abundance; but she of her poverty did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

CHAPTER 13

A ND as he went out of the temple one of his disciples said unto him, Master, see what stones and what buildings are here!

- 2 And Jesus answered and said unto him: there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.
- 3 And as he sat on Mount Olivet over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him secretly,
- 4 Tell us, when shall these things be? and what is the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?
- 5 And Jesus answered them and began to say: take heed lest any man deceive you:
- 6 For many shall come in my name saying: I am Christ: and Shall deceive many

The coming tribulation

Mark 13:19

- 7 When ye shall hear of war and tidings of war, do not be troubled: for such things must be; but the end is not yet.
- 8 For there shall, nation arise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earthquakes in all quarters, and famishment and troubles. these are the beginning of sorrows.
- 9 But take ye heed to yourselves: for they shall bring you up to the councils; and into the synagogues and ye shall be beaten: yea and shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimonial unto them.
- 10 And the gospel must first be published among all nations.
- 11 But when they lead you, and present you take no thought afore hand what ye shall say, neither premeditate: but whatsoever is given you at the same time, that speak for it shall not be ye that shall speak, but the holy ghost.
- 12 Yea and the brother shall deliver the brother to death, and the father the son, and the children shall rise against their fathers, and mothers, and shall put them to death.
- 13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake: but whosoever shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.
- 14 Moreover when ye see the abomination that betokens desolation, whereof is spoken by Daniel stand where it ought not let him that readeth understand then let them that be in jewry flee to the mountains:
- 15 And let him that is on the housetop not descend down into the house, neither enter therein, to fetch anything out of his house.
- 16 And let him that is in the field not turn back again unto the things which he left behind him for to take his clothes with him.
- 17 Woe is then to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!
- 18 But pray that your flight be not in the winter.
- 19 For there shall be in those days such tribulation as was not

Mark 13:20

I say unto all men watch

from the beginning of creatures, which God created unto this time neither, shall be.

- 20 And except that the Lord should shorten those days, no man should be saved, but for the elect's sake which he hath chosen he hath shortened those days.
- 21 And then if any man say to you: Lo, here is Christ: Lo, he is there, believe not.
- 22 For false Christs shall arise, and false prophets and shall shew miracles and wonders, to deceive if it were possible, even the elect.
- 23 But take ye heed: behold I have shewed you all things before.
- 24 Moreover in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall become dark, and the moon shall not give her light,
- 25 And the stars of heaven shall fall: and the powers which are in heaven shall move.
- 26 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory
- 27 And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, and from the one end of the world to the other.
- 28 Learn a similitude of the fig tree; when his branches are yet tender, and have brought forth leaves, ye know that summer is near.
- 29 So in like manner, when ye see these things come to pass: understand that it is nigh, even at the door.
- 30 Verily I say unto you this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done.
- 31 Heaven and earth shall pass, but my words shall not pass.
- 32 But of the day and the hour knoweth no man: not the angels which are in heaven: nor the Son himself, except the Father only.
- 33 Take heed, watch and pray, for ye know not when the time is.
- 34 The Son of man is as a man, which is gone into a foreign

Where is the guest chamber

Mark 14:11

country, and hath left his house, and hath given authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.

35 Watch therefore: for ye know not when the \master of the house will come, whether at evening or at midnight, whether at the cock crowing at the dawning:

36 lest if he come suddenly he should find you sleeping.

37 And what I say unto you I say unto all men, watch.

CHAPTER 14

AFTER two days followed passover, and the days of unleavened bread. and the high priests and the Scribes sought means how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

- 2 But they said: Not on the feast [day] lest any business arise among the people
- 3 When he was in Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, even, as he sat at meat, there came a woman having an alabaster box of ointment called spikenard, that was pure and costly: and she brake the box, and poured it on his head.
- 4 And there were some that were not content in themselves, and said, What needed this waste of ointment?
- 5 For it might have been sold for more than three hundred pence, and given to the poor. And they grudged against her.
- 6 And Jesus said: Let her be in rest, why trouble ye her? She hath done a good work on me.
- 7 For ye shall have poor with you always: and whensoever ye will, ye may do them good: but me ye shall not have always.
- 8 She hath done that she could: She came aforehand to anoint my body to the burying ward.
- 9 Verily I say unto you: wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world: [this] also that she hath done shall be rehearsed in remembrance of her.
- 10 And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went away unto the high priests, to betray him unto them
- 11 When they heard that, they were glad, and promised that

Mark 14:12

Lord's supper instituted

they would give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

- 12 And the first day of sweet bread, when men offer the paschal lamb his disciples said unto him where wilt thou we go and prepare that thou may eat the passover lamb?
- 13 And he sent forth two of his disciples, and said unto them:
- Go ye into the city, there shall a man meet you bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.
- 14 And whithersoever he goeth in, say ye to the good man of the house, the master asks, where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the passover lamb with my disciples.?
- 15 And he will show you a great parlor paved and prepared: there make ready for us.
- 16 And his disciples went forth, and came to the city and found as he had said unto them: and made ready the passover lamb.
- 17 And at even he came with the twelve.
- 18 And as they sat at board and ate, Jesus said: Verily I say unto you: that One of you shall betray me which eateth with me.
- 19 And they began to mourn, and to say to him one by one: Is it I? And another said: Is it I?
- 20 He answered and said unto them: It is one of the twelve, and the same dippeth with me in the platter.
- 21 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed. good were it for him if that man had never been born.
- 22 And as they ate, Jesus took bread, blessed, and brake, and gave to them and said: Take, eat, this is my body.
- 23 And he took the cup, gave thanks, and gave it to them and they all drank of it.
- 24 And he said unto them: This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.
- 25 Verily I say unto you: I will drink no more of this fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

Betrayed by a kiss

Mark 14:41

- 26 And when they had said grace they went out to Mount Olivet.
- 27 And Jesus said unto them: All ye shall be offended through me this night: for it is written: I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.
- 28 But after that I am risen again, I will go into Galilee before you.
- 29 Peter said unto him: And though all men should be offended, yet would not I deny thee.
- 30 And Jesus said unto him: Verily I say unto thee this evening, in this night, before the cock crow twice thou shalt deny me thrice.
- 31 And he spake bolder: No If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee. Likewise also said they all.
- 32 And they came into a place named Gethsemane: and he said to his disciples: Sit ye here while I go apart and pray.
- 33 And he took with him Peter James and John, and he began to wax abashed and to be in an agony
- 34 and said unto them: My soul is very heavy even unto the death, tarry here, and watch.
- 35 And he went forth a little, and fell down on the ground and prayed: that if it were possible, the hour might pass from him.
- 36 And he said: Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee; take away this cup from me, nevertheless not what I will, but what thou wilt be done.
- 37 And he came, and found them sleeping, and said to Peter: Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch with me one hour?
- 38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: The spirit is ready, but the flesh is weak.
- 39 And again he went away and prayed, and spake the same words.
- 40 And he returned, and found them asleep again, for their eyes were heavy: neither wist they what to answer him.
- 41 And he cometh the third time and said unto them: sleep

Mark 14:42

Their witness agreed not together

henceforth and take your ease: it is enough, the hour is come behold, the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of sinners.

- 42 Rise up let us go. Lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.
- 43 And immediately, while he yet spake, came Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great number of people with swords and staves, from the high priests and scribes and elders.
- 44 And he that betrayed him had given them a general token, saying: whomsoever I do kiss, he it is: take him, and lead him away safely.
- 45 And as soon as he was come he went straightway to him, and saith unto him: Master, Master and kissed him.
- 46 And they laid hands on him, and took him.
- 47 And one of them that stood by drew out a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.
- 48 And Jesus answered and said, unto them: Ye come out as unto a thief, with swords and with staves for to take me.
- 49 I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not: but that the scriptures should be fulfilled.
- 50 And they all forsook him and ran away.
- 51 And there followed him a certain young, man clothed in linen, upon the bare, and the young men caught him,
- 52 And he left his linen, and fled from them naked.
- 53 And they led Jesus away to the highest priest of all: and to him came the high priests and the elders and the scribes.
- 54 And Peter followed him a great way off, even into the palace of the highest and he sat with the servants and warmed himself at the fire.
- 55 And the high priests and all the council sought for witness against Jesus to put him to death and found none.
- 56 Yet many bore false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together.
- 57 And there arose certain and brought false witness against him saying.
- 58 We heard him say: I will destroy this Temple made with

Peters third denial

Mark 14:72

hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands.

- 59 But their witness agreed not together.
- 60 And the highest priest stood up amongst them, and asked Jesus saying: answerest thou nothing? how is it that these bear witness against thee?
- 61 And he held his peace and answered nothing. Again the Highest Priest asked him and said unto him: Art thou Christ the Son of the blessed?
- 62 And Jesus said: I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sit on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.
- 63 Then the Highest Priest rent his clothes, and said: what need we further witness
- 64 Ye have heard the blasphemy what think ye? And they all gave sentence that he was worthy of death.
- 65 And some began to spit at him, and to cover his face, and to beat him with fists and to say unto him prophecy to us: And the servants buffeted him on the face.
- 66 And as Peter was beneath in the palace there came one of the wenches of the higest priest
- 67 And when she saw Peter warming himself she looked on him and said: was not thou also with Jesus of Nazareth?
- 68 And he denied it saying: I know him not, neither know I what you are saying. and he went out to the porch and the cock crew.
- 69 And a damsel saw him and again, began to say to them that stood by, this is one of them.
- 70 And he denied it again. And anon after they that stood by said again to Peter: Surely thou art one of them: for thou art of Galilee and thy speech agrees thereto
- 71 And he began to curse and to swear, saying: I know not this man of whom ye speak.
- 72 And the second time, again the cock crew and Peter remembered the word that Jesus said unto him, before the cock crows twice thou shalt deny me thrice and began to weep.

Mark 15:1 Crucify him

CHAPTER 15

AND anon, in the dawning, the high priests held council with the elders and the scribes and the whole congregation, and bound Jesus, and led him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

- 2 And Pilate asked him: Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answered and said unto him: Thou sayest it.
- 3 And the high priests accused him of many things:
- 4 Wherefore, Pilate asked him again, saying: Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they lay unto thy charge.
- 5 Jesus yet answered never a word; so that Pilate marveled.
- 6 At that feast Pilate was wont to deliver at their pleasure a prisoner: whomsoever they would desire.
- 7 And there was one named Barabbas which lay bound with them that made insurrection and in the insurrection committed murder
- 8 And the people called unto him and. began to desire according as he had ever done unto them.
- 9 Pilate answered them, and said, Will ye that I loose unto you the king of the Jews
- 10 For he knew that the high priests had delivered him of envy.
- 11 But the high priests had moved the people, that he should rather deliver Barabbas unto them.
- 12 And Pilate answered again and said unto them, what will ye then that I do with him whom ye call the king of the Jews
- 13 And they cried again: crucify him.
- 14 Pilate said unto them, what evil hath he done? And they cried the more fervently, crucify him.
- 15 And so Pilate willing to content the people, loosed to them Barabbas, and delivered Jesus when he had scourged him, for to be crucified.
- 16 And the soldiers led him away into the common hall, and called together the whole multitude.
- 17 And they clothed him with purple, and they platted a crown of thorns, and crowned him withal,

And gave up the ghost

Mark 15:33

- 18 And began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews.
- 19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and spat upon him, and kneeled down and worshiped him.
- 20 And when they had mocked him, they took the purple off him, and put his own clothes on him.
- 21 And they compelled one that passed by called Simon a Cyrenian, (which came out of the field, and was father of Alexander and Rufus) to bear his cross.
- 22 And they brought him to a place named Golgotha, (which is by interpretation the place of dead men's sculls)
- 23 And they gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh, but he received it not.
- 24 And when they had crucified him they parted his garments, casting lots for them, what every man should have.
- 25 And it was about the third hour and they crucified him.
- 26 And the title of his accusation written: THE KING OF THE JEWS
- 27 And they crucified with him two thieves: the one on the right hand, and the other on his left.
- 28 And the scripture was fulfilled which sayeth he was counted among the wicked.
- 29 And they that went by railed on him: wagging their heads, and saying: A wretch that destroys, the temple and buildsest it in three days,
- 30 Save thy self, and come down from the cross.
- 31 Likewise also mocked him the high priests among themselves with the scribes, and said: He saved other men; himself he cannot save
- 32 Let Christ the king of Israel descend now from the cross that we may see and believe. and they that were crucified with him chided him also.
- 33 And when the sixth hour was come, darkness arose over all

Mark 15:34

The stone was rolled away

the earth until the ninth hour.

- 34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying: Eloi, eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, if it be interpreted: My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?
- 35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard that said: behold, he calleth for Elias.
- 36 And one ran and filled a sponge full of vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying: let him alone; let us see whether Elias will come and take him down.
- 37 But Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.
- 38 And the veil of the temple did rent in two pieces
- 39 And when the Centurion, which stood before him, saw that he so cried, and gave up the ghost, he said: truly this man ¹⁷was the Son of God.
- 40 There were also women a good way off, beholding him, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the little and of Joses and Salome
- 41 Which also when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him; and many other women which came up with him to Jerusalem.
- 42 And now when night was come, (because it was the even that goeth before the sabbath)
- 43 Joseph of Arimathaea, a noble councilor which also looked for the kingdom of God, came and went in boldly unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.
- 44 And Pilate marveled that he was already dead and called unto him the Centurion, and asked of him whether he had been any while dead.
- 45 And when he knew the truth of the Centurion, he gave the

¹⁷ The centurions' error This man not only was and is, and ever will be the Son of God.

He is not here he is risen

Mark 16:10

body to Joseph.

46 And he bought a linen cloth, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen cloth, and laid him in a tomb that was hewn out of the rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulcher

47 Mary Magdalene and Mary mother of Joses beheld where he was laid.

CHAPTER 16

AND when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary mother of James and Salome bought odors, that they might come and anoint him.

- 2 And early in the morning the next day, after the sabbath day they came unto the sepulcher when the sun was risen.
- 3 And they said one to another: who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulcher?
- 4 And when they looked they saw how the stone was rolled away for it was a very great one.
- 5 And they went into the sepulcher and saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were abashed
- 6 And he said unto them, be not afraid: Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: He is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they put him.
- 7 But go your way, and tell his disciples namely Peter: he will go before you into Galilee there ye shall see him, as he said unto you.
- 8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulcher; for they trembled and were amazed. Neither said they anything to any man; for they were afraid.
- 9 When Jesus was risen the morrow after the Sabbath day, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he cast seven devils.
- 10 And she went and told them that had been with him, as They mourned and wept.

Mark 16:11 They went forth and preached everywhere

- 11 And when they heard, that he was alive and had appeared to her believed it not
- 12 After that he appeared unto two of them in a strange figure as they walked, and went into the country
- 13 And they went and told it to the remnant: and they believed them neither
- 14 After that he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and cast in their teeth their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after his resurrection.
- 15 And he said unto them: Go ye into the world and preach the glad tidings to all creatures
- 16 He that believeth and is baptized; shall be saved. but he that believeth not shall be damned.
- 17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name they shall cast out devils and shall speak with new tongues
- 18 And shall kill serpents; And if they drink any deadly thing, that shall not hurt them. They shall lay their hands on the sick, and they shall recover.
- 19 So then when the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received into heaven and is set down on the right hand of God.
- 20 And they went forth, and preached everywhere. And the miracles that followed. A-men

The birth of John foretold

Luke 1:13

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT LUKE

OREASMUCH as many have taken in hand to compile a treatise of those things which are surely known among us,

- 2 Even as they declared them unto us, which from the beginning saw them theirselves, and were ministers of the word:
- 3 I determined also, as soon as I had searched out diligently all things from the beginning, that I would write unto thee, good Theophilus:
- 4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou art informed.
- 5 There was in the days of Herod, king of Jewry, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia. and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, her name was Elisabeth. 6 Both were perfect before God, and walked in all the laws, and ordinances, of the Lord, that no man could find fault with them.
- 7 And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and both were well stricken in age.
- 8 And it came to pass, as he executed the priests office before God, as his course came.
- 9 (according to the custom of the priests office) his lot was to burn incense.
- 10 And went into the temple of the Lord and the whole multitude of the people were without in prayer while the incense was burning.
- 11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense.
- 12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was abashed, and fear came on him.
- 13 And the angel said unto him, fear not, Zachary for thy prayer is heard; And thy wife Elisabeth shall bare thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.

Luke 1:14

To a virgin espoused to a man

- 14 And thou shalt have Joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth.
- 15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall neither drink wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost even in his mother's womb:
- 16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.
- 17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the unbelievers to the wisdom of the just men: to make the people ready for the Lord
- 18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, whereby shall I know this? Seeing that I am old, and my wife well stricken in years.
- 19 And the angel answered and said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent unto thee: and to shew thee these glad tidings.
- 20 And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the time that these things be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.
- 21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried in the temple.
- 22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: Whereby they perceived that he had seen some vision in the temple. And he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.
- 23 And it fortuned, as soon, as the time of his office was out, he departed home into his own house
- 24 And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived and hid herself five months saying,
- 25 This wise hath God dealt with me in the days when he looked on me, to take from me the rebuke that I suffered among men.
- 26 And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,
- 27 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgins name was Mary.

Reign over the house of Jacob forever

Luke 1:42

- 28 And the angel went in unto her, and said, hail, full of grace, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women.
- 29 When she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation that should be.
- 30 And the angel said unto her, fear not Mary: for thou hast found grace with God.
- 31 Lo, thou, shalt conceive in thy womb, and shalt bare a son, and shalt call his name Jesus.
- 32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the highest: And the Lord God shall give unto him the seat of his father David:
- 33 And he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever; and of his kingdom shall be no end.
- 34 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?
- 35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the highest shall overshadow thee: Therefore also that Holy thing which shall be born shall be called the Son of God.
- 36 And behold thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her age: And this is her sixth month, though she was called barren.
- 37 For with God can nothing be impossible.
- 38 And Mary said, behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me even as thou hast said. And the angel departed from her.
- 39 And Mary arose in those days, and went into the mountains with haste into a city of Jewry
- 40 And entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth.
- 41 And it came to pass as Elisabeth heard the salutation of
- 42 And cried with a loud voice, and said, blessed art thou

Luke 1:43

And holy is his name

among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb.And Elizabeth as filled with the HolyGhost

- 43 And whence happeneth this to me that the mother of my Lord should come to me?
- 44 For lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for Joy.
- 45 And blessed art thou that believest, for those things shall be performed, which were told thee, from the Lord.
- 46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord
- 47 and my spirit rejoices in God my ¹⁸Saviour.
- 48 For he hath looked on the poor degree of his handmaid. Behold now from henceforth shall all generations call me blessed.
- 49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; and holy is his name.
- 50 And his mercy is on them that fear him throughout all generations.
- 51 He Sheweth strength with his arm he scattereth them that are proud in the imagination of their hearts.
- 52 He putteth down the mighty from their seats and exalteth them of low degree.
- 53 He filleth the hungry with good things: and sendeth away the rich empty.
- 54 He remembreth mercy: and holpen his servant Israel.
- 55 Even as he promised to our father Abraham and to his seed forever.
- 56 And Mary abode with her about three months and returned again to her own house.
- 57 Elisabeth's time was come that she should be delivered, and she brought forth a son.
- 58 And her neighbors and her cousins heard tell how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

¹⁸ Mary's son is her Saviour

The prophet of the higest

Luke 1:74

- 59 And it came to pass the eighth day: they came to circumcise the child; and called his name Zacharias after the name of his Father.
- 60 Howbeit his mother answered and said: not so but he shall be called John.
- 61 And they said unto her, There is none of thy kin that is named with this name.
- 62 And they made signs to his father how he would have him called.
- 63 And he asked for writing table, and wrote, saying, his name is John. And they marveled all.
- 64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue also, and he spake praising God.
- 65 And fear came on all them that dwelt nigh unto them. And all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hills of Jewry
- 66 And all they that heard them laid them up in their hearts, saying, what manner child shall this be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.
- 67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,
- 68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people.
- 69 And hath raised up an horn of salvation unto us in the house of his servant David;
- 70 Even as he promised by the mouth of his holy prophets, which were since the world began:
- 71 That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hands of all that hate us:
- 72 To fulfill the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant.
- 73 And to perform the oath which he sware to our father Abraham
- 74 For to give us, that we being delivered out of the hands of

Luke 1:75

The Saviour's birth is announced

our enemies might serve him without fear,

75 All the days of our life, in such holiness, and righteousness, that are accepted before him.

76 And thou, child shalt be called the prophet of the highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways:

77 And to give knowledge of salvation unto his people for the remission of sins:

78 Through the tender mercy of our God whereby the dayspring from on high hath visited us,

79 To give light to them that sit in darkness and in shadow of death, and to guide our feet into the way of peace.

80 And the child grew, and was strong in spirit, and was in the wilderness till the day came when he should shew himself unto the Israelites.

CHAPTER 2

And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a commandment from Augustus, the Emperor, that all the world should be taxed.

- 2 And this taxing was first executed when Cyrenius was lieutenant in Syria.
- 3 And every man went unto his own city to be taxed.
- 4 And Joseph also ascended from Galilee, out of a city called Nazareth, into Jewry: unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem because he was of the house and linage of David:
- 5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, which was with child.
- 6 And it came to pass; while they were there, her time was come that she should be delivered.
- 7 And she brought forth her first begotten son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room, for them within the inn.
- 8 And there were in the same region shepherds abiding in the field and watching their flock by night.
- 9 And, lo, the angel of the Lord stood hard by them, and the

Before he had seen the Lord's Christ

Lule 2:23

brightness of the Lord shone roundabout them: and they were sore afraid.

- 10 But the angel said unto them, Be not afraid. for behold I bring you good tidings of great Joy, that shall come to all the people:
- 11 For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.
- 12 And take this for a sign ye shall find the child swaddled and laid in a manger.
- 13 And straightway there was with the angel a multitude of heavenly soldiers lauding God and saying,
- 14 Glory to God on high, and peace on the earth: and unto men rejoicing.
- 15 And it fortuned, as soon as the angels were gone away, from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, let us go even unto Bethlehem and see this thing that is come to pass, which the Lord hath shewd unto us.
- 16 And they came with haste and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe laid in a manger.
- 17 And when they had seen it they published abroad the saying which was told them of that child
- 18 And all that heard it wondered at those things, which were told them of the shepherds.
- 19 But Mary kept all those sayings, and pondered them in her heart.
- 20 And the shepherds returned praising and glorifying God for all that they had heard and seen, even as it was told unto them.
- 21 And when the eighth day was come that the child, should be circumcised, his name was called Jesus, which was named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.
- 22 And when the time of her purification [after the law of Moses] was come, they brought him to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord
- 23 (As that is written in the law of the Lord: every man that

Luke 2:24

Mine eyes have seen the Saviour

first openeth the matrix shall be called holy to the Lord)

- 24 And to offer, (as it is said in the law of the Lord) a pair of turtle doves, or two young pigeons.
- 25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; And the same man was just and feared God, and longed for the consolation of Israel and the Holy Ghost was in him.
- 26 And an answer was given him of the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ.
- 27 And he came by inspiration into the temple: and when the father and mother brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law,
- 28 Then took he him up in his arms, and said,
- 29 Lord now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace according to thy Promise.
- 30 For mine eyes have seen the Saviour sent from thee,
- 31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people;
- 32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.
- 33 And Joseph and his mother marveled at those things which were spoken of him.
- 34 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, behold, this child shall be the fall and resurrection of many in Israel; and a sign which shall be spoken against;
- 35 And moreover the sword shall pierce thy soul, that the thoughts of many hearts may be opened.
- 36 And there was a Prophetess one Anna the daughter of Phanuel of the tribe of Aser, which was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginity;
- 37 And she had been a widow about fourscore and four years, which went never out of the temple, but served God with fasting and prayer night and day.
- 38 And the same came forth that same hour and praised the Lord, and spake of him to all that looked for redemption in Jerusalem

Must go go about my Fathers business

Luke 2:52

- 39 And as soon as they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.
- 40 And the child grew and waxed strong in spirit, and was filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was with him.
- 41 And his father and mother went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of passover.
- 42 And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast.
- 43 And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned home, the child Jesus abode still in Jerusalem; unknown to his father and mother.
- 44 For they, supposed he had been in the company, and therefore came a day's journey; and sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.
- 45 And when they found him not, they went back again to Jerusalem, and sought him.
- 46 And it fortuned after three days that they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them and posing them.
- 47 And all that heard him marveled at his wit and answers.
- 48 And when they saw him they were astonied: And his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? Behold thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.
- 49 And he said unto them: how is it that ye sought me? Wist ye not that I must go about my Father's business?
- 50 And they understood not the saying that he spake unto them.
- 51 And he went with them and came to Nazareth and was obedient to them, but his mother kept all these things in her heart.
- 52 And Jesus increased in wisdom and age and in favour with God and man.

Luke 3:1

Repentance for the remissio of sins

CHAPTER 3

In the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius the Emperor, Pontius Pilate being lieutenant of Jewry, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip Tetrarch in Ituraea and in the region of Trachonitus and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene

- 2 When Annas and Caiaphas were the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.
- 3 And he came into all the coasts about Jordan, preaching the baptism, of ¹⁹repentance, for the remission of sins
- 4 At it is written in the book of the sayings, of Isaiah the prophet, which saith: The voice of a crier in wilderness, prepare the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.
- 5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; crooked things shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth;
- 6 And all flesh shall see the saviour sent of God.
- 7 Then said he to the people that were come to be baptized of him: O generation of vipers who hath taught you to flee from the wrath to come?
- 8 Bring forth due fruits of repentance, and begin not to say, in yourselves, we have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you,

19 Of or because ofremission
John preached a baptism that required a previous repentance manifested by its fruit as shown, in Matthew 3:6-8. Robertson and Yeager both translate it as "preaching immersion of repentance because of remission of sins. "for the remission of sins" modifies repentance rather than immersion. repentance is meant to characterize immersion as the response to repentance. Both immersion and repentance are found without definite articles (the) and thus characterization could be the intent and therefore immersion is characterized by repentance. That being the case, the prepositional phrase "for the remission of sins" would better modify "repentance" rather than "immersion." It could be translated "preaching immersion in response to repentance for the remission of sins." Thus, the prerequisite immersion is repentance and it is repentance that obtains remission of sins

John put into the prison

Luke 3:21

God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham

- 9 Now also is the axe laid unto the root of the trees: so that every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit shall be hewn down, and cast into the fire.
- 10 And the people asked him, saying, what shall we do then?
- 11 He answered and said unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart with him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.
- 12 Then came there, Publicans to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?
- 13 And he said unto them, require no more than that which is appointed unto you.
- 14 The soldiers likewise demanded of disciples who sat in compass about him, saying, and what shall we do? And he said to them, Do violence to no man, neither trouble any man wrongfully, but be content with your wages.
- 15 As the people were in a doubt, and all men disputed in their hearts of John, whether he were very Christ:
- 16 John answered, and said to them all, I baptize you with water, but a stronger than I cometh after me whose shoe latchet I am not worthy to unloose: he will baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:
- 17 Which hath his fan in his hand and will purge his floor, and will gather the corn into his barn, but the chaff will he burn with fire that never shall be quenched.
- 18 And many other things in his exhortations preached he unto the people.
- 19 Then Herod the Tetrarch (when he was rebuked of him for Herodias his brother Philips wife and for all the evils which Herod had done)
- 20 Added yet this above all, and laid John in prison.
- 21 And it fortuned as all the people received baptism (and when Jesus was baptised and did pray) that heaven was opened

Luke 3:22

The regal Lineage of Jesus

- 22 And the Holy Ghost came down in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, saying, Thou art my dear Son in thee do I delight.
- 23 And Jesus himself was about thirty years of age, when he being as men supposed the son of Joseph, which Joseph, was the son of Heli,
- 24 Which was the son of Mathat, which was the son of Levi, which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Janna, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Amos, which was the son of Nahum, which was the son of Esli, which was the son of Nagge,
- 26 Which was the son of Maath, which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Semei, which was the son of Joseph: which was the son of Juda,
- 27 Which was the son of Joanna, which was the son of Rhesa, which was the son of Zorobabel, which was the son of Salathiel, which was the son of Neri,
- 28 Which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the son of Elmodam, which was the son of Er,
- 29 Which was the son of Jose, which was the son of Eliezer, which which was the son of Joram, which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi,
- 30 Which was the son of Simeon, which was the son of Juda: which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Jonan: which was the son of Eliakim.
- 31 Which was the son of Melea, which was the son of Menan: which was the son of Mattatha, which was the son of Nathan, which was the son of David,
- 32 Which was the son of Jesse, which was the son of Obed, which was the son of Boaz: which was the son of Salmon, which was the son of Naason:
- 33 Which was the son of Aminadab, which was the son of Aram, which was the son of Esrom, which was the son of Phares.

Devils futile temptations

Luke 4:9

- 34 Which was the son of Juda, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Thara, which was the son of Nachor,
- 35 Which was the son of Saruch, which was the son of Ragau, which was the son of Phalec, which was the son of Heber, which was the son of Sala:
- 36 Which was the son of Cainan: which was the son of Arphaxad, which was the son of Shem, which was the son of Noah, which was the son of Lamech,
- 37 Which was the son of Methuselah, which was the son of Enoch: which was the son of Jared, which was the son of Maleleel, which was the son of Cainan,
- 38 Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God.

CHAPTER 4

- **J** ESUS then full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan and was carried of the Spirit into wilderness
- 2 And was forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days ate he nothing and when they were ended he afterward hungered.
- 3 And the devil said unto him: if thou be the Son of God command this stone that it be bread.
- 4 And Jesus answered him saying: It is written, man shall not live by bread only but by every word of God.
- 5 And the devil, took him up into an high mountain, and shewd him all the kingdoms of the world even in the twinkling of an eye.
- 6 And the devil said unto him: all this power will I give thee every whit and the glory of them: for that is delivered to me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.
- 7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, they shall be all thine.
- 8 Jesus answered him and said: Hence from me, Satan. for it is written: Thou shalt honour the Lord thy God, and him only serve.
- 9 And he carried him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle

Luke 4:10

Stood up for to read

of the temple, and said unto him: If thou be the Son of God cast thy self down from hence.

- 10 For it is written, he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee:
- 11 And with their hands they shall stay thee up, that thou dash not thy foot against a stone.
- 12 Jesus answered and said to him, It is said: thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.
- 13 As soon as the devil had ended all his temptations, he departed from him for a season.
- 14 And Jesus returned by the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him throughout all the region round about.
- 15 And he taught in their synagogues, and was commended of all men.
- 16 And he came to Nazareth, where he was ²⁰nourished, and as his custom was went into the synagogue on the Sabbath days, and stood up for to read.
- 17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Isaiah. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,
- 18 The spirit of the Lord upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath set me to heal the broken hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and giving sight to the blind, and freely to set at liberty them that are bruised.
- 19 And to preach the acceptable year of the Lord.
- 20 And he closed the book, and gave it again to the minister and sat down. And the eyes of all that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.
- 21 And he began to say unto them. This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.
- 22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious

_

²⁰ Nourished That is grew up

This day is this scripture is fulfilled in your ears

Luke 4:35

words, which proceeded out of his mouth, and said, Is not this Josephs son?

- 23 And he said unto them: Ye may very well say unto me this proverb, Physician; heal thyself, whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do the same likewise here in thine own country.
- 24 And he said verily I say unto you, no prophet is accepted in his own country.
- 25 But I tell you of a truth many widows were in Israel in the days of Elijah, when heaven was shut three years and six months when a great famine was throughout all the land;
- 26 And unto none of them was Elijah sent, save unto Sarepta, beside Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.
- 27 And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the Prophet: and yet none of them was healed saving Naaman of Syria
- 28 And as many as were in the synagogue, when they heard that were filled with wrath,
- 29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city and led him even unto the edge of the hill whereon their city was built, to cast him down headlong.
- 30 But he went his way even through the midst of them,
- 31 And came into Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and there taught them on the sabbath days.
- 32 And they were astonied at his doctrine: for his preaching was with power.
- 33 And in the synagogue there was a man who had the spirit of an unclean devil and cried with a loud voice.
- 34 Saying, let me alone, what hast thou to do with us, thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee what thou art; even the holy of God.
- 35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, hold thy peace, and come out of him. And the devil threw him into the midst of them, and came out of him and hurt him not.

Luke 4:36 Peter's mother in law was ill with a great fever

- 36 And fear came on them all and they spake among themselves selves saying: what maner a thing is this? For with authority and power he commandeth the foul spirits and they come out
- 37 And the fame of him spread abroad throughout all places of the country roundabout.
- 38 And he rose up and came out of the synagogue, and entered into Simons house, And Simons mother in law was taken with a great fever; and they made intercession to him for her.
- 39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever: and it left her, and immediately she arose and ministered unto them.
- 40 When the sun was down, all they that had sick taken with divers diseases, brought them unto him; and he laid his hands on everyone of them, and healed them.
- 41 And devils also came out of many of them, crying and saying: thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuked them and suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.
- 42 As soon as it was day, he departed and went away into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came to him and kept him, that he should not depart from them
- 43 And he said unto them: I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also; for therefore am I sent.
- 44 And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

CHAPTER 5

- T came to pass as the people pressed upon him, to hear the word of God, that he stood by the lake of Gennesaret,
- 2 And saw two ships standing by the lake side: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.
- 3 And he entered into one of the ships, which belonged to Simon, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship.
- 4 When he had left speaking he said unto Simon, launch out into the deep and let slip your nets to make a draught

For I am a sinful man

Luke 5:17

- 5 And Simon answered and said to him, Master we have labored all night and have taken nothing; nevertheless at thy word I will loose forth the net.
- 6 And when they had so done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake:
- 7 But they made signs to their fellows, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them and they came, and filled both the ships, that they sank again.
- 8 When Simon Peter saw that, he fell down at Jesus knees saying, Lord, go, from me, for I am a sinful man,
- 9 For he was utterly astonied, and all that were with him, at the draught of fish which they took:
- 10 And so was also James, and John, the sons of Zebedee which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said, unto Simon, fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men.
- 11 And they brought the ships to land, and forsook all, and followed him.
- 12 And it came to pass, as he was in a certain city, behold there was a man full of leprosy: and when he had spied Jesus he fell on his face, and besought him saying, Lord, if thou, wilt, thou canst make me clean.
- 13 And he stretched forth his hand, and touched him saying, I will: be thou clean. And immediately the leprosy departed from him.
- 14 And he warned him that he should tell no man: but that he should go, and shew himself to the priest, and offer for his cleansing, according as Moses commanded for a witness unto them.
- 15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, and much people came together to hear, and to be healed of him of their infirmities.
- 16 And he kept himself apart in the wilderness, and gave himself to prayer.
- 17 And it came to pass, on a certain day, that he taught, and there sat the Pharisees, and doctors of law, which were come

Luke 5:18

Thy sins are forgiven thee

out of all the towns of Galilee, Jewry, and Jerusalem,: and the power of the Lord was there to heal them.

- 18 And, behold, men brought a man lying in his bed, which was taken with a palsy: and sought means to bring him in and to lay him before him.
- 19 And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in because of the press they went up on the top of the house and let him down through the tiling, bed and all lay him in the midst before Jesus.
- 20 When he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.
- 21 And the Scribes and the Pharisees began to think, saying, What fellow is this which speaketh blasphemy? Who can forgive sins, but God only?
- 22 When Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answered, and said, unto them: What think ye in your hearts?
- 23 Whether is easier to say thy sins are forgiven thee; or to say, Rise and walk?
- 24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power to forgive sins, on earth he said unto the sick of the palsy: I say to thee, Arise take up thy bed and go home to thy house.
- 25 And immediately he rose up before them and took up his bed whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, praising God.
- 26 And they were all amazed and they lauded God, and were filled with fears, saying: We have seen strange things today
- 27 And after that he went forth and saw a publican named Levi sitting at the receipt of custom: and said unto him: follow me.
- 28 And he left all rose up, and followed him.
- 29 And that same Levi made him a great feast at home in his own house: and there was a great company of publicans and of others that sit at meat with him.
- 30 And the scribes and Pharisees, murmured against his disciples, saying, Why eat ye and drink ye with publicans and

The sick need the physician

Luke 6:5

sinners?

- 31 Jesus answered and said unto them, They that are whole need not of the physician, but they that are sick.
- 32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.
- 33 Then they said unto him: Why do the disciples of John fast often and pray the Pharisees also, and thine eat and drink?
- 34 And he said unto them, Can ye make the children of the wedding fast, as long as the bridegroom is present with them?
- 35 The days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them then shall they fast in those days
- 36 Then he spake unto them in a similitude, No man putteth a piece of a new garment into an old vesture, for if he do, then breaketh, he the new, and the piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old.
- 37 Also no man poureth new wine into old vessels. for if he do the new wine breaketh the vessels and runneth out itself and the vessels perish:
- 38 But new wine must be poured into new vessels and both are preserved.
- 39 Also no man that drinketh old wine straightway desireth new for he saith, the old is pleasanter.

CHAPTER 6

- T happened on an after sabbath that he went through the corn field and his disciples plucked the ears of corn and ate and rubbed them in their hands.
- 2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath days?
- 3 And Jesus answered them and said. Have ye not read what David did when he himself was an hungred and they which were with him,
- 4 How he went into the house of God, and took and ate the loaves of hallowed bread, and gave also to them which were with him;
- 5 And he said unto them, The Son of man is Lord of the sabbath day.

Luke 6:6

Rise up and stand forth

- 6 And it fortuned, in another Sabbath, also that he entered into the synagogue and taught: And there was a man whose right hand was dried up.
- 7 And the Scribes and Pharisees, watched him to see whether he would heal on the sabbath day; that they might find an accusation against him.
- 8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the devoured hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stepped forth.
- 9 Then said Jesus unto them: I will ask you a question: Whether is it lawful on the sabbath days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or for to destroy it?
- 10 And he beheld them all, in compassion, and said unto the man: Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored and made as whole as the other.
- 11 And they were filled full of madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.
- 12 And it fortuned in those days that he went out into a mountain for to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.
- 13 And as soon as it was day he called his disciples: and of them he chose twelve which also he called apostles;
- 14 Simon whom he named Peter: and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,
- 15 Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon called Zelotes
- 16 and Judas James son, and Judas Iscariot, which same was the the traitor.
- 17 And he came down with them and stood in the plain field, with the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all parts of Jewry and Jerusalem and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases:
- 18 And they also that were vexed with foul spirits: and they were healed.
- 19 And all the people pressed to touch him: for there went

Woe be to you that are rich

Luke 6:34

virtue out of him and healed them all.

- 20 And he lifted up his eyes upon the disciples, and said: Blessed be the poor: for yours is the kingdom of God.
- 21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be satisfied. Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh.
- 22 Blessed are ye when men hate you, and thrust you out of their company and reproach and abhor your name as an evil thing, for the Son of mans sake.
- 23 Rejoice ye then and be glad, for behold, your reward is great in heaven: after this manner their fathers entreated the prophets.
- 24 But woe be to you that are rich: for ye have therein your consolation.
- 25 Woe be to you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Woe be to you that now laugh: for ye shall wail and weep.
- 26 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which wrongfully trouble you
- 27 But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you.
- 28 Bless them that curse thee and pray for them that wrongfully trouble You
- 29 And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other, and him that taketh away thy gown forbid not to take thy coat also.
- 30 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again.
- 31 And as ye would that men should do to you, so do ye to them likewise.
- 32 If ye love them which love you, what thank are ye worthy of? ? for the very sinners love their lovers.
- 33 And if ye do for them, which do for you, what thank are ye worthy of? for the very sinners do even the same.
- 34 If ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank shall ye have, for the very sinners lend to sinners, to receive as much again.

Luke 6:35

Can the blind lead the blind

- 35 Wherefore love ye your enemies, do good, and lend, Looking for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unkind and to the evil.
- 36 Be ye therfore merciful as your Father is mercifull.
- 37 Judge not, and ye shall not be Judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:
- 38 Give, and that shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with what measure ye meet with the same shall men meet to you again.
- 39 And he put forth a similitude unto them: can the blind lead the blind, Do they not both then fall into the ditch?
- 40 The disciple is not above his master, every man shall be perfect even as his master.
- 41 Why seeth thou a mote in thy brothers Eye, but consider not the beam that is in thine own eye?
- 42 Or how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Hypocrite, cast out the beam out of thine own eye first, and then shalt thou see perfectly to pull the mote out of thy brothers eye.
- 43 It is not a good tree that bringeth forth bringeth forth evil fruit. neither is that an evil tree that bringeth forth good fruit
- 44 For every tree is known by his fruit. neither of thorns men gather figs, nor of bushes gather they grapes.
- 45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.
- 46 Why call ye me Master, Master: and do not as I bid you?
- 47 Whosoever cometh to me and heareth my sayings and doeth the same I will shew you to whom he is like.
- 48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: when the waters arose, the flood

I am not worthy

Luke 7:12

beat upon that house and could not move it: for it was grounded upon a rock.

49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the flood did beat: and it fell by and by; and the fall of that house was great.

CHAPTER 7

WHEN he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum.

- 2 And a certain centurion's servant, was sick, and ready to die, whom he made much of.
- 3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.
- 4 And they came to Jesus, and besought him instantly, saying, He is worthy that thou shouldest do this for him.
- 5 For he loveth our nation, and hath built us a synagogue
- 6 And Jesus went with them. And when he was not far from the house the centurion sent friends to him saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof.
- 7 Wherefore I thought not myself worthy to come unto thee: but say the word, and my servant shall be whole.
- 8 For I likewise am a man under power, and have under me soldiers and I say unto one, go, and he goeth: and to another, come, and he cometh: and to my servant do this, and he doeth it.
- 9 When Jesus heard this he marveled at him, and turned him about, and said to the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.
- 10 And they that were sent, turned back home again, and found the servant that was sick whole.
- 11 And it fortuned after that, he went into a city called Nain, and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.
- 12 When he came nigh to the gate of the city behold, there was

Luke 7:13

Art thou he that should come

- a dead man carried out, which was the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.
- 13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her weep not.
- 14 And he went and touched the coffin: and they that bare him stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee arise.
- 15 And the dead sit up and began to speak. And he delivered him to his mother.
- 16 And there came a fear on them all: and they glorified God saying: a great prophet is risen among us, and God hath visited his people.
- 17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Jewry, and throughout all the regions which lay roundabout.
- 18 And the disciples of John shewd him of all these things.
- 19 And John called unto him two. of his disciples and sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that shall come? or shall we look for another?
- 20 When the men were come unto him, they said, John the Baptist sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that shall come? or shall we watch for another?
- 21 And at that same time he cured many of their infirmities and plagues and of evil spirits; and unto many that were blind he gave sight
- 22 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Go your ways and shew John what things ye have seen and heard; how that the blind see, the halt go, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead arise, to the poor is the glad tidings preached.
- 23 And happy is he that is not offended by me.
- 24 When the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people of John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? Went ye to see A reed shaken with the wind?
- 25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold they which are gorgeously apparelled and live

What are they like

Luke 7:39

delicatly are in kings' courts.

- 26 But what went ye forth to see? A prophet? Yea I say to you and more than a prophet
- 27 This is he of whom it is written, Behold I send my messenger before my face to prepare thy way before thee.
- 28 For I say unto you a greater prophet than John among womens children is there none: nevertheless one that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.
- 29 And all the people that heard him, and the publicans justified God and were baptized with the baptism of John.
- 30 But the Pharisees and scribes despised the council of God against themselves, and were not baptized of him.
- 31 And the Lord said: Whereunto shall I liken the men of this generation? and what thing are they like?
- 32 They are like unto children sitting in the marketplace, and crying one to another, and saying we have piped unto you and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.
- 33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye say: he hath the devil.
- 34 The Son of man is come and eateth and drinketh and ye say: behold, a man, which is a glutton, and a drinker of wine, a friend of publicans and sinners.
- 35 Yet is wisdom justified of all her children.
- 36 And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisees house, and sit down to meat.
- 37 And behold a woman in that city, which was a sinner, as soon as she knew that. Jesus sit at meat in the Pharisees house; she brought an alabaster box of ointment,
- 38 And she stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with ointment.
- 39 When the Pharisee which had bidden him saw, he spake within himself saying: if this man were a prophet he would

Luke 7:40

An alabaster box of ointment

surely have known who and what manner woman this is which toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

- 40 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Simon I have some what to say unto thee. And he said master say on.
- 41 There was a certain lender which had two debtors, the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty.
- 42 When they had nothing to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them tell me, will love him most?
- 43 Simon answered and said: I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him: thou hast truly Judged.
- 44 And he turned to the woman and said unto Simon: Seest thou this woman? I entered into thy house, and thou gavest me no water to my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head.
- 45 Thou gavest me no kisses: but she since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet
- 46 Thou didst not anoint mine head with oil: but she hath anointed my feet with ointment.
- 47 Wherefore I say unto thee: many sins are forgiven her, for she loved much. To whom least is forgiven, the same doth least love.
- 48 And he said unto her thy sins are forgiven thee.
- 49 And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves: who is this which forgiveth sins also?
- 50 And he said to the woman: Thy faith hath saved thee Go in peace.

CHAPTER 8

And it fortuned after that: that he himself went throughout cities and towns preaching and shewing the kingdom of God: and the twelve with him.

2 And also certain women which were healed of evil spirits and infirmities: Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils Susanna and many others: which ministred unto him of their substance

Similtude of the sower

Luke 8:16

substance.

- 4 When much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of all cities he spake by a similitude.
- 5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed some fell by the way side and it was trodden under feet and the fowls of the air devoured it.
- 6 And some fell on stone, and as soon as it was sprung up it withered away, because it lacked moistness.
- 7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns leaped up with it, and choked it.
- 8 And some fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundredfold. And as he said these things he cried: He that hath ears to hear let him hear.
- 9 And his disciples asked him saying: what manner similitude is this?
- 10 And he said: Unto you is it given to know the secrets of the kingdom of God: but to others in similitudes, that when they see they should not see, and when they hear they should not understand.
- 11 The similitude is this: The seed is the word of God.
- 12 Those that are beside the way are they that hear; and afterward cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.
- 13 They on the stones are they, which when they hear receive the word with Joy; but these have no roots, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation go away.
- 14 And that which fell among thorns are they, which, hear and go forth, and are choked with cares and with riches and voluptuous living, and bring forth no fruit
- 15 That in the good ground are they, which with a good and pure heart, hear the word, and keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience
- 16 No man lighteth a candle, and covereth it under a vessel neither putteth it under the table the table but setteth it on a

Luke 8: 17

Seed is the is the word of God

candlestick that they that enter in may see the light.

- 17 Nothing is in secret that shall not come abroad; neither [anything] hidden, that shall not be known and come to Light.
- 18 Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that same which he supposeth that he hath.
- 19 Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press.
- 20 And they told him saying, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without and would see thee.
- 21 He answered and said unto them, my mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.
- 22 And it chanced on a certain day, that he went into a ship and his disciples also: and he said unto them: Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they launched forth.
- 23 And as they sailed he fell asleep: and there arose a storm of wind in the lake; and they were filled with water and were in jeopardy.
- 24 And they went to him, and awoke him, saying: Master, Master, we are lost. Then he arose and rebuked the wind and the tempest of water: and they ceased, and it was calm.
- 25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? They feared and wondered, saying one to another, what fellow is this? for he commandeth both the winds and water, and they obey him?
- 26 And they sailed unto the region of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee.
- 27 And as he went out to land there met him a certain man out of the city which had a devil long time and ware no clothes neither abode in any house, but among graves.
- 28 When he saw Jesus, he cried with a loud voice and said: What have I to do with thee Jesus, thou Son of God most highest? and fell down before him, I beseech thee, torment me not.
- 29 Then he commanded the foul spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes they caught him: and he was bound with chains

What is thy name

Mark 8:41

and kept with fetters: and he brake the bands, and was carried of the fiend into the wilderness.

- 30 And Jesus asked him saying: what is thy name? And he said: Legion, because many devils were entered into him. And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.
- 32 And there was thereby an herd of many swine feeding on an hill: and they be sought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them.
- 33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd took their course and ran headlong into the lake and were choked.
- 34 When the herdsmen saw what had chanced, they fled, and told it in the city and in the villages.
- 35 And they came out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.
- 36 They also which saw it told them by what means he that was possessed of the devil was healed.
- 37 And all the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes, besought him that he would depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he gat him into the ship, and returned back again.
- 38 Then the man out of whom the devils were departed besought him that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away saying:
- 39 Go home again into thine own house, and shew what great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way and preached, throughout all the city what great things Jesus had done unto him.
- 40 And it fortuned, when, Jesus was come again, that the people received him: for they all waited for him.
- 41 And behold there came a man named Jairus (and he was a

Luke 8:42

He whose name is Legion is healed

ruler of the synagogue) and he fell down at Jesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his house:

- 42 For he had but an only daughter, upon twelve years of age and she lay a dying. And as he went the people thronged him.
- 43 And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, (which had spent all her substance among physicians, neither could be helped of any)
- 44 Came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment: and immediately her issue of blood stanched.
- 45 And Jesus said: Who is it that touched me? When every man denied, Peter and they that were with him said: Master, the people thrust thee and vex thee: and sayest thou who touched me?
- 46 And Jesus said: Somebody touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me.
- 47 When the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and fell at his feet and told him, before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.
- 48 And he said unto her: Daughter be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace.
- 49 While he yet spake came one from the ruler of the synagogues [house] said to him: thy daughter is dead dis-ease not the Master
- 50 When Jesus heard that, he answered the father saying: Fear not believe only and she shall be made whole.
- 51 And when he came to the house, he suffered no man to go in with him, save Peter, James, and John, and the father and the mother of the handmaid.
- 52 Everybody wept and sorrowed for her: and he said: Weep not: for she is not dead, but sleepeth.
- 53 And they laughed him to scorn, For they knew that she was dead.
- 54 And he thrust them all out, and caught her by the hand, and

John I have beheaded

Luke 9:11

cried, saying: Maid Arise, and she arose straightway: And he commanded to give her meat

55 And her spirit came again and she rose straight way: and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And the father and the mother of her were astonied: but he warned them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAPTER 9

HEN called he the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and that they might heal diseases.

- 2 And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to cure the sick.
- 3 And he said to them, take nothing to succor you by the way: neither staffs, nor scrip, nor bread, neither money, neither have two coats.
- 4 And whatsoever house ye enter into there abide, and thence depart.
- 5 And whosoever will not, receive you when ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.
- 6 And they went out, and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing everywhere.
- 7 And Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done of him: and doubted, because that it was said of some, that John was risen again from death:
- 8 And of some that Elijah had appeared: and of other, that one of the old prophets was risen again;
- 9 And Herod said: John have I beheaded: who then is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.
- 10 And the apostles, returned, and told him what great things they had done. And he took them, and went aside into a solitary place nigh to a city called Bethsaida.
- 11 And the people, knew of it, and followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need to be healed.

Luke 9:12

Whom say the people that I am

- 12 And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve and said unto him: send the people away that they may go into the towns and villages roundabout, and lodge, and get meat: for we are here in a place of wilderness.
- 13 But he said unto them: Give ye them to eat. And they said. We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people.
- 14 And they were about a five thousand men. And he said to his disciples: Cause them to sit down by fifties in a company.
- 15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.
- 16 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looked up to heaven, and blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the people.
- 17 And they ate, and were all satisfied:and there was taken up of that remained to them twelve baskets full of broken meat.
- 18 And it fortuned as he was alone praying his disciples were with him and he asked them saying: Whom say the people that I am?
- 19 They answered and said: John the Baptist; some say Elias; and some say one of the old prophets is risen again.
- 20 He said unto them: Whom say ye that I am? Peter answered and said: thou art the Christ of God.
- 21 And he warned and commanded them, that they should tell no man that thing;
- 22 Saying: that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be reproved of the elders and of the high priests and scribes, and be slain, and the third day rise again.
- 23 And he said to them all, if any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.
- 24 Whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.
- 25 For what advantangeth, it a man to win the whole world, if he lose himself or run in damage of himself?
- 26 For whosoever is ashamed of me and of my sayings: of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in his own

This is my dear Son hear him

Luke 9:40

glory and in the glory of his Father and of the holy angels.

- 27 And I tell you of a surety there be some of them that standeth here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom ofGod.
- 28 And it followed in about eight days after those sayings, that he took Peter James and John, and went up into a mountain to pray.
- 29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was changed, and his garment was white and shone
- 30 And behold, two men talked with him, and they were Moses and Elijah:
- 31 Which appeared gloriously, and spake of his departing which he should end at Jerusalem.
- 32 Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: and when they awoke they saw his glory, and two men standing with him.
- 33 And it chanced, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus: Master, it is good for us being here: Let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah: and wist not what he said.
- 34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud and shadowed them: and they feared when they were come under the cloud.
- 35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying: this is my dear Son: hear him.
- 36 And as soon as the voice was past, Jesus was found alone. And they kept it close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.
- 37 And it came to pass, on the next day, as they came down from the hill, much people met him.
- 38 And behold, a man of the company cried out saying: Master, I beseech thee, behold, my son: for he is all that I have: 39 And see a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth, and he teareth him that he foameth again, and with much pain departeth from him, when he hath rent him,
- 40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out; and they could

Luke 9:41

This is my dear Son hear him

Not.

- 41 Jesus answered and said: O generation without faith and crooked: how long shall I be with you? and shall suffer you? Bring thy son hither
- 42 As he yet was a coming, the fiend rent him, and tare him. And Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him to his father.
- 43 And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God. While they wondered everyone at all things, which he did, he said unto his disciples:
- 44 Let these sayings sink down into your ears: the time will come when the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.
- 45 But they wist not what that word meant, and that was hid from them that they understood that not: and they feared to ask him of that saying.
- 46 Then there arose a disputation among them: who should be the greatest.
- 47When Jesus percieived the thoughts of their hearts he took a child and set him hard by him
- 48 and said unto them: Whosoever receiveth this child in my name receiveth me: and whosoever receiveth me receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.
- 49 And John answered and said: Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us.
- 50 And Jesus said unto him: Forbid ye him not: for he that is not against us is with us.
- 51 And it followed, when the time was come, that he should be received up, then he set his face to go to Jerusalem,
- 52 And sent messengers before him: And they went, and entered into a city of the Samaritans, to make ready for him.
- 53 But they would not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.

He set his face to go to Jerusalem

Luke 10:6

- 54 When his disciples James and John saw that, they said: Lord, wilt thou that we command that fire come down from heaven and consume them, even as Elijah did
- 55 Jesus turned about, and rebuked them, saying: ye wot not what manner spirit ye are of.
- 56 The Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives but to save them. And they went to another town.
- 57 And it chanced, as he went in the way, a certain man said unto him: I will follow thee whithersoever thou go.
- 58 Jesus said unto him: Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not whereon to lay his head.
- 59 And he said unto another, follow me. And the same said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.
- 60 Jesus said unto him: Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the Kingdom of God.
- 61 And another said: I will follow thee Lord: but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.
- 62 Jesus said unto him: No man that putteth his hand to the plow, and looketh back is apt to the kingdom of God

CHAPTER 10

A FTER these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before him into every city and place, whither he himself would come.

- 2 And he said unto them, the harvest is great: but the laborers are few: Pray therefore the Lord of the harvest, to send forth labourers into his harvest.
- 3 Go your ways: behold I send you forth as lambs among wolves.
- 4 Bear no wallet, neither scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way.
- 5 Into whatsoever house ye enter, first say: Peace be to this house.
- 6 And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon him: if not, it shall turn to you again

Luke 10:7 Foxes have holes and birds of the air have nests

- 7 And in the same house tarry still, eating and drinking such as they have: for the labourer is worthy of his reward. Go not from house to house:
- 8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, if they receive you eat such things as are set before you:
- 9 And heal the sick that are there, and say unto them: the kingdom of God is come nigh upon you.
- 10 But into whatsoever city ye shall enter, if they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say:
- 11 Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we wipe off against you: notwithstanding, mark this, that the kingdom of God was come nigh upon you.
- 12 Yea and I say unto you: that it shall be easier in that day for Sodom, than for that city.
- 13 Woe be to thee, Chorazin: woe be to thee, Bethsaida. For if the miracles had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in hair and ashes.
- 14 Nevertheless it shall be easier for Tyre and Sidon at the Judgment, than for you.
- 15 And thou Capernaum which art exalted to heaven shalt be thrust down to hell.
- 16 He that heareth you heareth me: and he that despiseth you despiseth me: and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me.
- 17 And the seventy returned again with Joy, saying: Lord even the very devils are subdued to us through thy name.
- 18 And he said unto them: I saw Satan as it had been lightning fall down from heaven.
- 19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all manner power of the enemy, and nothing shall hurt you.
- 20 Nevertheless in this rejoice not, that the spirits are under your power: but rejoice because your names are written in heaven.

They had a long while repented

Luke 10:34

- 21 That same time Jesus rejoiced in the spirit, and said: Iconfesses unto thee, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast opened them to the babes: even so Father for so pleased it thee 22 All things are given me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father: neither who the Father is save the Son and he to whom the Son will shew him.
- 23 And he turned to his disciples and said secretly: Happy are the eyes, which see that, which ye see,
- 24 For I tell you that many prophets and kings, have desired to see those things and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.
- 25 And behold a certain lawyer stood up and tempted him saying: Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?
- 26 He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou?
- 27 And he answered and said: Love thy Lord God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thystrength, and with all thy mind, and thy neighbor as thy self.
- 28 And he said unto him: Thou hast answered right: This do and thou shalt live.
- 29 He, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus: and who then is my neighbor?
- 30 Jesus answered and said: A certain man descended from Jerusulem into Jericho and fell into the hands of thieves which robbed him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead.
- 31 And by chance, there came a certain priest that same way, and when he saw, him he passed by.
- 32 And likewise a Levite, when he was come nigh to the place, went and looked on him, and passed by.
- 33 Then a certain Samaritan as he journeyed, came nigh unto him and when he saw him, had compassion on him
- 34 And went to, and bound up his wounds and poured in oil and wine, and put him on his own beast, and brought him to a

Luke 10:35

The model prayer

common inn, and made provision for him.

- 35 And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence and gave them to the host and said unto him, take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more. when I come again, I will recompense thee.
- 36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbor unto him that fell into the thieves hands?
- 37 And he said: he that shewed mercy on him, Then said Jesus unto him, Go and do thou likewise.
- 38 It came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain town: And a certain woman named Martha received him into her house.
- 39 And this woman had a sister called Mary which sat at Jesus'feet, and heard his preaching.
- 40 And Martha was cumbered about much serving, and stood and said: Master dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to minister alone? bid her therefore that she help me.
- 41 And Jesus answered and said unto her: Martha, Martha, thou carest and art troubled about many things:
- 42 verily one is needful: Mary hath chosen her that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAPTER 11

AnD it fortuned as he was praying in a certain place: when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him: Lord, teach s to pray, as John taught his disciples.

- 2 And he said unto them: When ye pray say: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. thy kingdom come. thy will be fulfilled even in earth, as it is in heaven
- 3 Our daily bread give us evermore.
- 4 And forgive us our sin: For even we forgive every man that trespaseth us. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.
- 5 And he said unto them, if any of you should have a friend,

A lesson in hospitality

Luke 11:18

and

should go to him at midnight, and say unto him, friend lend me three loaves

- 6 For a friend of mine is come out of the way to me, and I have nothing to set before him,
- 7 And he within should answer, and say trouble me not. The door is now shut, and my servants are with me in the chamber I cannot rise and give them to thee.
- 8 I say unto you, though he would not arise and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunity he would rise and give him as many as he needeth.
- 9 And I say unto you: ask and it shall be given you seek and ye shall find, knock and it shall be opened unto you.
- 10 For every one that asketh receaveth: and he that seeketh findeth, and to him that knocketh, shall it be opened.
- 11 If the son shall ask bread. of any of you that is a father: will he give him a stone? Or if he ask fish will he for a fish give him a serpent?
- 12 Or if he ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If ye then which are evil, can give good gifts unto your children, how uch more shall the father of heaven give the Holy Spirit to them at desire[it] of him?
- 14 And he was casting out a devil, which was dumb. And it followed when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake and the people wondered.
- 15 But some of them said, he casteth out devils by the power of Beelzebub, the chief of the devils.
- 16 And other tempted him seeking of him a sign from heaven.
- 17 But he knew their thoughts, and said unto them: Every kingdom divided within itself, shall be desolate: and one house shall fall upon another.
- 18 So if Satan be divided within himself, how shall his kingdom endure? Because ye saythat I cast iut devils by the power of Beelzebub.

Luke 11:19

He that is not with me is against me

- 19 If I by the power of Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore shall they be your Judges.
- 20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.
- 21 When a strong man armed, watcheth his house, all that he possesseth is in peace:
- 22 But when a stronger than he cometh upon him, and overcometh him, he taketh from him his harness wherein he trusted, and divideth his goods.
- 23 He that is not with me is against me: and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.
- 24 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man he walketh through waterless places seeking rest; And when he findeth none, he saith: I will return again unto my house whence I came out.
- 25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.
- 26 Then goeth he and taketh to him seven other spirits worse than himself: and they enter in and dwell there: and the end of that man is worse than the beginning.
- 27 And it came to pass as he spake those things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, happy is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which gave thee suck.
- 28 But he said: Yea happy are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.
- 29 When the people were gathered thick together: he began to say, this is an evil nation: they seek a sign and there shall no sign be given them but the sign of Jonah the Prophet.
- 30 For as Jonah was a sign to the Ninevites so shall the Son of man be to this nation.
- 31 The queen of the south shall rise at judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the end of the world to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a

$oldsymbol{A}$ greater thnn[Jonah is here

Luke 11:44

greater than Solomon is here.

- 32 The men of Nineveh shall rise at the Judgment with this generation, and shall condemn them: for they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold a greater than Jonah is here.
- 33 No man lighteth a candle and putteth it in a private, place neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they that come in may see the light. therefore when thine eye is single, then is all thy body full of light.
- 34 But if thine eye be evil: then shall thy body also be full of darkness.
- 35 Take heed therefore that the light, which is in thee, be not darkness.
- 36 For if all thy body shall be light having no part dark: then shall all be full of light, even as when a candle doth light them with his brightness.
- 37 And as he spake a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in and sit down to meat.
- 38 When the Pharisee saw it he marveled that he had not first washed before dinner.
- 39 And the Lord said to him: Now do the Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter; but your inward parts are full of ravening and wickedness.
- 40 Ye fools did not he that made that which is without: make that which is within also?
- 41 Nevertheless give alms of that ye have; and behold, all is clean to you.
- 42 But woe be to you Pharisees, for ye tithe the mint and rue, and all manner herbs, and pass over judgment: and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and yet not to have left the other undone.
- 43 Woe be to you, Pharisees: for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets.
- 44 Woe be to you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: For ye are as graves which appear not and the men that walk over them

Luke 11:45

It shall not be forgiven

are not aware of them.

- 45 Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him: Master, thus saying thou puttest us to rebuke also.
- 46 Then he said: Woe be to you also, ye lawyers: for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the packs with one of your fingers.
- 47 Woe be to you: ye build the sepulchers of the prophets, and your fathers killed them:
- 48 Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they killed them, and ye build their sepulchers.
- 49 Therefore said the wisdom of God. I will send them prophets and apostles, and of them they shall slay and persecute:
- 50 That the blood of all prophets, which was shed from the beginning of the world, may be required of this generation
- 51 From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the alter and the temple: verily I say unto you, it shall be required of this nation.
- 52 Woe be to you, lawyers! for ye have taken away ye key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that came in ye forbade.
- 53 When he thus spake unto them, the lawyers and the Pharisees began to wax busy about him, and to stop his mouth with many questions
- 54 Laying wait for him and seeking to catch something of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him.

CHAPTER 12

A S there gathered together an innumerable multitude of people (in so much that they trod one another,) he began to say unto his disciples: First of all beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.

- 2 For there is nothing covered that shall not be uncovered: nether hid that shall not be known.
- 3 For whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness: that same shall

Be not afraid of them

Luke 12:17

be heard in light and that which ye have spoken in the ear In secret places shall be preached even on the top of the houses

- 4 I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do.
- 5 But I will shew you whom ye shall fear: Fear: him, whichafter he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; Yea I say unto you fear him.
- 6 Are not five sparrows bought for two farthings? and yet not one of them is forgotten of God
- 7 Also even the very hairs of your heads are numbered Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows.
- 8 I say unto you: Whosoever confesseth me before men, even him shall the Son confess also before the angels of God.
- 9 And he that denieth me before men: shall be denied before the angels of God.
- 10 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him, but unto him that blasphemeth the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven.
- 11 When they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto the rulers, and officers, take no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall speak.
- 12 For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.
- 13 One of the company said unto him: Master, bid my brother divide the inheritance with me.
- 14 And he said unto him: Man, who made me a judge or divider
- 15 Wherefore he said unto them, take heed, and beware of covetousness. for no man's life standeth in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.
- 16 And he put forth a similitude unto them saying: The ground of a certain rich man brought forth fruits plenteously:
- 17 And he thought in himself saying: what shall I do? because I

Luke 12:18 Conside the liles

have no room where to bestow my fruits?

- 18 And he said: This will I do. I will destroy my barns and build greater: and therein will I gather all my fruits and my goods:
- 19 And I will say to my soul: Soul, thou hast much goods laid up in store for many years take thine ease: eat drink and be merry.
- 20 But God said unto him, [Thou] fool, this night, will they fetch away thy soul again from thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?
- 21 So is it with him that gathereth riches, and is not rich in God.
- 22 And he spake unto his disciples: Therefore I say unto you: take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, neither for your body, what ye shall put on.
- 23 The life is more than meat and the body is more than raiment.
- 24 Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and yet God feedeth them: how much are ye better than the fouls.
- 25 Which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit?
- 26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least: why take ye thought for the remnant?
- 27 Consider the lilies how they grow: they labor not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you that Solomon in all this royalty was not clothed like to one of these.
- 28 If the grass, which is, today in the field, and tomorrow shall be cast into the furnace, God so clothe: how much more will he clothe you, O ye endued with little faith?
- 29 And ask not what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither climb ye up on high
- 30 for all such things the heathen people of the world seek for. Your Father knoweth that ye have need of such things.

Shall find watching

Luke 12:45

- 31 Wherefore seek ye after the kingeom of God and all these thinges shall be ministred unto you. .
- 32 Fear not little flock for it is your Fathers pleasure to give you a kingdom.
- 33 Sell that ye have, and give alms; And make you bags which wax not old, and treasure that faileth not in heaven, where no thief cometh, neither moth corrupteth.
- 34 For where your treasure is, there will be your hearts also.
- 35 Let your loins be girded about and your lights burning
- 36 And ye yourselves like unto men that watch for their Lord, when he will return from a wedding; that as soon as he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him.
- 37 Happy are those servants, which the Lord when he cometh shall find, watching verily I say unto you, he will gird himself about, and make them sit down to meat and walk by and minister unto them.
- 38 And if he shall come in the second watch, yea if he come in the third watch, and shall find them so, happy are those servants.
- 39 This understand that if the good man of the house knew what hour the thief would come, he would surely have watched: and not suffer his house to be broken up.
- 40 Be ye prepared therefore: for the Son of man will come at an hour when ye think not.
- 41 Then Peter said unto him: Master tellest thou this similitude unto us or to all men?
- 42 And the Lord said: If there be any faithful servant and wise, whom his Lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat at due season:
- 43 Happy is that servant, whom his master when he cometh shall find so doing.
- 44 Of a truth I say unto you: that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.
- 45 But and if the evil servant shall say in his heart: My master

Luke 12:46

Foes will be of their own household

- will defer his coming; and shall begin to smite the servants and handmaids and to eat and drink and to be drunken,
- 46 The Lord of that servant will come in a day when he thinketh not, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will divide him, and will give him his reward with the unbelievers.
- 47 The servant that knew his masters will, and prepared not [himself], neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.
- 48 But he that knew not and yet did commit things worthy of stripes shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whom much is given of him shall be much required and to whom men much commit the more of him will they ask.
- 49 I am come to send fire on earth: and what is my desire but that it were already kindled?
- 50 Notwithstanding I must be baptized with; a baptism: and how am I pained till it be ended?
- 51 Suppose ye that I am come to send peace on earth? I tell you Nay; but rather debate:
- 52 For from hence forth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three.
- 53 The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; The mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.
- 54 Then said he to the people: when ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say: we shall have a shower and so it is.
- 55 And when ye see the south wind blow ye say: we shall have heat and it cometh to pass.
- 56 Hypocrites, ye can skill of the fashion of the earth, and of the sky: but what is the cause that ye cannot skill of this time?
- 57 Yea, and why Judge ye not of your selves what is right?
- 58 While thou goest with thine adversary to the ruler: as thou

Ye all shall likewise perish

Luke 13:11

art in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he bring thee to the Judge and the Judge deliver thee to the jailer and the jailer cast thee into prison.

59 I tell thee, thou departeth not thence, till thou have made good the utmost.

CHAPTER 13

- THERE were present at the same season that shewed him of the, Galileans whose blood Pilate mingled with their own sacrifice.
- 2 And Jesus answered and said unto them, suppose ye that these Galileans were greater sinners than all the other Galileans, because they suffered such punishment?
- 3 I tell you, nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all in likewise perish.
- 4 Or those eighteen, upon which the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwell in Jerusalem?
- 5 I tell you nay: but, except ye repent ye all shall likewise perish.
- ⁶ He put forth this similitude A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.
- 7 Then said he to the dresser of his vineyard: Behold, this three years have I come and sought fruit in this fig tree, and find none: cut it down: why cumbreth it the ground?
- 8 And he answered and said unto him: Lord let it alone this year also, till I dig round about it and dung it to see
- 9 Whether it will bear fruit: and if it bear not then, after that, cut it down.
- 10 And he taught in one of their synagogues on the sabbath day,
- 11 And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years: and was bowed together, and could not lift herself up at all.

Luke 13:12

I mmediately she was made straight

- 12 When Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said to her, woman thou art delivered from thy disease.
- 13 And he laid his hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.
- 14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, (because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day) and said unto the people. There are six days in which men ought to work, in them come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day.
- 15 Then answered him the Lord, and said: hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath day loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him to the water?
- 16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath Bound, lo eighteen years be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?
- 17 And when he said thus, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced on all the excellent deeds that were done by him.
- 8 Then said he: What is the kingdom of God like? or whereunto shall I compare it?
- 19 It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his garden: and it grew, and was a great tree; and the fowls of the air made nests in the branches of it.
- 20 And again he said: whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God?
- 21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three bushels of flour, till all was thoroughly leavened.
- 22 And he went through all manner of cities and towns, teaching, and journeying towards Jerusalem.
- 23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that shall be saved? And he said unto them:
- 24 Strive with yourselves to enter in at the strait gate: for many I say unto you, will seek to enter in and shall not be able
- 25 When the goodman of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, ye shall begin to stand without and to knock at the

A tiny seed grows a great tree

Luke 14:2

door, saying: Lord, Lord, open unto us: and he shall answer and say unto you: I know you not whence ye are:

- 26 Then shall ye begin to say. We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.
- 27 And he shall say: I tell you, I know you not whence ye are: depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.
- 28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves thrust out at doors.
- 29 And they shall come from the East, and from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.
- 30 And behold there are last which shall be first, And there are first which shall be last.
- 31 The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, and said unto him, Get thee out of the way, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.
- 32 And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that fox, behold, I cast out devils, and heal the people today and tomorrow, and the third day I make an end.
- 33 Nevertheless I must walk today, and tomorrow and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish any other where, save at Jerusalem.
- 34 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophet,s and stonest them that are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, as the hen gathereth her chicks under her wings, but ye would not.
- 35 Behold your habitation shall be left unto you desolate, for I tell you, ye shall not see me, until the time come that ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord

CHAPTER 14

A ND it chanced, that he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on a sabbath day: and they watched him

2 And behold, there was a man before him, which had the

Luke 14:3

A lesson in Humility

dropsy.

- 3 And Jesus answered and spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees saying: is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day?
- 4 And they held their peace. And he took him and healed him and let him go:
- 5 And answered them saying which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath day?
- 6 And they could not answer him again to that.
- 7 He put forth a similitude to the guests when he marked how they pressed to the highest rooms and said unto them,
- 8 When thou art of any man, bidden, to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honorable man than thou be bidden of him;
- 9 And he that bade both thee and him, come and say to thee: give this man room; and thou then begin with shame to take the lowest room.
- 10 But rather when thou art bidden, go and sit in the lowest room, that when he that bade thee cometh he may say unto thee: friend, sit up higher, then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.
- 11 For whosoever exalteth himself shall be brought low; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted
- 12 Then said he also to him that had desired him to dinner: When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends nor thy brethren neither thy kinsmen nor yet rich neighbors lest they bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee.
- 13 But when thou makest a feast, call the Poor, the maimed, the lame, and the blind.
- 14 And thou shalt be happy; for they cannot recompense thee, but thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.
- 15 When one of them that sat at meat also heard that, he said unto him: happy is he that eateth bread in the kingdom of God.

Go out into the highways and hedges

Luke 14:29

- 16 Then said he to him. A certain man ordained a great supper, and bade many,
- 17 And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden come, for all things are now ready.
- 18 And they all at once began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a farm, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused.
- 19 And another said: I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused.
- 20 The third said: I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.
- 21 And the servant went and brought his master word thereof. Then was the good man of the house displeased and said to his servant: Go out quickly into the streets and quarters of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.
- 22 And the servant said: Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.
- 23 And the Lord said to the servant: Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in that my house may be filled.
- 24 For I say unto you, that none of those men, which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.
- 25 There went a great company with him and he turned and said unto them
- 26 If a man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children and brethren and sisters more over and his own life, he cannot be my disciple.
- 27 And whosoever bare not his cross, and come after me cannot be my disciple.
- 28 Which of you, disposed to build a tower, sitteth not down before, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to perform it?
- 29 Lest after, he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to

Luke 15:30

Joy shall be in heaven

perform it, all that behold it begin to mock him,

- 30 saying: this man began to build and was not able to make an end.
- 31 Or what king, goeth to make battle against another king, and sitteth not down first, and casteth in his mind whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand.
- 32 Or else while the other is yet a great way off he will send an ambassador, and desire peace.
- 33 So likewise, none of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, can be my disciple.
- 34 Salt is good: but if salt have lose her saltiness, what shall be seasoned there with?
- 35 It is neither good for the land, nor yet for the dung hill: but men cast it out [at the doors]. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

CHAPTER 15

- THEN resorted unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him.
- 2 And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying: He received to his company sinners and eateth with them.
- 3 Then put he forth this similitude to them, saying:
- 4 What man of you having an hundred sheep if he lose one of them, doth not leave ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost until he find him?
- 5 And when he hath found him he, he putteth him on his shoulders, with Joy:
- 6 And as soon as he cometh home, he calleth together his lovers and neighbors, saying unto them: Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep, which was lost.
- 7 I say unto you that likewise Joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

The prodigal son

Luke 15:20

- 8 Either what woman having ten²¹ groats that if she loose one doth not light a candle and sweep the house and seek diligently till she find it?
- 9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her ²²lovers and her neighbors saying: Rejoice with me; for I have found the groat which I had lost.
- 10 Likewise I say unto you, Joy is made in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.
- 11 And he said: a certain man had two sons
- 12 And the younger of them said to his father: Father, give me my part of the goods that belongeth to me. And he divided unto them his substance.
- 13 And not long after the younger son gathered all that he had together, and took his Journey into a far country, and there he wasted his goods with riotous living.
- 14 And when he had spent all that he had there rose a great dearth throughout all that land; and he began to lack.
- 15 And he went and clave to a citizen of that same country; which sent him to his field to keep his swine.
- 16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the cobs that the swine ate: and no man gave unto him.
- 17 Then he came to himself, and said, how many hired servants of my father have bread enough and to spare, and I die for hunger.
- 18 I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him: father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,
- 19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.
- 20 And he arose and went to his father. And when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him and had compassion, and ran and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

²¹ groat a silver piece valued at four pence

2

lovers those with whom she shares a mutual love

Luke 16:21

All that I have is thine

- 21 And the son said unto him: father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.
- 22 But his father said to his servants: bring forth the best garment, and put it on him and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet.
- 23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill him, and let us eat, and be merry:
- 24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is now found. And they began to be merry.
- 25 The elder brother was in the field: and when he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing
- 26 And called one of his servants, and asked what those things meant.
- 27 And he said unto him: thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.
- 28 And he was angry and would not go in: then came his father out, and entreated him.
- 29 He answered and said to his father: Lo, these many years have I done thee service, neither brake at any time thy commandment: and yet gavest thou me never so much as a kid, to make merry with my friends:
- 30 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy goods with harlots; thou hast for his pleasure killed the fatted calf.
- 31 And he said unto him: son thou wast ever with me, and all that I have is thine:
- 32 It was meet that we should make merry and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found

CHAPTER 16

And the said also unto his disciples. There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; that was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods.

No sevant can serve two masters

Luke 16:15

- 2 And he called him and said unto him: How is it that I hear this of thee? Give acount of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.
- 3 The steward said within himself: what shall I do? for my master will take away from me the stewardship. I canot dig and to beg I am ashamed.
- 4 I wot not what to do, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.
- 5 Then called he all his masters debtors and said unto the first: how much owest thou unto my master?
- 6 And he said: an hundred tons of oil. And he said to him: take thy bill and sit down quickly and write fifty.
- 7 Then said he to another: what owest thou? And he said: an hundred quarters of wheat and he said to him: Take thy bill write four score of wheat.
- 8 And the Lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their kind wiser than the children of light.
- 9 And I say also unto you: make you friends of the wicked mammon, that when ye shall depart, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.
- 10 He that is faithful in that which is least the same is faithful in much: and he that is unfaithful in the least: is unfaithful also in much.
- 11 So then if ye have not been faithful in the wicked mammon? who will believe you in that which is true?
- 12 And if ye have not been faithful in another man's business: who shall give you your own?
- 13 No servant can serve two masters: for either he shall hate the one, and love the other; or else he shall lean to the one; and Despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mamon
- 14 All these things heard the Pharisees also: which were covetous, and they mocked him.
- 15 And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify your selves before men, but God knoweth your hearts, for that

Luke 16:16

Therich man and Lazarus

which is highly esteemed among men is abominable in the sight of God

- 16 The law and the Prophets reigned until the time of John: and since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man striveth to go in.
- 17 Sooner shall heaven and earth perish, than one tittle of the law shall perish.
- 18 Whosoever forsaketh his wife, and marrieth another, breaketh matrimony. and every man which marrieth her that is divorced from her husband committeth adultery also.
- 19 There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine 23 biss, and fared deliciously every day:
- 20 And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which lay at his gate, full of sores,
- 21 desiring to be refreshed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's board moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.
- 22 And that came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom, the rich man also died, and was buried;
- 23 And being in hell in torments, he lifted up his eyes and saw Abraham a far off, and Lazarus in his bosom
- 24 And he cried and said: father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame.
- 25 But Abraham said, unto him, son, remember that thou in thy life time receivedst thy pleasure and contrary wise Lazarus pain: now therefore is he comforted, and thou art punished.
- 26 Beyond all this, between you and us there is a great space set: so that they which would go from thence to you cannot, neither may come from thence to us.
- 27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father send him to my

_

²³ Riss that is linen

Lord increase our faith

Luke 17:8

father's house

- 28 For I have five brethren: for to warn them, lest they also come into this place of torment.
- 29 Abraham said unto him, they have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them.
- 30 Nay, father Abraham but if one came unto them from the dead they would repent.
- 31 He said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they believe though one rose from death again.

CHAPTER 17

- HEN said he to the disciples it cannot be avoided but that Offences will come. nevertheless woe be to him through whom they come.
- 2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged around his neck, and that he were cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones
- 3 Take heed to your selves: If thy brother trespass against thee rebuke him:
- 4 And if he repent, forgive him. And though he sin against thee seven. times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee saying: it repenteth me; forgive him
- 5 And the apostles said unto the Lord: increase our faith.
- 6 And the Lord said: if ye had faith like a grain of mustard seed, and should say unto this Sycamine tree, pluck thyself up by the roots, and plant thyself in the sea: he should obey you.
- 7 Who is it of you, if he had a servant plowing or feeding cattle, that would say unto him when he came from the field, Go quickly and sit down to meat:
- 8 And would not rather say to him dress wherewith I may sup, and gird up thyself and serve me till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward eat thou and drink thou?

Luke 17:9

Where are those nine

- 9 Doth he thank that servant because he did that which was commanded unto him? I trow not.
- 10 So likewise ye when ye have done all those things which are commanded you, say, we are unprofitable servants. We have done that which was our duty to do.
- 11 And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through Samaria and Galilee.
- 12 And as he entered into a certain town, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off,
- 13 And put forth their voices, and said: Jesus, master, have mercy on us.
- 14 When he saw them he said unto them, Go and shew your selves to the priests. and it came to pass as they went they were cleansed.
- 15 And one of them, when he saw that he was cleansed, turned back again, and with a loud voice praised God
- 16 And fell down on his face at his feet, and gave him thanks: And the same was a Samaritan.
- 17 And Jesus answered and said: are there not ²⁴ten cleansed? but where are those nine?
- 18 There are not found that returned again to give praise to God, save only this stranger.
- 19 Arise and go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole
- 20 When he was demanded of the Pharisees when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with waiting for:
- 21 Neither shall men say, Look here look there, for behold the kingdom of God is within you.
- 22 And he said unto the disciples: The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one day of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.

_

²⁴ Ten cleansed Yet only one made whole

Remember Lot's wife

Luke 17:36

- 23 And they shall say to you: See here, see there: go not after them, nor follow them
- 24 For as the ²⁵lightning, that appeareth out of the one part of the heaven, and shineth unto the other part of heaven: so shall the Son of man be in his day.
- 25 But first must be suffer many things, and be refused of this nation.
- 26 As it came to pass in the time of Noah: so shall it be in the time of the Son of man.
- 27 They ate, they drank, they married wives, and were married even unto that same day that Noah went into the ark: and the flood came, and destroyed them all.
- 28 Likewise also as it came to pass in the days of Lot; they ate they drank they bought, they sold, they planted, they built;
- 29 And even the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all.
- 30 After these examples, shall it be in the day when the Son of man shall appear.
- 31 At that day he that is on the housetop, and his stuff in the house: let him not come down to take it out: And likewise let not him that is in the field, turn back again to that he left behind.
- 32 Remember Lot's wife.
- 33 Whosoever will go about to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall save it.
- 34 I tell you: In that night there shall be two in one bed, the one shall be received, and the other shall be forsaken.
- 35 Two shall be also a grinding together: the one shall be received, and the other forsaken.
- 36 Two men shall be in the field:the one shall be received and the other forsaken.

-

²⁵ Lightning As the sun rises in the east

Luke 17:37

Yet lackest one thing

37 And they answered and said to him: where Lord? And he Said unto them whereoever the body shall be thither will eagles resort.

CHAPTER 18

A ND he put forth a similitude unto them signifying that men ought always to pray and not to be weary.

- 2 Saying: There was a Judge in a certain city, which feared not God neither regarded man.
- 3 And there was a certain widow in the same city, which came unto him saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.
- 4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he said unto himself: though I fear not God, nor care for man;
- 5 Yet because this widow troubleth me I will avenge her, lest at last she come and hag on me.
- 6 And the Lord said: Hear what the unjust judge saith
- 7 And shall not God avenge his elect, which cry day and night unto him, yea though he defer them?
- 8 I tell you he will avenge them and that quickly. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, suppose ye, that he shall find faith on the earth?
- 9 And he put forth this similitude unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were ²⁶perfect, and despised others.
- 10 Two men went up into the temple to pray: the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.
- 11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself. God I thank thee that I am not as other men are extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or as this publican.
- 12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithe of all that I possess.
- 13 And the publican stood afar off, and would not lift up his eyes to heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying God be merciful to me a sinner.

-

²⁶ Take heed not to be high minded

Impossible to men yet possible to God

Luke 18:28

- 14 I tell you: this man departed home to his house justified more than the other: for every man that exalteth himself shall be brought low: and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted
- 15 They brought unto him also babies, that he should touch them. when his disciples saw that, they rebuked them.
- 16 But Jesus called them unto him, and said: Suffer children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.
- 17 Verily I say unto you whosoever receiveth not the kingdom of God as a child: he shall not enter therein.
- 18 And a certain ruler asked him saying, good Master: what ought I to do to obtain eternal life?
- 19 Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? no man is good save God only.
- 20 Thou knowest the commandments: Thou shalt not commit adultery: thou shalt not kill: thou shalt not steal: thou shalt not bare false witness: Honour thy father and thy mother,
- 21 And he said: all these have I kept from my youth.
- 22 When Jesus heard that he said unto him: Yet lackest thou one thing, sell all that thou hast and distribute it onto the poor and thou shalt have treasure in heaven and come and follow me.
- 23 When he heard that he was heavy: for he was very rich
- 24 When Jesus saw him mourn he said: with what difficulty shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God:
- 25 it is easier for a camel to go thorough a needles eye than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.
- 26 Then said they that heard that: And who shall then be saved?
- 27 And he said: Things which are impossible with men are possible with God.
- 28 Then Peter said: Lo we have left all and have followed thee.

Luke 18:29

That I may receive my sight

- 29 And he said unto them: Verily I say unto you there is no man that leaveth house either father and mother either brethren or wife or children for the kingdom of God's sake
- 30 Which same shall not receive much more in this world: and in the world to come life everlasting.
- 31 He took unto him twelve and said unto them. Behold we go up to Jerusalem and all shall be fulfilled that are written by the Prophets of the Son of man.
- 32 He shall be delivered unto the Gentiles and shall be mocked and shall be despitefully entreated and shall be spitted on:
- 33 and when they have scourged him they will put him to death and the third day he shall arise again.
- 34 But they understood none of these things. And this saying was hid from them. And they perceived not the things which were spoken.
- 35 And it came to pass as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man sit by the way side begging.
- 36 And when he heard the people pass by he asked what it meant
- 37 And they said unto him, that Jesus of Nazareth passed by.
- 38 And he cried saying: Jesus thou son of David have thou mercy on me.
- 39 And they which went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, thou son of David have mercy on me.
- 40 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near he asked him
- 41 Saying: What wilt thou that I do unto thee? And he said: Lord, that I may receive my sight.
- 42 Jesus said unto him: receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee.
- 43 And immediately he saw, and followed him, lauding God

Seek and save that which was lost

Luke 19:14

and all the people when they saw it they gave ²⁷laud to God CHAPTER 19

And behold there was a man named Zacchaeus, which was a ruler among the Publicans, and was rich also.

- 3 And he made means to see Jesus what he should be: and could not for the press, because he was of a low stature.
- 4 Wherefore, he ran before, and ascended up into a wild fig tree to see him: for he should come that same way
- 5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up and saw him and said unto him: Zacchaeus at once come down, for today I must abide at thy house.
- 6 And he came down hastily, and received him joyfully.
- 7 And when they saw that, they all grudged, saying: he is gone in to tarry with a man that is a sinner.
- 8 And Zacchaeus stood forth and said unto the Lord: behold, Lord half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have done any man wrong I will restore him four fold.
- 9 And Jesus said to him: this day is health come unto this house, for as much as it also is become the child of Abraham.
- 10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was ²⁸lost.
- 11 As they heard these things he added there to a similitude, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because also they thought that the kingdom of God, should shortly appear.
- 12 He said therefore: a certain noble man went into a far country to receive him a kingdom, and then to come again.
- 13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, saying unto them: buy and sell till I come.
- 14 But his citizens hated him and sent messengers after him,

-

²⁷ Laud that is to give praise

²⁸ Lost That is his redeemed but yet unsaved, the other sheep of Jn.10:16

Luke 19:15

Of thine own mouth I judge thee

saying: We will not have this man to reign over us.

- 15 And it came to pass, when he was come again and had received his kingdom, he commanded these servants to be called unto him (to whom he gave his money) to know what every man had done
- 16 Then came the first saying: Lord, thy pound hath increased ten pounds.
- 17 And he said unto him: Well good servant because thou wast faithful in a very little thing, take thou authority over ten cities.
- 18 And the other came saying: Lord, thy pound hath increased five pounds.
- 19 And to the same he said: and be thou also ruler over five cities.
- 20 And the third came and said: Lord, here is thy pound which I have kept in a napkin,
- 21 For I feared thee because thou art a strait man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.
- 22 And he said unto him, Of thine own mouth Judge I thee, thou evil servant. knewest thou that I am a strait man, reaping that I did not sow?
- 23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank. that at my coming I might have required my own with vantage?
- 24 And he said to them that stood by: take from him that pound and give it him that hath ten pounds.
- 25 And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.
- 26 I say unto you, that unto all them that have, it shall be given: and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken from him.
- 27 Moreover, those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

TheLord hath need of him

Luke 19:42

- 28 And when he had thus spoken, he went forth before, ascending up to Jerusalem.
- 29 And it fortuned, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, besides Mount Olivet he sent two of his disciples
- 30 Saying: Go ye into the town which is over against you; in the which as soon as ye are come ye shall find a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat: Loose him and bring him hither.
- 31 And if any man ask you why that ye loose him? thus say unto him, the Lord hath need of him.
- 32 They that were sent went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.
- 33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners said unto them, why loose ye the colt?
- 34 And they said, for the Lord hath need of him.
- 35 And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their raiment on the colt and set Jesus thereon.
- 36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.
- 37 And when he was now come where he should go down from the Mount Olivet, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and to laud God with a loud voice for all the miracles that they had seen;
- 38 Saying: Blessed be the king that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.
- 39 And some of the Pharisees of the company said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.
- 40 He answered and said unto them, I tell you if these should hold their peace, the stones would cry out.
- 41 And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,
- 42 Saying: If thou hadst known those things that belong unto thy peace, even at this thy time, but now are they hid from thine eyes.

Luke 19:43

My house ist he house of prayer

- 43 For the days shall come upon thee, that thy enemies shall cast a bank about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side
- 44 And make thee even with the ground, with thy children which are in thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.
- 45 And he went in to the temple, and begane to cast out them that sold therin, and them that bought
- 46 Saying unto them, that it is written: my house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves.
- 47 And he taught daily in the temple. The high Priests and the Scribes and the chief of the people went about to destroy him:
- 48 but could not find what to do: for all the people stuck by him and gave him audience

CHAPTER 20

A ND it fortuned in one of those days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel: the high priests and the scribes came with the elders,

- 2 And spake unto him, saying. Tell us, by ²⁹what authority doest thou these things? or, who is he that gave thee this authority?
- 3 He answered and said unto them: I also will ask you a question and answer me
- 4 The baptism of John, was it from heaven or of men?
- 5 And they thought within themselves saying: if we shall say, from heaven: he will say: why then believed ye him not?
- 6 But and if we shall say, of men, all the people will stone us: for they be persuaded that John is a prophet.
- 7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence it was.

-

²⁹ False religeonists should ask themselves this question

The murderous tenants

Luke 20:19

- 8 And Jesus said unto them: neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.
- 9 Then began he to put forth to the people this similitude; A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to farmers, and went himself into a strange country for a great season.
- 10 And when the time was come he sent a servant to his tenants, that they should give him of the fruits of the vineyard: and the tenants did beat him, and sent him away empty.
- 11 And again he sent yet another servant: and they did beat him and foul entreated him also, and sent him away empty
- 12 Moreover he sent the third too and him they wounded, and cast out.
- 13 Then said the Lord of the vineyard what shall I do? I will send my dear son him peradventure they will reverence when they see him.
- 14 But when the farmers saw him, they thought in themselves, saying: this is the heir: come; let us kill him that the inheritance may be ours.
- 15 And they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. Now what shall the Lord of the vineyard do unto them?
- 16 He will come and destroy those farmers and will let out his vineyard to others. And when they heard that they said, God forbid.
- 17 And he beheld them, and said: what meaneth this then that is written: The stone that the builders refused, the same is made the head cornerstone?
- 18 Whosoever stumble at that stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it fall upon, it will grind him to powder.
- 19 And the high Priests and the Scribes the same hour went about to lay hands on him; but feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this similitude against them.

Luke 20:20

Why tempt ye me

- 20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves perfect, to take him in his words, and to deliver him unto the power and authority of the deputy.
- 21 And they asked him, saying: Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest right, neither considererst thou any mans degree, but teachest the way of God truly:
- 22 Is it lawful for us to give Caesar tribute or no?
- 23 He perceived their craftiness, and said unto them: why tempt ye me?
- 24 Shew me a penny. whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said: Caesars.
- 25 And he said unto them: give then unto Caesar that which belongeth unto Caesar: and to God that which pertaineth to God.
- 26 And they could not reprove his saying before the people: but they marveled at his answer and held their peace.
- 27 Then came to him certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any resurrection; And they asked him
- 28 Saying: Master, Moses wrote unto us if any man's brother die, having a wife, and the same die without issue: that then his brother should take his wife and raise up seed unto his brother
- 29 There were seven brethren: and the first took a wife and died without children.
- 30 And the second took the wife, and he died childless.
- 31 And the third took her and in likewise the residue of the seven, and left no children behind them and died.
- 32 Last of all the woman died also.
- 33 Now at the resurrection whose wife of them shall she be? for seven had her to wife.
- 34 Jesus answered and said unto them. The children of this world marry wives, and are married,
- 35 But they which shall be made worthy to enjoy that world,

Thou hast well said

Luke 21:3

and the resurrection from death, neither marry wives, neither are married,

- 36 Nor yet can die any more: for they are equal unto the angels: and are the sons of God, in as much as they are the children of the resurrection.
- 37 And that the dead shall rise again, even Moses signified besides the bush when he said of the Lord God of Abraham, and the God of: Isaac, and the God of Jacob.
- 38 For he is not the God of the dead, but of them which live. for all live in him.
- 39 Then certain of the Pharisees answered and said: Master, thou hast well said.
- 40 And after that durst they not ask him any question at all.
- 41 Then said he unto them, How say they that Christ is David's son?
- 42 And David himself saith in the book of the Psalms: The Lord said unto my Lord, sit on my right hand,
- 43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.
- 44 Seeing David calleth him Lord: how is he then his son.
- 45 Then in the audience of all the people he said unto his disciples,
- 46 Beware of the Scribes which desire to go in long clothing: and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues and chief rooms at feasts;
- 47 Which devour widows houses, and that under a cover of long praying: the same shall receive greater damnation.

CHAPTER 21

A S he beheld, he saw the rich men, how they cast in their offerings into the treasury.

- 2 And he saw also a certain poor widow, which cast in thither two mites.
- 3 And he said: of a truth I say unto you this poor widow hath put in more than they all:

Luke 21:4

Troublous times are ahead

- 4 For they all have of their superfluity added unto the offering of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the substance that she had.
- 5 As some spake of the temple, how it was garnished with goodly stones and Jewels, he said.
- 6 The days will come, when of these things which ye see, shall not be left stone upon stone that shall not be thrown down.
- 7 And they asked him, saying: Master, when shall these things be? and what sign will there be when such things shall come to pass?
- 8 And he said. Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many will come in my name, saying: I am he: and the time draweth near: follow ye not them therefore.
- 9 But when ye hear of war and of dissension: be not afraid. for these things must first come: but the end followeth not by and by.
- 10 Then said he unto them: Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom:
- 11 And great earthquakes shall be in all quarters, and hunger, and pestilence: and fearful things and great signs shall there be from heaven.
- 12 But before all these they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prison, and bring you before kings and rulers for my names sake.
- 13 And this shall it come to pass for a testimonial. of you,
- 14 Let it stick therefore fast in your hearts, not once to study before what ye shall answer:
- 15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, where against all your adversaries shall not be able to speak nor resist.
- 16 Yea, and ye shall be betrayed of your father, and mother, and of your brethren, and kinsman, and friends, and some of and some ofyou shall they put to death

Kingdom of God is nigh at hand

Luke 21:32

- 17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake.
- 18 Yet there shall not one hair of your heads perish.
- 19 With your patience possess your souls.
- 20 And when ye see Jerusalem besieged with an host, then understand that the desolation of the same is nigh.
- 21 Then let them which are in Jewry flee to the mountains, and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in other countries enter therein.
- 22 For these be the days of vengeance, to fulfill all that are written.
- 23 But woe be to them that be with child, for there shall be great trouble in the land, and wrath over all this people.
- 24 And they shall fall on the edge of the sword, and shall be led captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden under foot
- 25 And there shall be signs in the sun and in the moon and in the stars: and in the earth, the people shall be in such perplexity that they shall not tell which way to turn themselves the sea and the waters shall roar after those things which shall come on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall move.
- 26 And men's hearts shall fail them for fear, and for Looking after thoose things which shall come on the earth.,for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.
- 27 And then shall they see the Son of man, coming in power and great glory.
- 28 When these things begin to come to pass: then look up and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.
- 29 And he shewd them, a similitude: Behold the fig tree, and all other trees;
- 30 When they shoot forth, their buds ye see and know of your ownselves that summer is then nigh at hand.
- 31 So likewise ye, (when ye see these come to pass) understand the kingdom of God is nigh fulfilled.
- 32 Verely I say unto you: this generation shall not pass till all

Luke 21:33

Then entered Satin into Judas

be fulfilled

- 33 Heaven and earth shall pass: but my words shall not pass.
- 34 Take heed to yourselves, lest your hearts be overcome with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this world, and that that day come on you unawares.
- 35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that sit on the face of the earth.
- 36 Watch therefore, continually and pray, that ye may obtain grace to flee all this that shall come, and that ye may stand before the Son of man.
- 37 In the day time he taught in Temple; and at night he went out and had abiding in the Mount Olivet.
- 38 And all the people came in the morning to him in the temple for to hear, him.

CHAPTER 22

- THE feast of sweet, bread drew nigh which is called passover.
- 2 And the high priests and Scribes sought how to kill him: but they feared the people.
- 3 Then entered Satan into Judas whose surname was Iscariot, (which was of the number of the twelve.)
- 4 And he went his way, and communed with the high Priests and officers, how he might betray him to them.
- 5 And they were glad: and promised to give him money.
- 6 And he consented, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them when the people were away.
- 7 Then came the day of sweet bread, when of necessity the passover lamb must be killed
- 8 And he sent Peter and John, saying: Go and prepare us the passover lamb that we may eat.
- 9 They said to him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?
- 10 And he said unto them, Behold when ye be entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; him follow into the same house that he entereth in,

Things written of me hve an end

Luke 22:25

- 11 And say unto the goodman of the house, the master saith unto thee: Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat mine passover lamb with my disciples?
- 12 And he shall shew you a great parlor paved: There make ready.
- 13 And they went and found as he had said unto them: and made ready the passover lamb.
- 14 And when the hour was come, he sat down and the twelve apostles with him.
- 15 And he said unto them: I have inwardly desired to eat this passover lamb with you before that I suffer:
- 16 For I say unto you: henceforth I will not eat of it, any more, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.
- 17 And he took the cup and gave thanks, and said, Take this and divide it among you.
- 18 For I say unto you: I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God be come.
- 19 And he took bread, gave thanks, and gave to them, saying: This is my body, which is given for you: this do in the remembrance of me.
- 20 Likewise also when they had supped, he took the cup saying: This cup is the new testament in my blood which shall be shed for you
- 21 Yet, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table.
- 22 And the Son of man goeth, as it is appointed: but woe be to that man by whom he is betrayed.
- 23 And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it should be that should do that.
- 24 And there was a strife among them, which of them, should be taken for the greatest.
- 25 And he said unto them: the kings of the Gentiles reign over them; and they that bare rule over them are called gracious Lords.

Luke 22:26

Christ betrayed by a kiss

- 26 But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you shall be as the younger: and he that is chief, shall be as the minister
- 27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat: or he that . serveth? Is not he that sitteth at meat? and I am among you as he that ministereth.
- 28 Ye are they, which have bidden with me in my temptations.
- 29 And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;
- 30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on seats and judge the twelve tribes of Israel.
- 31 And the Lord said: Simon, Simon behold, Satan hath desired you to sift you, as it were wheat,
- 32 But I have prayed for thee: that thy faith fail not, and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.
- 33 And he said unto him. Lord, I am ready to go with thee, into prison and to death.
- 34 And he said: I tell thee, Peter the cock shall not crow this day, till thou have thrice denied that thou knowest me.
- 35 And he said unto them, when I sent you without wallet, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye anything? And they said no.
- 36 And he said to them, but now, he that hath a wallet, let him take it up, and likewise his scrip. and he that hath no sword, let him sell his coat and buy one.
- 37 For I say unto you, that this, which is written, must be performed in me: even with the wicked was he numbered, for those things written of me have an end
- 38 And they said: Lord, behold here are two swords. And he said unto them, it is enough.
- 39 And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to Mount Olivet; and the disciples followed him.
- 40 And when he came to the place, he said to them: pray lest ye fall into temptation
- 41 And he gat himself from them about a stone's cast and

If I shall tell you ye will not believe

Luke 22:56

kneeled down and prayed,

- 42 Saying: Father if thou wilt, withdraw this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine be fulfilled.
- 43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven comforting him
- 44 And he was in an agony and prayed somewhat longer: and his sweat was like drops of blood trickling down to the ground.
- 45 And he rose up from prayer, and came to his disciples, and found them sleeping for sorrow,
- 46 and said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye fall into temptation.
- 47 While he yet spake: behold, there came a company, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and pressed nigh unto Jesus to kiss him.
- 48 And Jesus said unto him, Judas betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?
- 49 When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with sword.
- 50 And one of them smote a servant of the highest priest of all, and smote off his right ear.
- 51 And Jesus answered and said: Suffer ye thus far forth, And he touched his ear, and healed him.
- 52 Then Jesus said unti the high priest and rulers of the temple and the elders, which were come to him, be ye come out, as unto a thief, with swords and staves?
- 53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is even your very hour, and the power of darkness
- 54 Then took they him, and led him, and brought him to the high priests house. and Peter followed afar off
- 55 When they had kindled a fire in the midst of the palace, and were set down together, Peter also sat down among them.
- 56 And one of the wenches beheld him as he sat by the fire, and set good eyesight on him, and said: this same was also with

Luke 22:57 Thou sayest it

him.

- 57 Then he denied him, saying: woman, I know him not
- 58 And after a little while another saw him and said: thou art also of them. And Peter said, man, I am not.
- 59 And about the space of an hour after another affirmed, saying: verily, even this fellow was with him: for he is of Galilee
- 60 and Peter said: man, I wot not what thou sayest. And immediately while he yet spake, the cock crew.
- 61 And the Lord turned back, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the words of the Lord how he said unto him, before the cockcrow, thou shalt deny me thrice.
- 62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.
- 63 And the men that stood about Jesus mocked him, and smote him
- 64 And blindfolded him and smote his face, and asked him, saying: prophecy, who it is that smote thee?
- 65 And many other things despitefully said they against him.
- 66 And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people and the high priests and scribes came together and led him into their council saying:
- 67 Art thou very Christ? Tell us. And he said unto them: if I shall tell you ye will not believe
- 68 And if also I ask you, ye will not answer me, or let me go.
- 69 Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.
- 70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? He said to them, ye say that I am.
- 71 Then said they, what need we any further witness? We ourselves have heard of his own mouth.

CHAPTER 23

A ND the whole multitude of them arose and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him saying, We have found this

Bewailed and lamented him

Luke 23:16

fellow perverting the people and forbidding to pay tribute to Caesar: saying that he is Christ a king.

- 3 And Pilate opposed him saying: art thou the king of the Jews? He answered him and said: Thou sayest it.
- 4 Then said Pilate to the high priests and to the people: I find no fault in this man.
- 5 And they were the more fiercer, saying, he moveth the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, and began at Galilee even even to this place.
- 6 When Pilate heard mention of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. he sent him to Herod which was also at Jerusalem in those days.
- 8 And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceedingly glad. For he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him; and trusted to have seen some miracles done by him.
- 9 Then questioned he with him of many things; But he answered him not one word
- 10 The high priests and scribes stood forth and accused him straightly.
- 11 And Herod with his men of war despised, him and mocked him, and arrayed him in white, and sent him again to Pilate.
- 12 And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were at variance.
- 13 And Pilate, called together the high priests and the rulers and the people,
- 14 And said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me as one that perverted the people: and, behold, I have examined him before you, and have found no fault in this man of those things whereof ye accuse him.
- 15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.
- 16 I will therefore chasten him, and let him loose.

Luke 23:17

here they crucified him

- 17 For of necessity he must have let one loose unto them at that feast.
- 18 And all the people cried at once, saying: away with him, and deliver to us Barabbas:
- 19 Which for insurrection made in the city, and murder, was cast into prison.
- 20 Pilate willing, to let Jesus loose, spake again to them,
- 21 And they cried, saying, crucify him, crucify him.
- 22 He said unto them the third time, What evil hath he done? I find no cause of death in him, I will therefore chasten him, and let him loose
- 23 And they cried with loud voice, and requiring that he might be crucified. and the voices of them and of the high priests prevailed.
- 24 And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required.
- 25 And let loose unto them him that for insurrection and murder was cast into prison, whom they desired: and delivered Jesus to do with him what they would.
- 26 And as they led him away they caught one Simon of Cyrenius coming out of the field: and on him laid they the cross, to bear it after Jesus.
- 27 And there followed him a great company of people and of women, which women bewailed and lamented him.
- 28 But Jesus turned back unto them and said: Daughters of Jerusalem weep not for me: but weep for your selves, and for your children.
- 29 For behold, the days will come when men shall say: happy are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.
- 30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, fall on us: and to the hills, cover us.
- 31 For if they do this to a green tree, what shall be done to the dry?
- 32 And there were two evildoers, led with him to be slain.

But their eyes were holden

Luke 23:48

- 33 And when they were come to the place, which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the evildoers, one on right hand, and the other on the left.
- 34 Then said Jesus: Father forgive them for they wot not what they do. And they parted his raiment and cast lots.
- 35 And the people stood and beheld. And the rulers with them also mocked him, saying he: holpen other men, let him help himself if he be Christ, the chosen of God.
- 36 The soldiers also mocked him, and came and gave him vinegar,
- 37 And said: if thou be that king of the Jews save thyself.
- 38 And his superscription was written over him in Greek, in Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS
- 39 And one of the evil doers which were hanged railed on him saying if thou be Christ save thyself and us.
- 40 The other answered, and rebuked him, saying, neither fearest thou God, because thou art in the same damnation?
- 41 We are righteously, punished for we receive according to our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.
- 42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.
- 43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.
- 44 And it was about the sixth hour, and there came a darkness over all the land until the ninth hour.
- 45 And the sun was darkened. and the veil of the temple did rent even through the midst.
- 46 And Jesus cried with a great voice and said Father into thy hands I commend my spirit: and when he thus had said he gave up the ghost.
- 47 When the Centurion saw what had come to pass he glorified God saying: Of a surety this man was perfect.
- 48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done: smote their breasts, and

Luke 23:49

Did not hearts burn our within us

returned home.

- 49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood a far off, beholding these things.
- 50 And behold there was a man named Joseph a counseillor; and was a good man and a just:
- 51 And did not consent to the council and deed of them, which was of Arimathaea a city of the Jews: which same also waited for the kingdom of God:
- 52 He went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.
- 53 And took it down, and wrapped it in a linen cloth, and laid it in an hewn tomb wherein was never man before laid.
- 54 And that day was the sabbath even, and the Sabbath drew on.
- 55 The women that followed after which came with him from Galilee, beheld the sepulcher, and how his body was laid.
- 56 And they returned, and prepared odors, and ointments; but rested the Sabbath day according to the commandment.

CHAPTER 24

- On the morrow after the Sabbath, early in the morning, they came unto the tomb, and brought the odors which they had prepared, and other women with them
- 2 And they found the stone, rolled away from the sepulcher.
- 3 And went in: but found not the body of the Lord Jesus.
- 4 And it happened, as they were amazed thereat: behold two men stood by them in shinning vestures:
- 5 And as they were afraid and bowed down their faces to the earth they said to them, why seek ye the living among the the dead?
- 6 He is not here remember how he spake unto you when he was yet with you in Galilee,
- 7 Saying: that the Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men and be crucified, and the third day rise again.
- 8 And they remembered his words,

Why are you troubled

Luke 24:22

- 9 And returned from the sepulcher, and told all these things unto the eleven and to all the remnant.
- 10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary Jacobi, and others that were with them, which told these things unto the apostles
- 11 And their words seemed unto them feigned things, neither believed they them.
- 12 Then arose Peter and ran unto the sepulcher; and stooped in, and saw the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed wondering in himself at that which had came to pass.
- 13 And behold, two of them went that same day to a town called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs
- 14 And they talked together of all these things that had came to pass.
- 15 And it came to pass, as they communed together and reasoned, that Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.
- 16 But their eyes were holden that they could not know him.
- 17 And he said unto them: What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?
- 18 And the one of them named Cleopas answered and said unto him: art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem and hast not known the things which have came to pass therein in these days
- 19 To whom he said: what things? And they said unto him, of Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people.
- 20 And how the high priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death: and have crucified him.
- 21 But we trusted that it should have been he that should have delivered Israel: and as touching all these things, today is even the third day that they were done.
- 22 Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonied, which came early unto the sepulcher

Luke 24:23

Praising and glorifying God

- 23 And found not his body: and came saying, that they had seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.
- 24 And certain of them which with us went their way to the sepulcher, and found it even so as the women had said: but him they saw not.
- 25 And he said unto them: O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken.
- 26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?
- 27 And he began at Moses and at all the prophets interpreted unto them in all scriptures, which were written of him.
- 28 And they drew nigh unto the town, to which they went: And he made as though he would have gone further.
- 29 But they constrained him saying: abide with us for it draweth toward night and the day is far passed. And he went in to tarry with them.
- 30 And it came to pass, as he sit at meat with them, he took bread, blessed it, brake and gave to them.
- 31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.
- 32 And they said between themselves: did not our hearts burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and as he opened to us the scriptures?
- 33 And they rose up the same hour, and returned again to Jerusalem and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them which,
- 34 Said: the Lord is risen indeed and hath appeared to Simon.
- 35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how they knew him in breaking of bread.
- 36 As they thus spakeJesus himself stood in the midst of them and said vnto them: peace be with you.
- 37 And they were troubled and afraid, supposing that they had seen a spirit
- 38 And he said unto them, why are ye troubled? and why

All must be fulfilled

Luke 24:53

do thoughts arise in your hearts?

- 39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is even myself, handle me and see: for spirits have not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.
- 40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewd them his hands and his feet.
- 41 And while they yet believed not for Joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?
- 42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish and of an honeycomb.
- 43 And he took it, and ate it before them.
- 44 And he said unto them. These are the words which I spake unto you while I was yet with you: that all must be fulfilled which were written of me in the law of Moses and in the prophets and in the Psalms.
- 45 Then opened he their wits that they might understand the scriptures
- 47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, and must begin at Jerusalem.
- 48 And ye are witnesses of these things.
- 49 And, behold, I will send the promise of my Father upon you. but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high
- 50 And he led them out into Bethany and lifted up his hands, and blest them
- 51 And it came to pass as he blessed them;he departed from them, and was carried up into heaven
- 52 And they worshiped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great Joy
- 53 and were continually in the temple, praising and glorifying God.

John 1:1

All things were made by him

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT JOHN

- N the ³⁰beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God
- 2 The same was in the beginning with God.
- 3 All things were made by him; and without him was made nothing that was made.
- 4 In him was life; and the life was the light of men.
- 5 And the light shineth in the darkness; but the darkness comprehended it not.
- 6 There was a man sent from God, whose name was John 7 The same came as a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all [men] through him might believe.
- 8 He was not that Light, but to bear witness of the Light.[That] was a true Light, which lighteth all men that come into the world.
- 10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and yet the world knew him not.
- 11 He came among his own, and his own received him not.
- 12 But as many as received him, to them he gave power to be the sons of God, in that they believed on his name:
- 13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor yet of the will of man, but of God.
- 14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we saw the glory, of it as the glory of the only begotten Son of the Father, which word was full of grace and truth.
- 15 John bare witness of him, and cried, saying: This was he of whom I spake, he that cometh after me was before me: because he was ere than I.
- 16 And of his fulness have all we received, even grace for grace.
- 17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came

-

 $^{^{30}}$ Any beginning that ever began the word was there, God was there

Behold the Lamb of God

John 1:33

by Jesus Christ.

- 18 No man hath seen God at any time. The only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.
- 19 And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, What art thou?
- 20 And he confessed, and denied not; and said plainly, I am not Christ.
- 21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he said, I am not. Art thou a Prophet? And he answered, no.
- 22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?
- 23 He said, I am the voice of a crier in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the Prophet Isaiah.
- 24 And they which were sent were of the Pharisees.
- 25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why Baptizest thou then, if thou be not Christ, nor Elijah, neither a Prophet?
- 26 John answered them saying, I ³¹baptize with water: but one is come among you, whom ye know not;
- 27 He it is, that cometh after me which was before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to unloose.
- 28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John did baptize.
- 29 The next day John saw Jesus coming unto him, and said, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.
- 30 This is he of whom I said, after me cometh a man which was before me: for he was before me.
- 31 And I knew him not: but that he should be declared to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.
- 32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descend from heaven like unto a dove, and abode upon him.
- 33 And I knew him not. But he that sent me to baptize in water, the same said unto me: upon whom thou shalt see the

-

³¹ With water, rule of first mention Matt. 3:11 in water also also John 1: 33

John 1:34

We have found Messiah

Spirit descending and tarry still on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the HolyGhost.

- 34 And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.
- 35 The next day after John stood again, and two of his disciples.
- 36 And he beheld Jesus as he walked by, and said, Behold the Lamb of God
- 37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and followed Jesus.
- 38 And Jesus turned about, and saw them follow, and said unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, by interpretation, Master) where dwellest thou?
- 39 He said unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour.
- 40 One of the two which heard John speak, and followed Jesus, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.
- 41 The same found his brother Simon first, and said unto him, We have found Messiah, which is by interpretation, anointed.
- 42 And brought him to Jesus. And Jesus beheld him, and said, Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.
- 43 The day following Jesus would go into Galilee, and found Philip, and said unto him, Follow me
- 44 Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.
- 45 And Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph
- 46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip said to him, Come and see.
- 47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and said of him, Behold a right Israelite, in whom is no guile.
- 48 Nathanael said unto him, Where knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee.
- 49 Nathanael answered and said unto him Rabbi, thou art the

Water into wine John 2:12

Son of God; thou art the king of Israel.

50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, thou believest? thou shalt see greater things than these

51 And he said unto him, Verily verily I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven opened and the angels of God ascending and descending over the Son of man.

CHAPTER 2

A ND the third day was there a marriage in Cana a city of Galilee: and the mother of Jesus was there.

- 2 And Jesus was called, also and his disciples, unto the marriage.
- 3 And when the wine failed, the mother of Jesus said unto him, They have no wine.
- 4 Jesus said unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.
- 5 His mother said unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.
- 6 And there were standing there six waterpots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins a piece.
- 7And Jesus said unto them, Fill the water pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.
- 8 And he said unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare it.
- 9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was turned unto wine, and knew not whence it was: (but the servants which drew the water knew). He called the bridegroom,
- 10 And said unto him, All men at the beginning set forth good wine; and when men be drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept back the good wine until now.
- 11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and showed his glory; and his disciples believed on him.
- 12 After that he descended into Capernaum, and his mother,

John 2:13

The zeal of thine house

and His brethren, and his disciples: but continued not many days there.

- 13 And the Jews passover was even at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem,
- 14 And found sitting in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and changers of money.
- 15 And he made a scourge of small cords, and drove them all out of the temple, with the sheep and oxen and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables;
- 16 And said unto them that sold doves, Have these things hence; and make not my Father's house an house of merchandise.
- 17 And his disciples remembered how that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath even eaten me.
- 18 Then answered the Jews and said unto him, What token shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?
- 19 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will rear it up again.
- 20 Then said the Jews, forty-six years was this temple abuilding, and wilt thou rear it up in three days?
- 21 But he spake of the temple of his body.
- 22 As soon therefore as he was risen from death, again his disciples remembered that he thus said. And they believed the scripture, and the words which Jesus had said.
- 23 When he was at Jerusalem at passover, in the feast, many believed on his name, when they saw his miracles which he did.
- 24 But Jesus put not himself in their hands, because he knew all men,
- 25 And needed not that any man should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.

CHAPTER 3

THERE was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler among the Jews.

2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi,

He knew what was in man

John 3:17

we know that thou art a teacher which art come from God. for no man could do such miracles as thou doest, except God were with him.

3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born anew, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

Nicodemus said unto him, how can a man be born when he is old? can he enter into his mother's womb, and be born again?

- 5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily; I say unto thee, Except that a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
- 6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.
- 7 Marvel not that I say to thee, Ye must be born anew.
- 8 The wind bloweth where he listeth, and thou hearest his sound: but canst not tell whence he cometh, and whether he goeth: So is every man that is born of the Spirit.
- 9 And Nicodemus answered and said unto him, how can these things be?
- 10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master in Israel, and knowest not these things?
- 11 Verily verily I say unto thee, We speak that we know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness
- 12 If when I tell you earthly things, ye believe not: how should ye believe if I shall tell you of heavenly things?
- 13 And no man ascendeth up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, that is to say the Son of man which is in heaven.
- 14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up:
- 15 That none that believeth in him perish, but have eternal life.
- 16 For God so loveth the world, that he hath given his only Son, that none that believe in him should perish, but should have everlasting life.
- 17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

John 3: 18

Believeth not is condemned already

- 18 He that believeth on him shall not be condemned. But he that believeth not is condemned already, because he believeth not in the name of the only Son of God.
- 19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and the men loved darkness more than light, because their deeds were evil.
- 20 For every man that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to light, lest his deeds should be reproved.
- 21 But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds might be known, how that they are wrought in God.
- 22 After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the Jews land, and there he tarried with them, and baptized.
- 23 And John also baptized in AEnon besides Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.
- 24 For John was not yet cast into prison.
- 25 And there arose a question between Johns disciples and the Jews about purifying.
- 26 And they came unto John and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.
- 27 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing at all, except it be given him from heaven.
- 28 Ye yourselves are witnesses, how that I said, I am not Christ, but am sent before him.
- 29 He that hath the bride is the bridegroom. but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth by and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice. this my joy therefore is fulfilled.
- 30 He must increase, and I must decrease.
- 31 He that cometh from on high is above all: he that is of the earth is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth. he that cometh from heaven is above all.
- 32 And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth; but no

Shall never be more athirst

John 4:12

man receiveth his testimony.

- 33 Howbeit he that hath received his testimony hath set to his seal that God is true.
- 34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God. for God giveth not the Spirit by measure.
- 35 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand.
- 36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

CHAPTER 4

A S soon as the Lord had knowledge how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John,

- 2 (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples)
- 3 He left Jewry, and departed again into Galilee.
- 4 And it was so that he must needs go through Samaria.
- 5 Then came he to a city of Samaria, called Sychar, besides the possession that Jacob gave to his son Joseph.
- 6 And there was Jacobs well. Jesus then wearied in his journey, sat thus on the well. [and] it was about the sixth hour.
- 7 And there came a woman of Samaria to draw water. And Jesus said unto her, Give me drink.
- 8 For his disciples were gone away unto the town to buy meat.
- 9 Then said the woman of Samaria unto him: how is it that thou being a Jew askest drink of me which am a Samaritan? for the Jews meddle not with the Samaritans.
- 10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God and who it is that saith to thee, Give me drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee water of life.
- 11 The woman said unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that water of life?
- 12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the

John 4:13

Give me of that water

well, and he himself drank thereof, and his children, and his cattle?

- 13 Jesus answered and said unto her; whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again.
- 14 But whosoever shall drink of the water that I shall give him shall never be more athirst: but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.
- 15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me of that water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.
- 16 Jesus said unto her, Go, and call thy husband, and come hither.
- 17 The woman answered and said to him, I have no husband.
- 18 Jesus said to her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband: For thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband. that sayest thou truly.
- 19 The woman said unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.
- 20 Our fathers worshiped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.
- 21 Jesus said unto her, Woman believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father.
- 22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship. for salvation cometh of the Jews.
- 23 But the hour cometh and now is, when the true worshipers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth. for verily such the Father requireth to worship him.
- 24 God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and truth.
- 25 The woman said unto him, I know well Messiah shall come, which is called Christ. When he is come he will tell us all things.
- 26 Jesus said unto her, I that speak unto thee am he.

Come see a man

John 4:42

- 27 And even at that point came his disciples, and marveled that he talked with the woman, Yet no man said unto him: what meanest thou or why talkest thou with her?
- 28 The woman then left her water pot, and went her way into the city, and said to the men,
- 29 Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did: Is not he Christ?
- 30 Then they went out of the city. and came unto him.
- 31 And in the meanwhile his disciples prayed him, saying: Master eat.
- 32 He said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of.
- 33 Then said the disciples between themselves, hath any man brought him meat?
- 34 Jesus saith unto them: my meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.
- 35 Say not ye, there are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold I say unto you lift up your eyes, and look on the regions: for they are white already unto harvest.
- 36 And he that reapeth receaveth reward and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth and he that reapeth, might rejoice together.
- 37 And herein is the saying true, that one soweth and another reapeth.
- 38 I sent you to reap that, wheron ye bestowed no labour. Other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours.
- 39 Many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him, for the saying of the woman which testified: he told me all things that ever I did.
- 40 Then, when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them, and he abode there two days.
- 41 And many more believed, because of his own word
- 42 And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is even indeed Christ, the Saviour of the world.

John 4:43

Go thy way thy son livith

- 43 After two days he departed thence and went away into Galilee.
- 44 And Jesus himself testified that a prophet hath none honor in his own country.
- 45 Then as soon as he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, which had seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast. for they went also unto the feast day.
- 46 And Jesus came again into Cana, of Galilee, where he turned water into wine. And there was a certain ruler, whose son was sick at Capernaum.
- 47 As soon as the same heard that Jesus was come out of Jewry into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would ready descend, and heal his son: for he was even to die.
- 48 Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye cannot believe.
- 49 The ruler said unto him, Sir, come away or ever that my child die.
- 50 Jesus said unto him, Go thy way thy son liveth. And he went his way
- 51 And now as he went on his way, his servants met him, and told him, saying, thy child liveth.
- 52 Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him, yesterday the seventh hour the fever left him.
- 53 And the father knew that it was the same hour, in which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth. and he believed, and all his household.
- 54 This is again the second miracle that Jesus did after he was come out of Jewry into Galilee.

CHAPTER 5

A FTER that there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

Wilt thou be made whole

John 5:16

- 2 And there is at Jerusalem by the slaughterhouse a pool, called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches.
- 3 In which lay a great multitude of sick folk, of blind, halt, and withered, waiting for the moving of the water.
- 4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.
- 5 And a certain man was there, which had been diseased thirty and eight years.
- 6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he now long time had been diseased, he said unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?
- 7 The sick answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool. but in the mean time while I am about to come another steppeth down before me.
- 8 And Jesus said unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.
- 9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and went: and the same day was the sabbath day.
- 10 The Jews therefore said unto him that was made whole, It is the sabbath day: it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed.
- 11 He answered them, He that made me whole, said unto me, Take up thy bed, and get thee hence.
- 12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk.
- 13 And he that was healed knew not who it was: for Jesus had gotten himself away because that there was press of people in that place.
- 14 And after that Jesus found him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole; sin no more, lest a worse thing happen unto thee.
- 15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus, which had made him whole.
- 16 And therefore the Jews did persecute Jesus, and sought the means to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day.

John 5:17

Tthe dead shall hear his voice

- 17 And Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.
- 18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, not only because he had broken the sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, and made himself equal with God.
- 19 Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily Verily I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but that he seeth the Father do: for whatsoever he doeth that doeth the Son also.
- 20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things whatsoever he himself doeth. and he will show him greater works than these, because ye should marvel.
- 21 For likewise as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.
- 22 Neither judgeth the Father any man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son:
- 23 Because that all men should honor the Son even as they honor the Father. He that honoureth not the Son the same honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.
- 24 Verily verily I say unto you, He that heareth my words, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life and shall not come into damnation; but is escaped from death unto life.
- 25 Verily verily I say unto you, the time shall come, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God. And they that hear shall live.
- 26 For as the Father hath life in himself; so likewise hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;
- 27 And hath given him power also, to judge in that he is the Son of man.
- 28 Marvel not at this: the hour shall come, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,
- 29 And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.
- 30 I can of mine own self do nothing at all: as I hear, I judge:

Him ye believe not

John 6.1

and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father, which hath sent me.

- 31 If I bear witness of myself my witness is not true, that the witness which he beareth of me is true.
- 33 Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth.
- 34 But I receive not the record of man: nevertheless these things I say, that ye might be saved.
- 35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye would for a season have rejoiced in his light.
- 36 But I have greater witness than the witness of John. for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works which I do, bear witness of me, that the Father sent me.
- 37 And the father himself which hath sent me, bear witness of me. Ye have not heard his voice at any time, nor have seen his shape.
- 38 Thereto his words have ye not abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not.
- 39 Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.
- 40 And yet will ye not come to me, that ye might have life.
- 41 I receive not praise of men.
- 42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.
- 43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not. If another shall come in his own name, him will ye receive.
- 44 How can ye believe, which receive honor one of another, and seek not the honor that cometh of God only?
- 45 Do not think that I will accuse you to my Father. There is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust.
- 46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me.
- 47 But now ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

CHAPTER 6

A FTER these things Jesus went his way over the sea of Galilee, nigh to a city called Tiberias.

John 6:2

A great multitudge fed

- 2 And a great multitude followed him, because they had seen his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.
- 3 And Jesus went up into a mountain and there he sat with his disciples.
- 4 And passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.
- 5 Then Jesus lifted up his eyes and saw a great company come unto him and said unto Philip: whence shall we buy bread that these might eat.
- 6 This he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do
- 7 Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread are not sufficient for them that every man have a little.
- 8 Then said unto him one of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother.
- 9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two fishes: but what is that among so many?
- 10 And Jesus said. Make the people sit down. There was much grass in the place. And the men sat down, in number about five thousand.
- 11 And Jesus took the bread; and gave thanks, and gave to the disciples, and his disciples to them that were set down. and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.
- 12 When they had eaten enough, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the broken meat that remaineth, that nothing be lost.
- 13 And they gathered it together, and filled twelve baskets with the broken meat of the five barley loaves, which broken meat remained unto them that had eaten.
- 14 Then the men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth the prophet that should come into the world.
- 15 When Jesus perceived that they would come and take him up, to make him king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

It it is I be not afraid

John 6:30

- 16 And when even was come, his disciples went unto the sea,
- 17 And entered into a ship, and went over the sea unto Capernaum. And already it was dark, and Jesus was not come to them
- 18 And the sea arose with a great wind that blew.
- 19 And when they had rowed about twenty five or a thirty furlongs they saw Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.
- 20 And he said unto them, It is I; be not afraid.
- 21 Then would they have received him into the ship: and the ship was by and by at the land whither they went.
- 22 The day following the people which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other ship there, save that one where in his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not in with his disciples into the ship, but that his disciples were gone away alone.
- 23 How be it there came other ships from Tiberius nigh unto the place where they ate bread, when the Lord had blessed.
- 24 Then when the people saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.
- 25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?
- 26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily verily I say unto you, ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye ate of the loaves, and were filled.
- 27 Labor not for the meat which perisheth, but for the meat that endureth unto everlasting life, which meat the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.
- 28 Then said they unto him, what shall we do, that we might work the works of God?
- 29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.
- 30 They said unto him, what sign shewest thou then, that we

John 6: 31

I am that bread of life

may see and believe thee? what dost thou work

- 31 Our fathers did eat manna in the desert as it is written: He gave them bread from heaven to eat.
- 32 Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Moses gave you bread from heaven: but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.
- 33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.
- 34 Then said they unto him, Lord, ever more give us this bread.
- 35 And Jesus said unto them, I am that bread of life. He that cometh to me shall not hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.
- 36 But I said unto you, That ye have seen me, and yet believe not.
- 37 All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I cast not away.
- 38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but his will which hath sent me.
- 39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise. it up again at the last day
- 40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every man which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, hath everlasting life. and I will raise him up at the last day.
- 41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am that bread which is come down from heaven.
- 42 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is that then that he saith, I came down from heaven?
- 43 Jesus answered and said unto them, Murmur not between yourselves.
- 44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him. and I will raise him up at the last day.
- 45 It is written in the prophets, that they shall all be taught of

This is an hard saying

John 6:61

- God. Every man therefore that hath learned of the Father cometh unto me
- 46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, the same hath seen the Father.
- 47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that believeth on me hath everlasting life.
- 48 I am that bread of life.
- 49 Your fathers did eat Manna in the wilderness, and are dead.
- 50 This is that bread which cometh from heaven, that he which eateth of it, should also not die.
- 51 I am that living bread which came down from heaven. If any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.
- 52 And the Jews strove among themselves, saying, How can this fellow give us his flesh to eat?
- 53 Then Jesus said unto them: Verely verely I say unto you except ye eat ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye shall not have life in you.
- 54 Whosoever eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.
- 55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.
- 56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me and I in him.
- 57 As the living Father hath sent me, even so live I by my Father: and he that eateth me, shall live by me.
- 58 This is the bread which came from heaven: not as your fathers have eaten manna, and are dead. He that eateth of this bread shall live forever.
- 59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.
- 60 Many of his disciples, when they had heard this, said, This is an hard saying; who can abide the hearing of it?
- 61 Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, and

John 6:62

One of you is the devil

said unto them, Doth this offend you?

- 62 What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?
- 63 It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing. the words that I speak unto you, are spirit, and life.

But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the the beginning, which they were that believed not, and who should betray him.

- 65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my father
- 66 From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.
- 67 Then said Jesus to the twelve, Will ye also go away?
- 68 Then Simon Peter answered Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life
- 69 And we believe and know that thou art Christ, the Son of the living God.
- 70 Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and yet one of you is the devil?
- 71 He spake it of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon. for it was he that should betray him, and was one of the twelve.

CHAPTER 7

A FTER that Jesus went about in Galilee: and would not go about in Jewry, for the Jews sought to kill him.

- 2 The Jews tabernacle feast was at hand.
- 3 His brethren therefore said unto him, get thee hence, and go into Jewry, that thy disciples may see thy works that thou doest.
- 4 For there is no man that doeth any thing secretly and he himself seeketh to be known. If thou do such things, show thyself to the world.
- 5 For as yet his brethren believed not in him.
- 6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: your time is always ready

My doctrine is not mine

John 7:23

- 7 The world cannot hate you. me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works of it are evil.
- 8 Go ye up unto this feast. I will not go up yet unto this feast; for my time is not yet full come.
- 9 These words he said unto them, and abode still in Galilee.
- 10 But as soon as his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were privately.
- 11 Then sought him the Jews at the feast, and said, Where is he?
- 12 And much murmuring was there of him among the people. Some said, He is good: Others said, nay; but he deceaveth the people.
- 13 How be it no man spake openly of him for fear of the Jews.
- 14 In the middle of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.
- 15 And the Jews marveled, saying, How knoweth he the scriptures, saying that he never learned?
- 16 Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.
- 17 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself.
- 18 He that speaketh of himself seeketh his own praise. But he that seeketh his praise that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.
- 19 Did not Moses give you a law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?
- 20 The people answered and said: thou hast the devil, who goeth about to kill thee?
- 21 Jesus answered and said to them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.
- 22 Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision; not because it is of Moses but of the fathers. And yet ye on the sabbath day circumcise a man.
- 23 If a man on the Sabbath day receive circumcision, without

John 7:24

Come unto me and drink

breaking of the law of Moses; disdain ye at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath day?

- 24 Judge not after the utter appearance, but judge righteous judgment.
- 25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he, whom they go about to kill?
- 26 Behold, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing to him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is very Christ?
- 27 How be it we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man shall know whence he is.
- 28 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye know me and whence I am ye know. and yet I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.
- 29 I know him: for I am of him, and he hath sent me.
- 30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his time was not yet come.
- 31 Many of the people believed on him, and said, when Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than this man hath done?
- 32 The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things about him. Wherefore the Pharisees and the priests sent officers forth to take him.
- 33 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet am I a little while with you, and then go I unto him that sent me.
- 34 Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come.
- 35 Then said the Jews between themselves, whither will he go, that we shall not find him? Will he go among the Gentiles, which are scattered all abroad and teach the Gentiles?
- 36 What manner of saying is this that he said, ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither can ye not come?
- 37 In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst let him come unto me and

Of a truth this is a prophet

John 8:3

drink

- 38 He that believeth on me, as saith the scripture, out of his belly shall flow rivers of water of life.
- 39 This spake he of the Spirit, which they that believed on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet there; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.
- 40 Many of the people, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is a prophet
- 41 Others said, This is Christ. Some said, shall Christ come out of Galilee?
- 42 Saith not the scripture, That Christ shall come of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?
- 43 So was there division among the people about him.
- 44 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.
- 45 Then came the officers to the high priests and Pharisees. and they said unto them, why have ye not brought him?
- 46 The officers answered, never man spake as this man doth.
- 47 Then answered them the Pharisees, are ye also deceived?
- 48 Doth any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believe on him?
- 49 But the common people which know not the law are cursed.
- 50 Nicodemus saith unto them, He that came to Jesus by night, and was one of them.
- 51 Doth our law judge any man, before it hear him, and know what he hath done?
- 52 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.
- 53 And every man went unto his own house.

CHAPTER 8

And early in the morning came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them.

3 And the scribes and the Pharisees brought unto him a

John 8:4

Go and sin no more

woman taken in adultery; and set her in the midst

- 4 And said unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery even as the deed was a doing
- 5 Moses in the law commanded us that such should be stoned: what sayest thou therefore?
- 6 And this they said, to tempt him, that they might have whereof to accuse him, Jesus stooped down, and with his finger, wrote on the ground,
- 7 And while they continued asking him, he lifted up himself and said unto them, Let him that is among you, without sin cast the first stone at her.
- 8 And again he stooped down and wrote on the ground.
- 9 And as soon as they heard that, they went out one by one, the eldest first. And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.
- 10 When Jesus had lifted up himself, again and saw no man but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?
- 11 She said: No man, Lord. And Jesus said, Neither do I condemn thee. Go and sin no more.
- 12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.
- 13 The Pharisees said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true.
- 14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of myself, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go. but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go
- 15 Ye judge after the flesh. I judge no man.
- 16 Though I judge, yet is my judgment true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.
- 17 It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true.
- 18 I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that

Then are ye free indeed

John 8:33

sent me beareth witness of me

- 19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor yet my Father. If ye had known me ye should have known my Father also.
- 20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his time was not yet come.
- 21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins. Whither I go, thither can ye not come.
- 22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, thither can ye not come?
- 23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above. ye are of this world; I am not of this world.
- 24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for except ye believe that I am he ye shall die in your sins.
- 25 Then said they unto him, who art thou? And Jesus said unto them, Even the very same thing that I say unto you.
- 26 I have many things to say and to judge of you. but he that sent me is true. and I speak in the world those things which I have heard of him.
- 27 They understood not that he spake of his Father.
- 28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up on high the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, even so I speak.
- 29 And he that sent me is with me. The Father hath not left me alone: for I do always those things that please him.
- 30 As he spake these words, many believed on him.
- 31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my words then are ye my very disciples;
- 32 And shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.
- 33 They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: why sayest thou then, ye shall

John 8:34

Ye are of your father the devil

be made free.

- 34 Jesus answered them, Verily verily I say unto you, that whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.
- 35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.
- 36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, are ye free indeed
- 37 I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek means to kill me, because my sayings have no place in you.
- 38 I speak that I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which you have seen of your father
- 39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus said unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the deeds of Abraham.
- 40 But now ye go about to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.
- 41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they unto him, we were not born of fornication. we have one Father which is God.
- 42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, then would ye love me. for I proceeded forth and come from God. Neither came I of myself, but he sent me.
- 43 Why do ye not know my speech? Even because ye cannot abide the hearing of my words.
- 44 Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will follow. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, then speaketh he of his own. for he is a liar, and the father thereof.
- 45 And because I tell you ye the truth, therefore ye believe me not.
- 46 Which of you can rebuke me of sin? If I say the truth, why do not ye believe me?
- 47 He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.
- 48 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well

Before Abraham was I am

John 9:3

that thou art a Samaritan, and hast the devil?

- 49 Jesus answered, I have not the devil; but I honor my Father, and ye have dishonoured me.
- 50 I seek not mine own praise: but there is one that seeketh and judgeth.
- 51 Verily Verily I say unto you, if a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.
- 52 Then said the Jews to him, Now know we that thou hast the devil. Abraham is dead, and also the prophets; and yet thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.
- 53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead. whom makest thou thyself?
- 54 Jesus answered, If I honor myself, mine honor is worth nothing. It is my Father that honoreth me; which ye say, is your God:
- 55 And ye have not known him; but I know him. and if I should say, I know him not, I should be a liar like unto you. but I know him, and keep his saying.
- 56 Your father Abraham was glad to see my day: and he saw it and rejoiced.
- 57 Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?
- 58 Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.
- 59 Then took they up stones to cast at him. But Jesus hid himself and went out of the temple

CHAPTER 9

A ND as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth.

- 2 And his disciples asked him, saying Master, who did sin: this man, or his father and mother, that he was born blind?
- 3 Jesus answered Neither hath this man sinned nor yet his father and mother: but that the works of God should be showed on him.

John 9:4

I am the light of the world

- 4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day. the night cometh, when no man can work.
- 5As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.
- 6 As soon as he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and rubbed the clay on the eyes of the blind,
- 7 And said unto him, Go, to the pool of Siloam, and wash, which by interpretation signifieth, Sent. He went his way, and washed, and came again seeing.
- 8 The neighbors, and they that had seen him before how that he was a beggar said, is not this he that sat and begged?
- 9 Some said, This is he. Other said, he is like him: But he himself said, I am even he.
- 10 They said unto him, How are thine eyes opened then?
- 11 He answered and said, the man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool
- 12 They said unto him:, where is he? He said:, I cannot tell.
- 13 Then brought they to the Pharisees him that a littlel before was blind:.
- 14 For it was the Sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.
- 15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes and I washed and do see
- 16 Then said some of the Pharisees, this man is not of God because he keepeth not the sabbath day. Others said, how can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was strife among them:
- 17 Then spake they unto the blind again, What sayest thou of him, because he hath opened thine eyes? And he said: He is a Prophet.
- 18 But the Jews did not believe of the fellow, how that he was blind, and received his sight until they had called the father and mother of him that had received his sight.

He is old enough ask him

John 9:33

- 19 And they asked them saying: Is this your son, whom ye say was born blind? How doth he now see then?
- 20 We wot well that this is our son, and that he was born blind
- 21 But by what means he now seeth, that can we not tell or who hath opened his eyes can we not tell. He is old enough ask him let him answer for himself.
- 22 Such words spake his father and mother because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had conspired already that if any man did confesses that he was Christ he should be excommunicated out of the synagogue.
- 23 Therefore said his father and mother: he is old enough; ask him.
- 24 Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise, we know that this man is a sinner.
- 25 He answered and said, whither he be a sinner or no, I cannot tell: One thing I am sure of that I was blind and now I see.
- 26 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? How opened he thine eyes?
- 27 He answered them, I told you already, and ye did not hear. wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?
- 28 Then they ranted at him, and said, Thou art his disciple. We be Moses disciples.
- 29 We are sure that God spake with Moses, This fellow, we know not from whence he is.
- 30 The man answered and said unto them, This is a marvelous thing, that ye know not whence he is, seeing he hath opened mine eyes.
- 31 For we be sure, that God heareth not sinners, but if any man be a worshipper of God, and do his will, him heareth he.
- 32 Since the world began, was it not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind.
- 33 If this man were not of God, he could have done nothing.

John 9:34

1 Am the door of the sheep

- 34 They answered and said unto him, Thou art altogether born in sin, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.
- 35 Jesus heard that they had excommunicated him, and as soon as he had found, him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?
- 36 He answered and said, Who is it Lord, that I might believe on him?
- 37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.
- 38 And he said, Lord I believe. And worshiped him.
- 39 Jesus said, I am come unto judgment into this world, that they which see not might see; and they which see might be made blind.
- 40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words and said unto him are we then blind
- 41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin. but now ye say, we see, therefore your sin remaineth.

CHAPTER 10

- ERILY, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not in by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.
- 2 He that goeth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep.
- 3 To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.
- 4 And when he hath sent forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.
- 5 A stranger they will not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.
- 6 This similitude spake Jesus unto them. but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.
- 7 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily verily I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.
- 8 All even as many as came before me, are thieves and robbers but the sheep did not hear them.

Ye are not of my sheep

John 10:24

- 9 I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.
- 10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, kill and destroy. I am come that they might have life, and have it more abundantly.
- 11 I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.
- 12 A hired servant which is not the shepherd neither the sheep his own, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.
- 13 The hired servant fleeth, because he is an hired servant and careth not for the sheep.
- 14 I am that good shepherd, and know mine, and am known of mine.
- 15 As my Father knoweth me, even so know I my Father And I give my life for the sheep.
- 16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also must I bring, that they may hear my voice: [and] that there may be one flock and one shepherd.
- 17 Therfore doth my Father love me, because I put my life from me that I might take it again.
- 18 No man taketh it from me, but I put it away of myself. I have power to put it from me, and have power to take it again, This commandment have I received of my Father.
- 19 And there was a dissention again among the Jews for these sayings
- 20 And many of them said. He hath the devil and is mad: why hear ye him?
- 21 Others said, these are not the words of him that hath the devil. Can the devil open the eyes of the blind?
- 22 And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter:
- 23 And Jesus walked in Solomon's porch.
- 24 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us doubt? If thou be Christ, tell us

John 10:25

and my Father are one

plainly.

- 25 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believe not. The works that I do in my Fathers name, they bear witness of me.
- 26 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you:
- 27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me
- 28 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any [man] pluck them out of my hand.
- 29 My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to take them out of my Fathers hand.
- 30 And I and my father are one.
- 31 Then the Jews again took up stones to stone him withal.
- 32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of them will ye stone me?
- 33 We stone ye not; but for thy blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.
- 34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I say, Ye are gods?
- 35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God was spoken, (and the scripture cannot be broken);
- 36 Say ye then to him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world thou blasphemest because I said I am the Son of God
- 37 If I do not the works: of my Father, believe me not.
- 38 But if I do, though ye believe not me, yet believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.
- 39 Again they went about to take him: but he escaped out of their hands.
- 40 And went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John before had baptized; and there abode.
- 41 And many resorted unto him and said. John did no miracle:

Lazarus is sick John 11.15

but all thinges that John spake of this man are true.

42 And many believed on him there.

CHAPTER 11

A certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.

- 2 It was that Mary which anointed Jesus with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.
- 3 And his sisters sent unto him, saying. Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.
- 4 When Jesus heard that, he said, This infirmity is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified by the reason of it.
- 5 Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.
- 6 After he heard that he was sick, then abode he two days still in the same place where he was.
- 7 Then after that said he to his disciples, Let us go into Jewry again.
- 8 His disciples said unto him, Master, the Jews lately sought means to stone thee: and wilt thou go thither again?
- 9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If a man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.
- 10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.
- 11 This said he: and after that he said unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go, to wake him out of sleep.
- 12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep he shall do well enough.
- 13 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of the natural sleep.
- 14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.
- 15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, because ye may believe. nevertheless let us go unto him.

John 11:16

Believeth thou this

- 16 Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto the disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.
- 17 Then went Jesus, and found that he had lain in his grave four days already.
- 18 Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off:
- 19 And many of the Jews were come to Martha and Mary, to comfort them over their brother.
- 20 Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat still in the house.
- 21 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not been dead.
- 22 But nevertheless I know, that whatsoever thou askest of God, God will give it thee.
- 23 Jesus said unto her, Thy brother shall rise again.
- 24 Martha said unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.
- 25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth on me, yea though he were dead, yet shall he live.
- 26 And whosoever liveth and believest on me shall never die. Believeth thou this?
- 27 She said unto him, Yea, Lord, I believe that thou art Christ the Son of God, which should come into the world.
- 28 And as soon as she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.
- 29 And she as soon as she heard that, arose quickly, and came unto him.
- 30 Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in the place where Martha met him
- 31 The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.

Loose him and let him go

John 11:47

- 32 Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not been dead.
- 33 When Jesus saw her weep, and the Jews also weep which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled in himself.
- 34 And said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see.
- 35 And Jesus wept.
- 36 Then said the Jews, Behold, how he loved him.
- 37 And some of them said, Could not he, which opened the eyes of the blind, have made also that this man should not have died?
- 38 Jesus again groaned in himself and came to the grave. It was a cave and a stone laid on it.
- 39 And Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead saith unto him Lord by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.
- 40 Jesus said unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou didst believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God
- 41 Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee because that thou hast heard me.
- 42 I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people that stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.
- 43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.
- 44 And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave bonds: and his face was bound with a napkin. Jesus said unto them, Loose him, and let him go.
- 45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him.
- 46 But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told

John 11:47

For to put him to death

them what Jesus had done.

- 47 Then gathered the high priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, what do we? for this man doeth many miracles.
- 48 If we let him escape, thus all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away our country and the people.
- 9 And one of them named Caiaphas, which was the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all.
- 50 Nor yet consider that it is expedient for us, that one man die for the people, and not that all the people perish.
- 51 This spake he not of himself: but being high priest that same year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for the people;
- 52 And not for the people only, but that he should gather together in one the children of God which were scattered abroad.
- 53 From that day forth they held a council together for to put him to death.
- 54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went his way thence unto a country nigh to a wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.
- 55 And the Jews passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before passover to purify themselves.
- 56 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake between themselves, as they stood in the temple: What think ye, seeing he cometh not to the feast.
- 57 The high priests and Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should show it, that they might take him.

CHAPTER 12

HEN Jesus six days before passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which was dead, and who Jesus raised from death

Blessed is the of king of Israel

John 12:15

Jesus feet and wiped his feet with dead, and whom Jesus raised from death.

- ² There they made him a supper; and Martha served: But Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.
- 2There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them tht sat at the table with him,
- 3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment called Nardus perfect her hair and the house was filled of the savor of the ointment.
- 4 Then said one of his disciples name Judas Iscariot Simon's son which afterward betrayed him:
- 5 why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence and given to the poor?
- 6 This said he not that he cared for the poor: but because he was a thief and kept the bag and bare that which was given
- 7 Then said Jesus: Let her alone against the day of my burying she kept it.
- 8 The poor allways shall ye have with you but me shall ye not always have.

And they came not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he raised from death.

- 10 The high priests therefore held a council that they might put Lazarus to death also;
- 11 Because that for his sake many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.
- 12 On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus should come to Jerusalem,
- 13 Took branches of palm trees, and went and met him, and cried, Hosanna: blessed is the king of Israel. that cometh in the name of the Lord
- 14 And Jesus, got a young ass, and sat thereon; according to that which was written,
- 15 Fear not, daughter of Zion: behold, thy king cometh, sitting on an ass's colt.

John 12:16

Son of man must be glorified

- 16 These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that such things were written of him, and that such things they had done unto him.
- 17 The people that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave and raised him from his death, bare a record'
- 18 Therefore met him the people, because they heard that he had done such a miracle.
- 19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how we prevail nothing? behold, the world goeth away after him.
- 20 There were certain Greeks among them that came to pray at the feast:
- 21 The same came to Philip, which was of Bethsaida a city in Galilee, and desired, him, saying, Sir we would see Jesus.
- 22 Philip came and told Andrew: And again Andrew and Philip told Jesus.
- 23 And Jesus answered them saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man must be glorified.
- 24 Verily verily I say unto you, except the wheat corn fall into The ground and die, it abideth alone. If it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.
- 25 He that loveth his life shall destroy it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.
- 26 If any man minister unto me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my minister be. and if any man minister unto me, him will my Father honor.
- 27 Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, deliver me from this hour, but therefore came I unto this hour.
- 28 Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, I have glorified it, and will glorify it again.
- 29 Then said the people, that stood by, and heard, said it thundered: others said, An angel spake to him.

He that seeth me seeth him that sent me

John 12:45

- 30 Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.
- 31 Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.
- 33 This said Jesus signifying what death he should die.
- 34 The people answered him: We have heard of the law that Christ abideth ever: and how sayest thou then that the son of man must be lifted up? who is that son of man?
- 35 Then Jesus said unto them: yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have light lest the darkness come upon you. He that walketh in the dark wotteth not whither he goeth.
- 36 While ye have light believe on the light that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus and departed and hid him self from them.
- 37 And though he had done so many miracles before them yet believed not they on him
- 38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled that he spake. Lord who shall believe our saying? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord opened?
- 39 Therefore could they not believe because that Esaias saith again:
- 40 He hath blinded their eyes and hardened their hearts that they should not see with their eyes and understand with theirhearts and should be converted and I should heal them.
- 41 Such things said Esaias when he saw his glory and spake of him.
- 42 Nevertheless among the chief rulers many believed on him. but because of the pharisees they would not be a known of it lest they should be excommunicated.
- 43 For they loved the praise that is given of men more then the praise that cometh of God.
- 44 And Jesus cried and said: he that believeth on me believeth not on me but on him that sent me.
- 45 And he that seeth me seeth him that sent me.

John 12:46

Ye are not all clean

- 46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.
- 47 And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not. for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.
- 48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him. the words that I have spoken, they shall Judge him in the last day.
- 49 For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.
- 50 And I know that this commandment is life geverlasting.whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father bade me so I speak.

CHAPTER 13

BEFORE the feast of passover, when Jesus knew that his ur was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his which were in the world, unto the end he loved them

- 2 And when supper was ended, after that the devil had put in the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son to betray him;
- 3 Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God;
- 4 He rose from supper, and laid aside his upper garments; and took a towel, and girded himself.
- 5 After that poured he water into a basin, began to wash his disciples feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.
- 6 Then came he to Simon Peter. And Peter said to him, Lord, shalt thou wash my feet?
- 7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do, thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter.
- 8 Peter said unto him, Thou shalt not wash my feet while the world standeth. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou shalt have no part with me.
- 9 Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also

Satan entered into him

John 13:24

my hands and my head.

- 10 Jesus said to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, and is clean ever whit. And ye are clean, but not all.
- 11 For he knew his betrayer. Therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.
- 12 After he had washed their feet, and received his clothes, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you?
- 13 Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so am I.
- 14 If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet.
- 15 For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.
- 16 Verily Verily I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his master; neither the messenger greater than he that sent him.
- 17 If ye understood these things, happy are ye if ye do them.
- 18 I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen. But that the scripture be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me.
- 19 Now tell I you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe that I am he.
- 20 Verily Verily I say unto you, he that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me. and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.
- 21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in the spirit, and testified, saying, Verily Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.
- 22 And then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.
- 23 There was one of his disciples, which leaned on Jesus bosom whom Jesus loved.
- 24 To him beckoned Simon Peter, that he should ask who it was of whom he spake.

John 13:25

If it were no so I would ha told you

- 25 He then as he leaned on Jesus breast said unto him, Lord, who is it?
- 26 Jesus answered, He that is, to whom I give a sop, when I have dipped it. And he dipped a sop and gave it to Judas Iscariot, Simon's son.
- 27 And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest do quickly.
- 28 That knowest no man at the table for what intent he spake unto him.
- 29 Some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor.
- 30 As soon then as he had received the sop he went immediately out. and it was night.
- 31 When he was gone out Jesus said, now is the Son of man glorified. And God is glorified by him.
- 32 If God be glorified by him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him
- 33 Dear children, yet a little while am I with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, whither I go, thither can ye not come. Also to you say I now.
- 34 A new commandment I give unto you that ye love together; as I have loved you, that even so ye love one another.
- 35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye shall have love one to another
- 36 Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards.
- 37 Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will give my life for thy sake?
- 38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou give thy life for my sake? Verily verily I say unto thee, the cock shall not crow till thou have denied me thrice

I will come again

John 14:15

CHAPTER 14

A ND he said unto his disciples, Let not your hearts be troubled believe in God and believe in me.

- 2 In my Fathers house are many mansions, If it were not so I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.
- 3 And if I go to prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you even unto myself; that where I am, there may ye be also.
- 4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.
- 5 Thomas said unto him, Lord we know not whither thou goest. also how is it possible for us to know the way?
- 6 Jesus said unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life. and no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.
- 7 If ye had known me, ye had known my Father also. and now ye know him, and have seen him.
- 8 Philip said unto him, Lord, show us the Father, and it sufficeth us.
- 9 Jesus said unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father. and how sayest thou then, Show us the Father?
- 10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, is he that doeth the works.
- 11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me. At the least believe me for the very works sake.
- 12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do the same shall he do; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.
- 13 And whatsoever ye ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father might be glorified by the Son.
- 14 If ye shall ask anything in my name, I will do it.
- 15 If ye love me, keep my commandments,

John 14:16

I am the true vine

- 16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another comforter, that he may abide with you ever;
- 17 Which is the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because the world seeth him not, neither knoweth him. But ye know him. for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.
- 18 I will not leave you comfortless: but will come unto you
- 19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye shall see me. for I live, and ye shall live.
- 20 That day shall ye know that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.
- 21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, the same is he that loveth me. And he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will show mine own self unto him.
- 22 Judas said unto him, (not Judas Iscariot), Lord, what is the cause that thou wilt show thyself unto us, and not unto the world?
- 23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me and will keep my sayings: my Father also will love him, and we will come unto him, and will dwell with him.
- 24 He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings. and the word which ye hear are not mine, but the Father's which sent me.
- 25 This have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.
- 26 But that Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, (whom my Father will send in my name), he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have told you
- 27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you. Not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be grieved, neither fear ye.
- 28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would verily rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father. for the Father is greater than I.
- 29 And now have I showed you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe.

He that hateth me hateth my Father

John 15:13

- 30 Hereafter will I not talk many words unto you. for the ruler of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.
- 31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; therefore as the Father gave me commandment, even so do I. Rise, let us go hence.

CHAPTER 15

- AM the true vine and my Father is an husbandman.

 2 Every branch that beareth not fruit in me he will take away: and every branch that beareth fruit, will he purge it, that it may bring forth more fruit
- 3 Now are ve clean through the word which I have spoken unto you
- 4 Abide in me, and let me abide in you in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself iexcept it abide in me in the vine, no more can ye except ye abide in me.
- 5 I am the vine, and ye are the branches. He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit. For without me can ve do nothing
- 6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is devoured; and men gather it, and cast it into the fire, and it burneth.
- 7 If ye abide in me, and my words also abide in you, ask what ye will, and it shall be done to you.
- 8 Herein is my Father glorified, that we bear much fruit; and be made my disciples.
- 9 As the Father hath loved me, even so have I loved you: continue in my love?
- 10 If ye shall keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love.
- 11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.
- 12 This is my commandment, That ye love together, as I have loved you.
- 13 Greater love hath no man, than this that a man bestow his

John 15:14

He that hateth me hateth my Father

life for his friends.

- 14 Ye are my friends if ye do whatsoever I command you.
- 15 Henceforth call I you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his Lord doeth. but you have I called friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have opened to you.
- 16 Ye have not chosen me but I have chosen you and ordained you that ye go and bring forth fruit and that your fruit remain that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name he should give it you.
- 17 This command I you, that ye love together.
- 18 If the world hate you, ye know that he hated me before he hated you.
- 19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: howbeit because ye are not of the world. but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore hateth you the world.
- 20 Remember the saying that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, so will they persecute you; If they have kept my saying, so will they keep yours.
- 21 But all these things will they do unto you for my names sake, because they have not known him that sent me.
- 22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they should not have had sin: but now have they nothing to cloak their sin withal.
- 23 He that hateth me hateth my Father.
- 24 If I had not done works among them which none other man did, they had not had sin. But now have they seen and yet have hated both me and my Father.
- 25 Even that the saying might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.
- 26 But when the comforter is come whom I will send unto you from the Father, which is the Spirit of truth, which procedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me from the beginning
- 27 And ye shall bear witness also, because ye have been with

He will rebuke the world of sin

John 16:16

me from the beginning

CHAPTER 16

- These things have I said unto you, because ye should not be offended.
- 2 They shall excommunicate you: yea, the time shall come, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.
- 3 And such things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, neither yet me.
- 4 But these things have I told you, that when that hour is come, ye might remember them, that I told you so. These things said I not unto you at the beginning, because I was present with you.
- 5 But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, whither goest thou?
- 6 But because I have said such things unto you, your hearts are full of sorrow.
- 7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away, for if I go not away, that Comforter will not come unto you. but if I depart, I will send him unto you.
- 8 And when he is come, he will rebuke the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.
- 9 Of sin, because they believe not on me;
- 11 And of judgment, because the chief ruler of this world is judged already.
- 12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them away now.
- 13 Howbeit when he, is come (I mean the Spirit of truth), he will lead you into all truth. He shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come.
- 14 He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall show unto you.
- 15 All things that the Father hath are mine. Therefore said I unto you, that he shall take of mine, and show unto you.
- 16 After a while, ye shall not see me: and again, after a while,

John 16:17

That your joy may be full

ye shall see me for I go to the Father.

- 17 Then said some of his disciples between themselves what is this that he saith unto us, after a while, ye shall not see me: and again after a while ye shall see me? and that I go to the Father.
- 18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, after a while? we cannot tell what he saith.
- 19 Jesus perceived that they would ask him, and said unto them, This is it that ye inquire of between yourselves that I said, After a while, ye shall not see me: and again, after a while, ye shall see me.
- 20 Verily Verily I say unto you, Ye shall weep and lament and the world shall rejoice. Ye shall sorrow, but your sorrow shall be turned to joy.
- 21 A woman when she travaileth hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembreth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.
- 22 And ye now are in sorrow: but I will see you again, and Your hearts shall rejoice, and your joy shall no man take from you.
- 23 And in that day shall ye ask me no question. Verily Verily I say unto you, whatsoever ye shall ask the father in my name, he will give it you.
- 24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name. Ask, and ye shall receive it, that your joy may be full.
- 25 These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs. The time will come, when I shall no more speak to you in proverbs, but I shall show you plainly from my Father.
- 26 At that day shall ye ask in mine name. and I say not unto you, that I will speak unto my Father for you:
- 27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.
- 28 I went out from the Father, and came into the world: and I leave the world again, and go to the Father.

As many as thou hast given him

John 17:9

- 29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and thou speakest no proverb.
- 30 Now know we that thou understandeth all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee any question. therefore believe we that thou camest from God.
- 31 Jesus answered them, now ye do believe.
- 32 Behold, the hour draweth nigh, and is already come, that ye shall be scattered, every man his way and shall leave me alone. and yet am I not alone. for the Father is with me.
- 33 These words have I spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. For in the world shall ye have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

CHAPTER 17

THESE words Spake Jesus, and lifted his eyes to heaven and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that Son may glorify thee:

- 2 As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.
- 3 This is life eternal that they might know thee that only very God and whom thou hast sent Jesus Christ.
- 4 I have glorified thee on the earth. I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do
- 5 And now, glorify thou me Father, with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.
- 6 I have declared thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy sayings.
- 7 Now they know that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee.
- 8 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and t hey have received them, and know surely that I came out from thee, and do believe that thou didst send me.
- 9 I pray for them: and pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me, for they are thine.

John 17:10

Sanctified through the truth

- 10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.
- 11 And now am I no more in the world, but they are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep in thine own name those which thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.
- 12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me have I kept, and none of them is lost, but that lost child of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.
- 13 Now come I to thee; and these words speak I in the world, that they might have my joy full in them.
- 14 I have given them thy words; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.
- 15 I desire not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou keep them from evil.
- 16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world.
- 17 Sanctify them with thy truth. thy saying is truth.
- 18 As thou didst send me into the world, even so have I sent them into the world
- 19 And for their sakes sanctify I myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.
- 20 I pray not for them alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their preaching;
- 21 that they all may be one, as thou father art in me, and I in thee that they may be also one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.
- 22 And that glory that thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, as we are one.
- 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

Whom seek ye John 18:10

24 Father, I will that they, which thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may see my glory, which thou hast given me. for thou lovedst me before the making of the world.

25 O righteous Father, the very world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

26 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me be in them, and that I be in them.

CHAPTER 18

WHEN Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, with his disciples.

- 2 Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus often times resorted thither with his disciples.
- 3 Judas then, after he had received a band of men and ministers of the high priests and Pharisees, came thither with lanterns, and firebrands, and weapons
- 4 Then Jesus knowing all thinges that should come on him, went forth, and said unto them: whom seek ye?
- 5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus said unto them, I am he. Judas also which betrayed him stood with them.
- 6 But as soon as he had said unto them I am he, they went backward and fell to the ground.
- 7 And he asked them again: whom seek ye? They said, Jesus of Nazareth.
- 8 Jesus answered I said unto you I am he. If ye seek me let these go their way.
- 9 That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, of these which thou gavest me, have I not lost one.
- 10 Simon Peter had a sword drew it and smote the high priests

John 18:11

Peters first denial

servant and cut off his right ear. The servants name was Malchus.

- 11 Then said Jesus unto Peter, put up thy sword into the sheath: shall I not drink of the cup which my Father hath given me?
- 12 Then the company, and the captain, and the ministers of of the Jews, took Jesus and bound him
- 13 and led him away to Anna first, for he was father in law unto Caiaphas which was the high priest that same year.
- 14 Caiaphas was he that gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.
- 15 And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and another disciple, that disciple was known of the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest.
- 16 But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple which was known unto the high priest and spake to the damsel that kept the door, and brought in Peter.
- 17 Then said the damsel that kept the door unto Peter, Art not thou one of this man's disciples? He saith, I am not.
- 18 The servants and the ministers stood there, and had made a fire of coals; for it was cold: and they warmed themselves. Peter also stood among them, and warmed himself.
- 19 The high priest asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.
- 20 Jesus answered him: I spake openly in the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither all the Jews resorted; and in secret have I said nothing.
- 21 Why askest thou me? Ask them which heard me, what I said unto them. behold, they can tell what I said. Ye seek me, let these go their way.
- 22 When he had thus spoken, one of the ministers which stood by smote Jesus on the face, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so?

Peterssecond and third denial

John 19:10

- 23 Jesus answered him, If I have evil spoken, bear witness of the evil: if I have well spoken, why smitest thou me?
- 24 And Annas sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.
- 25 Simon Peter stood and warmed himself. And they said unto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denied it, and said, I am not.
- 26 One of the servants of the high priest, his cousin whose ear Peter smote off, said unto him, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?
- 27 Peter denied it again: and immediately the cock crew.
- 28 Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas into the hall of judgment. It was in the morning; and they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the paschal lamb.

CHAPTER 19

WHEN Pilate took Jesus, and scourged him. 2 And. and they put on him a purple garment,

- 3 And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote him on the face.
- 4 Pilate went forth again, and said unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him.
- 5 Then came Jesus forth, wearing a crown of thorns, and a robe of purple. And Pilate saith unto them, Behold the man.
- 6 When the high Priests and ministers saw him they cried saying crucify him crucify him. Pilate said unto them. Take ye him, and crucify him: for I find no cause in him.
- 7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.
- 8 When Pilate heard that saying, he was the more afraid;
- 9 And went again into the judgment hall, and said unto Jesus, whence art thou? But Jesus gave him none answer.
- 10 Then said Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee?

John 19:11

Behold your king

- 11 Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above. Therefore he that delivered me unto thee is more in sin.
- 12 And from thenceforth sought Pilate means to release him: but the Jews cried, saying, If thou let him go, thou art not Caesars friend. for whosoever maketh himself a king is against Caesar.
- 13 When Pilate heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down to give sentence in a place called the pavement, but in the Hebrew tongue, Gabbatha.
- 14 It was the sabbath even which falleth in the passover feast, and about the sixth hour. And he said unto the Jews, Behold your king.
- 15 They cried away with him away with him crucify him. Pilate said unto them, Shall I crucify your king? The high priests answered, We have no king but Caesar.
- 16 Then delivered he him unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led him away.
- 17 And he bearing his cross and went forth into a place called the place of dead men's skulls, which is named in Hebrew Golgotha.
- 18 Where they crucified him, and two others with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the middle.
- 19 And Pilate wrote his title, and put it on the cross. The writing was, JESUS OF NAZERETH KING OF THE JEWS
- 20 This title read many of the Jews. for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city and it was written in Hebrew, Greek, [and] Latin.
- 21 Then said the high priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, king of the Jews; but that he said, I am king of the Jews.
- 22 Pilate answered, What I have written that have I written.
- 23 Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and

Behold thy mother

John 19:35

also his coat. The coat was without seam, wrought upon throughout.

- 24 And they said one to another, Let us not divide it, but cast Lots who shall have it That the scripture might be fulfilled which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and on my coat did cast lots. And the soldiers did such things indeed.
- 25 There stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister
- 26 When Jesus saw his mother, and the disciple standing, whom he loved, he said unto his mother, woman behold thy son.
- 27 Then saith he to the disciple Behold thy mother, And from that hour the disciple took her for his own.
- 28 After that, when Jesus perceived that all things were now performed, that the scripture might be fulfilled, he said, I thirst.
- 29 There stood a vessel full of vinegar by. And they filled asponge with vinegar, and wound it about with hyssop and put it to his mouth.
- 30 As soon as Jesus had received of the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.
- 31 The Jews then, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day, (for that sabbath day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken down.
- 32 Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with Jesus.
- 33 But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs:
- 34 But one of the soldiers with a spear thrust him into the side, and forthwith came there out blood and water
- 35 And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true. And He knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe also.

John 19:36

Together in a placeby itself

- 36 These things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled; Ye shall not break a bone of him.
- 37 And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.
- 38 After that Joseph of Arimathaea, which was a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, besought Pilate that he might take down the body of Jesus. And Pilate gave him license.
- 39 And there came also Nicodemus which at the beginning came to Jesus by night, and brought of myrrh and aloes mingled together, about an hundred pound weight
- 40 Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.
- 41 And in the place where Jesus was crucified was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulcher, wherein was never man laid.
- 42 There laid they Jesus because of the Jews preparation day; for the sepulcher was nigh at hand.

CHAPTER 20

- THE morrow after the sabbath day came Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulcher, and saw the stone taken away from the tomb.
- 2 Then she ran, and came to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and said unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the tomb, and we cannot tell where they have laid him.
- 3 Peter went forth, and that other disciple, and came unto the sepulcher.
- 4 They ran both together: and that other disciple did out run Peter, and came first to the sepulcher.
- 5 And he stooped down, and saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in.
- 6 Then came Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulcher, and saw the linen clothes lie,

Mary John 20:20

- 7 And the napkin, that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself.
- 8 Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulcher, and he saw, and believed.
- 9 For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he should rise again from death.
- 10 And the disciples went away again unto their own home.
- 11 Mary stood with out at the sepulcher weeping, And as she wept, she bowed herself into the sepulcher,
- 12 And saw two angels in white sitting the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where they had laid the body of Jesus.
- 13 And they said unto her: woman why weepest thou? She saith unto them, For they have taken away my lord and I wot not where they have laid him.
- 14 When she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.
- 15 Jesus said unto her: woman why weepest thou? Whom seekest thou? She supposing that he had been the gardener, said unto him. Sir if thou have borne him hence tell me where thou hast laid him that I may fetch him.
- 16 Jesus saith unto her: Mary. She turned herself and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say master.
- 17 Jesus saith unto her, touch me not, for I am not yet ascended to my father. But go to my brethren and say unto them I ascend unto my Father and your Father, to my God and your God.
- 18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the lord, and that he had spoken such things unto her.
- 19 The same day at night, which was the morrow after the Sabbath day when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled together for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, peace be with you. 20And when he had so said, he shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

John 20:21

My Lord and my God

- 21 Then said Jesus to them again, peace be with you. As my Father sent me, even so send I you.
- 22 And when he said those words, he breathed on them and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost.
- 23 Whosesoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.
- 24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.
- 25 The other disciples said unto him, we have seen the Lord. And he said unto them, except I see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger in the holes of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.
- 26 And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. Then came Jesus, when the doors were shut, and stood in the middle, and said, Peace be with you.
- 27 After that said he to Thomas, Bring thy finger hither, and see my hands; and bring thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing.
- 28 Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.
- 29 Jesus said unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, therefore thou believest: Happy are they that have not seen, and yet believe.
- 30 And many other signs did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book.
- 31 These are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is Christ, the Son of God; and that in believing ye might have life through his name.

CHAPTER 21

A FTER that Jesus showed himself again at the sea of Tiberias. And on this wise showed he himself.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, which is called Didamus, and Nathanael of Cana, acity of Galilee and

The world could not contain

John 21:15

the sons of Zebedee, and two other of the disciples.

- 3 Simon Peter said unto them, I go a fishing. They said unto him, we also will go with thee. They went their way, and entered into a ship straight way; and that night caught they nothing.
- 4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: nevertheless the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.
- 5 Jesus said unto them, Sirs have ye any meat? They answered him, No
- 6 And he said unto them, cast out the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast out, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes
- 7 Then said the disciple, whom Jesus loved unto Peter, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he gird his mantel to him, (for he was naked) and sprang into the sea.
- 8 The other disciples came by ship; for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits, and they drew the net with fishes.
- 9 As soon as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals, and fish laid thereon, and bread.
- 10 Jesus said unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.
- 11 Simon Peter stepped forth, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty and three. and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.
- 12 Jesus said unto them, Come and dine. and none of the disciples durst ask him, who art thou? for they knew that it was the Lord
- 13 Jesus then came, and took bread, and gave them, and fish
- 14 And this is now the third time that Jesus appeared to his disciples, after that he was risen again from death.
- 15 When they had dined, Jesus said to Simon Peter, Simon Joanna, lovest thou me more than these? He said unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He said unto him,

John 21:16

The world could nt contain

feed my lambs.

16 He said unto him the second time Simon Joanna lovest thou me? and Peter said thou knowest all things and knowest that I that I love thee. He said unto him, Feed my sheep.

me? And Peter sorrowed because he said to him the third time, 17 He said unto him the third time, Simon Joanna, lovest thou me? And said thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus said unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily verily I say unto thee, when thou wast young thou girdedst thyself and walkest whither thou wouldest: but when thou art old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and lead thee whither thou wouldest not

19 Thus spake he signifying by what death he should glorify God And when he had said thus, he said to him, Follow me.

20 Peter turned about, and saw that disciple whom Jesus loved following: which also leaned on his breast at supper and said Lord which is he that shall betray thee?

- 21 When Peter saw him he said to Jesus what shall he here do?
- 22 Jesus said unto him, if I will have him tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me.
- 23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren that that disciple should not die;

Yet Jesus said not to him he shall not die but if I will that he tarry till I come what is that to thee?

- 24 The same disciple is he, which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things. and we know that his testimony is true.
- 25 There are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written everyone, I suppose the world could not contain the books that should be written. Amen

And a cloud received him

Acts 1:13

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

- N the former treatise (Dear friend Theophilus) I have written of all that Jesus began to do and teach
- 2 Until the day in the which he was taken up after that he through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles which he had chosen:
- 3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many tokens, appearing unto them forty days, and speaking of the kingdom of God:
- 4 And gathered them together and commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem: but to wait for the promise of the Father whereof ye have heard of me.
- 5 For John baptized with water: but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost and that with in this few days.
- 6 When they were come together they asked of him saying: Lord wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?
- 7 And he said unto them: It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power:
- 8 But ye shall receive power, of the Holy Ghost which shall come on you. And ye shall be witnesses unto me in Jerusalem, and in all Jewry and in Samaria and even unto the worlds end.
- 9 And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him up out of their sight.
- 10 And while they looked steadfastly up to heaven as he went, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel
- 11 Which also said, ye men of Galilee why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come even as ye have seen him go into heaven.
- 12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem from mount Olivet, which is nigh to Jerusalem containg a Sabbath day's journey.
- 13 And when they were come in, they went up into a parlor,

Acts 1:14

His bishoprick let another take

where abode both Peter, and James, John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Mathew, James the son of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas Jame's son, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Mathew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas brother of James.

- 14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus 15 And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of names that were together were about an hundred and twenty)
- 16 Ye men and brethren, this scripture must have needs been fulfilled, which the Holy Ghost through the mouth of David spake before of Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus 17 For he was numbered with us, and had obtained fellowship, in this ministry.
- 18 And the same hath now purchased a plot of ground with the reward of iniquity, and when he was hanged burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.
- 19 And it is known unto all the inhabiters of Jerusalem; in so much that that field is called in their mother tongue, Aceldama that is to say, the blood field.
- 20 It is written in the book of Psalms: his habitation be void, and no man be dwelling therein: and his bishoprick let another take.
- 21 Wherefore of these men which have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,
- 22 Beginning at the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.
- 23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, (whose sir name was Justus) and Matthias.
- 24 And they prayed, saying: Thou Lord which knowest the hearts of all men shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,
- 25 That the one may take the room of this ministry and

In one accord together

Acts 2:12

apostleship, from the which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.

26 And they gave forth their lots and the lot fell on Mathias; and he was counted with the eleven apostles.

CHAPTER 2

HEN the fiftieth day was come, they were all with one accord together in one place.

- 2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as it had been the coming of a mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they sat.
- 3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as if they had been of fire, and it sat upon each of them:
- 4 And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, even as the Spirit gave them utterance.
- 5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, which were of all nations under heaven.
- 6 When this was noised about, the multitude came together, and were astonied because, that every man heard them speak his own tongue.
- 7 They wondered all and marveled saying among themselves: Behold are not all these which speak Galileans
- 8 And how hear we every man his own tongue, wherein we were born?
- 9 Parthians, Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, of Jewry, and of Cappadocia, of Pontus, and Asia
- 10 Phrygia, Pamphylia and of Egypt, and of the parts of Libya which is beside Cyrene. and strangers of Rome, Jews, and converts.
- 11 Greeks and Arabians, we have heard them speak with our own tongues the great works of God.
- 12 They were all amazed, and wondered saying one to another: what meaneth this?

Acts 2:13 Determinate counel and foreknoeledge of God

- 13 Others mocked them saying: they are full of new wine.
- 14 But Peter, stepped forth with the eleven, and lifted up his voice, and said unto them: Ye men of Jewry, and all ye that inhabit Jerusalem: be this known unto you, and with your ears hear my words:
- 15 These are not drunken as ye suppose: for it is yet but the third hour of the day.
- 16 But this is that which was spoken by the Prophet Joel;
- 17 It shall be in the last days, saith God: of my Spirit, I will pour out upon all flesh: and your sons and daughters shall prophesy and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:
- 18 And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out of my spirit; in those days and they shall prophesy: Heaven above, and tokens in the earth beneath;
- 19 And I will shew wonders in blood, and fire, and the vapor of smoke.
- 20 The sun shall be turned into darkness and the moon into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.
- 21 And it shall be, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.
- 22 Ye men of Israel hear these words. Jesus of Nazareth a man approved of God among you with miracles wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves know:
- 23 Him have ye taken by the hands of unrighteous persons after he was delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, and have crucified and slain,
- 24 Whom God hath raised up, and loosed the sorrows of death, because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.
- 25 For David speaketh of him: Aforehand I saw God always before me: for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved.
- 26 Therefore did my heart rejoice and my tongue was glad. moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope

Lord and Christ Acts 2:40

27 Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.

- 28 Thou hast shewed me the ways of life; and shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.
- 29 Men and brethren let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, for he is both dead and buried, and his sepulcher remaineth with us unto this day.
- 30 Therefore seeing he was a prophet and knew that God had sworn with an oath to him, that the fruit of his loins, should sit again in the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne;
- 31 He seeing this before and spake of the resurrection of Christ that his soul should not be left in hell, neither his flesh should see corruption.
- 32 This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.
- 33 Since now that he by the right hand of God is exalted, and hath received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear.
- 34 For David is not ascended into heaven: but he said. The Lord said to my Lord, sit on my right hand
- 35 Until I make thy foes thy footstool.
- 36 So therefore let all the house of Israel know for a surety, that God hath made the same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, Lord and Christ.
- 37 When they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and unto the other apostles: Ye men and brethren what shall we do?
- 38 Peter said unto them, repent, and be baptized everyone of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the ³²remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.
- 39 For the promise was made unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.
- 40 And with many other words bare he witness and exhorted,

³² not in order to, but because of remission of sins

Acts 2:41

Silver and gold have I none

them saying: Save yourselves from this untoward generation.

- 41 Then they that gladly received his preaching were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.
- 42 And they continued in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship and in breaking of bread, and in prayers
- 43 And fear came over every soul: and many wonders and signs were shewed by the apostles.
- 44 And all that believed kept themselves together, and had all things common;
- 45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.
- 46 And they, continued daily with one accord in the temple, and brake bread in every house, and did eat their meat together with gladness and singleness of heart,
- 47 Praising God, and had favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the congregation daily such as should be saved

CHAPTER 3

- **P**ETER and John went up together into the temple at the ninth hour of prayer.
- 2 And there was a certain man halt from his mother's womb whom they brought, and laid at the gate of the temple called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple.
- 3 Which same when he saw Peter and John that they would go into the temple desired to receive an alms.
- 4 And Peter fastened his eyes on him with John, and said: look on us.
- 5 And he gave heed unto them, trusting to receive something of them.
- 6 Then said Peter: Silver and gold have I none; such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk.
- 7 And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up: and

Who God raised from death

Acts 3:19

immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength.

- 8 And he sprang, stood, and also walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and ³³lauding God.
- 9 And all the people saw him walk and laud God.
- 10 And they knew him that it was he which sat and begged at the Beautiful gate of the temple: and they wondered and were sore astonied at that which had happened unto him.
- 11 And as the halt which was healed, held, Peter and John, all the people ran amazed unto them in Solomon's porch.
- 12 When Peter saw that, he answered unto the people. Ye men of Israel why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so steadfastly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to go?
- 13 The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered, and denied, in the presence of Pilate, when he had judged him to be loosed.
- 14 But ye denied the holy and just, and desired a murderer to be given you;
- 15 And killed the Lord of life, whom God hath raised from death; of the which we are witnesses.
- 16 And his name through the faith of his name hath made this man sound, whom ye see and know: and the faith, which is by him, hath given to him this health in the presence of you all.
- 17 And now brethren, I wot, well that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.
- 18 But those things, which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, how that Christ should suffer, he hath thus wise fulfilled.
- 19 Repent ye therefore, and turn, that your sins may be done away, when the time of refreshing cometh which we shall have of the presence of the Lord:

_

³³ Lauding that is praising God

Acts 3:20

For the time will come

- 20 And when God shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:
- 21 Whom, must heaven receive, until the time that all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets, since the world began, be restored again.
- 22 For Moses said unto the fathers: A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you even of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.
- 23 For the time will come, that every soul which shall not hear that same prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.
- 24 Also, all the prophets from Samuel and thenceforth as many as have spoken, have likewise told of these days.
- 25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God hath made unto our fathers, saying to Abraham, Even in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed
- 26 First, unto you hath God, raised up his Son Jesus, and him he hath sent to bless you, that everyone of you should turn, from your wickedness.

CHAPTER 4

A S they spake unto the people, the priests and the ruler of the temple, and the Sadducees, came upon them

- 2 taking it grievously that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from death.
- 3 And they laid hands on them and put them in hold until the next day: for it was now eventide.
- 4 How be it many of them which heard the word believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand.
- 5 And it came to pass on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and Scribes,
- 6 And Annas the chief Priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priests gathered together at Jerusalem

Neither is there salvation in any other

Acts 4:21

- 7 And set the other before them and asked: by what power or what name have ye done this sirs?
- 8 Then Peter, full of the Holy Ghost, said unto them: ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel,
- 9 If we this day are examined of the good deed done to the sick man, by what means he is made whole;
- 10 Be it known unto you all, and to the people of Israel, that in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth whom ye crucified, and whom God raised again from death: even by him doth this man stand here present before you whole.
- 11 This is the stone cast aside of you builders which is set in the chief place of the corner.
- 12 Neither is there salvation in any other: nor yet also is there any other name given to men wherein we must be saved.
- 13 When they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and understood that they were unlearned men and lay people, they marveled and they knew them that they were with Jesus:
- 14 And beholding also the man, which was healed standing with them, they could not say against it.
- 15 But they commanded them to go aside out of the council, and counseled among themselves
- 16 Saying: what shall we do to these men? for a manifest sign is done by them and is openly known to all them that dwell in Jerusalem; and we cannot deny it.
- 17 But that it be noised no farther among the people let us threaten and charge them that they speak henceforth to no man in this name.
- 18 And they called them, and commanded them that in no wise they should speak or teach in the name of Jesus.
- 19 But Peter and John answered unto them and said: whether it be right in the sight of God to obey you more than God, judge ye.
- 20 For we cannot but speak that which we have seen and heard.
- 21 So threatened they them and let them go, and found nothing

Acts 4:22

Why did the heathen rage

how to punish them because of the people. for all men lauded God for the miracle which was done:

- 22 For the man was above forty years old, on whom this miracle of healing was showed.
- 23 As soon as they were let go, they came to their fellows, and showed all that the high priests and elders had said to them.
- 24 And when they heard that, they lifted up their voices to God with one accord, and said: Lord thou art God which hast made heaven and earth, the sea and all that in them is,
- 25, Which by the mouth of thy servant David hast said: Why did the heathen rage and the people imagine vain things.
- 26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers came together against the Lord, and against his Christ
- 27 For of a truth against thy holy child whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and also Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, gathered themselves together,
- 28 For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy council determined before to be done.
- 29 And now, Lord behold their threatenings: and grant unto thy servants, with all confidence to speak thy word,
- 30 So that thou stretch forth thy hand that healing; and signs and wonders be done by the name of thy holy child Jesus.
- 31 And as soon as they had prayed the place moved where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God boldly.
- 32 And the multitude of them that believed was of one heart and of one soul: Also none of them said that any of the things, which he possessed, was his own: but had all things common.
- 33 And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was with them all.
- 34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many

Gave up the ghost

Acts 5:9

as were possessors of lands or houses sold them and brought the price of the things that were sold,

- 35 And laid it down at the apostles' feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.
- 36 And Joses, which was also called of the apostles Barnabas, (that is to say the son of consolation) being a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus
- 37 Had land and sold it. And laid the price down at the apostles' feet.

CHAPTER 5

A certain man named Ananias with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession

- 2 And kept away part of the price, (his wife also being of council) and brought a certain part, and laid it down at the apostles' feet.
- 3 Then said Peter: Ananias, how is it that Satan hath filled thine heart that thou shouldest lie unto the Holy Ghost, and keep away part of the price of the livelihood:
- 4 Pertained it not unto thee only, and after it was sold, was not the price in thine own power? how is it that thou hast conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.
- 5 When Ananias heard these words. he fell down and gave up the ghost. and great fear came on all them that heard these things.
- 6 And the young men rose up, and put him apart, and carried him out, and buried him.
- 7 And it came to pass as it were about the space of three hours after that, his wife, came in ignorant of that which was done.
- 8 And Peter said unto her: Tell me gave ye the land for so much? And she said: yea for so much
- 9 Then Peter said unto her: why have ye agreed together to

Acts 5:10

Step forth and speak in the temple

tempt the spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them, which have buried thy husband, are at the door, and shall carry thee out.

- 10 Then she fell down straight way at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and carried her out, and buried her by her husband.
- 11 And great fear came on the entire congregation and on as many as heard it.
- 12 By the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders shewed among the people; and they were all together with one accord in Solomon's porch.
- 13 And of others, durst no man join himself to them: nevertheless the people magnified them.
- 14 The number of them that believed in the Lord, both of men and women grew more and more:
- 15 Insomuch that they brought the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and pallets, that at the least way, the shadow of Peter when he came by might over shadow some of them.
- 16 There came also a multitude out of the cities roundabout unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed everyone.
- 17 Then the chief priest rose up, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadducees) and were full of indignation
- 18 And laid hands on the apostles and put them in the common prison.
- 19 But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said:
- 20 Go, step forth and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.
- 21 When they heard that, they entered into the temple early in Morning and taught But the chief priest came, and they that were with him, and called a council together, and all the elders

We are his record

Acts 5:35

of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to fetch them.

- 22 When the ministers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned and told,
- 23 Saying: the prison found we shut as sure as was possible, and the keepers standing without before the doors: but when we had opened, we found no man
- 24 When the chief priest of all and the ruler of the temple and the high priest heard these things they doubted of them where unto this would grow.
- 25 Then came one and shewed them: behold the men that ye put in prison stand in the temple and teach the people.
- 26 Then went the ruler of the temple with ministers and brought them without violence: for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned.
- 27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the council. And the chief priest asked them,
- 28 Saying: did not we straightly command you that ye should not teach in this name? And behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and ye intend to bring this man's blood upon us.
- 29 Peter and the other apostles answered and said: We ought more to obey God than men.
- 30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.
- 31 Him hath God lifted up with his right hand to be a ruler and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.
- 32 And we are his record concerning these things; and also the Holy Ghost whom God hath given to them that obey him.
- 33 When they heard that, they clave asunder: and sought means to slay them.
- 34 Then stood there up one in the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of law, had in authority among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles aside a little space.
- 35 And said unto them: Men of Israel, take heed to your selves

Acts 5:36

To strive against God

what ye intend to do as touching these men

36 Before these days rose up one Theudas, boasting himself, to whom resorted a number of men about a four hundred, which was slain, and they all which believed him, were scattered abroad, and brought to naught.

37 After this man, arose there up one Judas of Galilee in the time when tribute, began, and drew away much people after him: he also perished: and all even as many as harkened to him are scattered abroad.

38 And now I say unto you: refrain yourselves from these men, let them alone: for if the council or this work be of men, it will come to naught

- 39 But and if it be of God ye cannot destroy it; lest haply ye be found to strive against God.
- 40 And to him they agreed, and called the apostles and beat them and commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus and let them go.
- 41 And they departed from the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer rebuke for his name.
- 42 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not teaching and preaching Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER 6

In those days, as the number of the disciples grew, there arose a grudge among the Greeks against the Hebrews because their widows were despised in the daily ministration.

- 2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples together and said: it is not meet that we should leave the word of God, and serve at the tables.
- 3 Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, and full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, which we may appoint to this needful business.
- 4 But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministration of the word.

Deacons ordained

Acts 7:2

- 5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steven, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a convert of Antioch.
- 6 Which they set before the apostles: and they prayed and laid their hands on them.
- 7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.
- 8 And Steven, full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.
- 9 Then there arose certain of the synagogue which are called Libertines, and Cyrenians, and of Alexandria, and of Cilicia and Asia, and disputed with Steven.
- 10 And they could not resist the wisdom and the spirit with which he spake.
- 11 Then sent they in men, which said: we have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and against God.
- 12 And they moved the people, and the elders, and the scribes: and came upon him, and caught him, and brought him to the council
- 13 and brought forth false witnesses which said. This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law:
- 14 For we heard him say: this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the ordinances which Moses gave us
- 15 And all that sat in the council, looked steadfastly on him and saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.

CHAPTER 7

THEN said the chief priest: is it even so?
2 And he said: ye men, brethren, and fathers, hearken; The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, while he was yet in Mesopotamia before he dwelt in Charran.

Acts 7: 3

Stephen's bold message

- 3 And said unto him: come out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.
- 4 Then came he out of the land of Chaldaeans, and dwelt in Charran: and after that as soon as his father was dead he brought him into this land, in which ye now dwell
- 5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no, not the breadth of a foot: but promised that he would give it to him to possess, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child.
- 6 God verily spake on this wise, that his seed should be a dweller in a strange land and that they should keep them in bondage, and entreat them evil four hundred years.
- 7 But the nation to whom they shall be in bondage will I judge, said God: And after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place.
- 8 And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: And Abraham begat Isaac and circumcised him the eighth day and Isaac begat Jacob and Jacob the twelve patriarchs.
- 9 And the patriarchs having indignation sold Joseph into Egypt. And God was with him
- 10 And delivered him out of all his adversities. and gave him favor and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt which made him governor over Egypt and over all his household.
- 11 Then came there a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great affliction, that our fathers found no sustenance.
- 12 But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent our fathers first.
- 13 And at the second time Joseph was known of his brethren; and Joseph's kindred was made known unto Pharaoh.
- 14 Then sent Joseph, and caused his father Jacob to be brought, and all his kin, three score and fifteen souls.
- 15 And Jacob descended into Egypt, and died, both he and our fathers,
- 16 and were translated into Sychem and were put in the

In a flame of fire in a bush

Acts 7: 30

sepulcher that Abraham bought for money, of the sons of Emmor at Sychem.

- 17 When the time of the promise drew nigh, (which God had sworn to Abraham) the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,
- 18 Till another king arose which knew not of Joseph.
- 19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and evil entreated our fathers, and made them to cast out their young children, that they should not remain alive.
- 20 The same time was Moses born, and was a proper child, in the sight of God which was nourished up in his father's house three months.
- 21 When he was cast out, Pharaoh's daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son.
- 22 And Moses was learned in all manner wisdom of the Egyptians and was mighty in deeds and in words.
- 23 And when he was full forty years old it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.
- 24 And when he saw one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and avenged his quarrel that had the harm done to him, and smote the Egyptian.
- 25 For he supposed his brethren would have understood how that God by his hands should save them: but they understood not
- 26 And the next day he shewed himself unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one again saying: Sirs, ye are brethren: why hurt ye one another?
- 27 But he that did his neighbor wrong thrust him away saying: who made thee a ruler and a judge among us?
- 28 Wilt thou kill me as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday?
- 29 Then fled Moses at that saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian where he begat two sons.
- 30 And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sina an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

Acts 7:31

Solomon built hin an house

- 31 When Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight: And as he drew near to behold, the voice of the Lord came unto him:
- 32 [Saying] I am the God of thy father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob. Moses trembled, and durst not behold.
- 33 Then said the Lord to him: Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest is holy ground.
- 34 I have perfectly seen the affliction of my people, which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning and am come down to deliver them. And now come, and I will send thee into Egypt.
- 35 This Moses, whom they forsook, saying: who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same, God sent both a ruler and deliverer, by the hands of the angel, which appeared to him in the bush.
- 36 And the same brought them out, showing wonders and signs in Egypt, and in the Red Sea, and in the wilderness forty years.
- 37 This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel: A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you, of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear.
- 38 This is he that was in the congregation in the wilderness with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers. This man received the word of life to give unto us
- 39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but cast it from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt,
- 40 Saying unto Aaron: Make us gods to go before us:[for] this Moses, that brought us. out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him.
- 41 And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice unto the image, and rejoiced in the works of their own hands.
- 42 Then God turned himself, and gave them up that they should worship the stars of the sky; as it is written in the book of the prophets, O ye of the house of Israel gave ye to me sacrifices and meat offerings by the space of forty years in the wilderness?
- 43 And ye took unto you the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star

And I will translate you beyond Babylon.

Acts 7:58

of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them: 44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed speaking unto Moses that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen.

- 45 Which tabernacle our fathers received and brought it in with Joshua into the possession of the Gentiles, which God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the time of David, 46 Which found favour before God and desired that he might
- find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob. 47 But Solomon built him an house.
- 48 Howbeit he that is highest of all dwelleth not in temples made with hands, as saith the prophet:
- 49 Heaven is my seat, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build for me saith the Lord? Or what place is it that I should rest in?
- 50 Hath not my hand made all these things?
- 51 Ye stiffnecked and of uncircumcised hearts and ears: ye have allways resisted the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did so do ye.
- 52 Which of the prophets have not your father's persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of that just, whom ye have now betrayed and murdered.
- 53 And ye also have received a law by the ordinance of angels, and have not kept it.
- 54 When they heard these things, their hearts clave asunder, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.
- 55 But he being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly with his eyes into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God
- 56 And said: behold, I see the heavens open, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

Then they gave a shout with a loud voice, and stopped their ears and ran upon him all at once

58 And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the

Acts 7:59

Went everywhere preaching the word

witnesses laid down their clothes at the feet of a young man named saul

- 59 And they stoned Steven, calling on God, and saying: Lord Jesus, receive, my spirit
- 60 And he kneeled down and cried with a loud voice: Lord lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had thus spoken, he fell asleep.

CHAPTER 8

S AUL had pleasure in his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the congregation, which was at Jerusalem, and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Jewry and Samaria except the apostles

- 2 Then devout men dressed Steven and made great lamentation over him.
- 3 But Saul, made havock of the congregation, entering into every house and drew out both men and woman and thrust them into prison.
- 4 They that were scattered abroad, went everywhere preaching the word.
- 5 Then came Philip into a city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.
- 6 And the people gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, with one accord in that they heard and saw the miracles, which he did.
- 7 For unclean spirits crying with loud voice came out of many that were possessed of them: and many taken with palsies, and many that were halted, were healed.
- 8 And there was great Joy in that city.
- 9 And there was a certain man, called Simon, which beforetime in the same city used witchcraft, and bewitched the people of Samaria, saying that he was a man that could do great things
- 10 Whom they regarded, from the least to the greatest, saying: this fellow is the great power of God.
- 11 And much regard they set by him because of a long time with sorcery he had mocked them.

He offered them money

Acts 8:26

- 12 But as soon as they believed Philip's preaching of the kingdom of God, and of the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.
- 13 Then Simon himself believed also and was baptized, and continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were shewed.
- 14 When the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard say, that Samaria had received the word of God: they sent unto them Peter and John
- 15 Which when they were come, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost:
- 16 For as yet he was come on none of them: but they were baptized only in the name of Christ Jesus.
- 17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.
- 18 When Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles hands on them the Holy Ghost was given: he offered them money
- 20 Then said Peter unto him: thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be obtained with money.
- 21 Thou hast neither part nor fellowship in this business, for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.
- 22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedness and pray God, that the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.
- 23 For I perceive that thou art full of bitter gall, and wrapped in iniquity.
- 24 Then answered Simon, and said: Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken, fall on me.
- 25 And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned toward Jerusalem and preached the gospel in many cities of the Samaritans.
- 26 Then the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip sayings arise and go toward midday unto the way that goeth down from

Acts 8:27

Which was a chamberlain

Jerusalem unto Gaza which is desert.

- 27 And he arose and went on: and behold a man of Ethiopia, which was a chamberlain, and of great authority with Candace, queen of the Ethiopians and had the rule of all her treasure, came to Jerusalem for to pray.
- 28 And as he returned home, again sitting in his chariot he read Isaiah the prophet
- 29 Then the Spirit said unto Philip: Go near and join thy self to yonder chariot.
- 30 And Philip ran to him and heard him read the prophet Isaiah and said: understandeth thou what thou readest?
- 31 And he said: how can I except I had a guide? And he desired Philip that he would come up and sit with him.
- 32 The tenor of the scripture, which he read, was this, He was led as a sheep to be slain: and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth:
- 33 Because of his humbleness, he was not esteemed: who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.
- 34 The chamberlain answered Philip and said: I pray thee of whom speaketh the prophet this? Of himself, or of some other man?
- 35 And Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.
- 36 And as they went on their way, they came unto certain water: and the chamberlain said: See here is water what shall ³⁴let me to be baptized?
- 37 Philip said unto him: If thou believe with all thine heart, thou mayest. He answered and said: I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.
- 38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still: And they went down both into the water: both Philip and also the chamberlain
- 39 And as soon as they were come out of the water, the Spirit

³⁴ Let that is hinder

Why persecutes thou me

Acts 9:11

of the Lord caught away Philip, that the chamberlain saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and he walked throughout the country preaching in their cities, till he came to Caesarea.

CHAPTER 9

A ND Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord went unto the high priest,

- 2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues: that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.
- 3 But as he went on his Journey, it fortuned that he drew nigh to Damascus: and suddenly there shined roundabout him a light from heaven:
- 4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying to him: Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?
- 5 And he said who art thou Lord? And the Lord said I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it shall be hard for thee to kick against the pricks.
- 6 And he both trembling and astonied said: Lord what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him: arise and go into the city and it shall be told thee what thou shalt do.
- 7 The men which journeyed with him stood amazed, for they heard a voice, but saw no man.
- 8 And Saul arose from the earth; and opened his eyes but saw no man: then led they him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.
- 9 And he was three days without sight, and neither ate nor drank.
- 10 And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias and to him said the Lord in a vision: Ananias. And then he said: behold I am here, Lord.
- 11 And the Lord said to him: arise and go into the street which is called straight and seek in the house of Judas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold he prayeth

Acts 9:12

Affirming that this was very Christ

- 12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias coming in, to him and putting his hands on him, that he might receive his sight.
- 13 Then Ananias answered: Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem:
- 14 And here he hath authority of the high priest to bind all that call on thy name.
- 15 The Lord said unto him: Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles and kings, and the children of Israel.
- 16 For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my names sake.
- 17 Ananias went his way, and entered into the house; and put his hands on him and said: Brother Saul the Lord that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightiest receive thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost
- 18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight, and arose, and was baptized.
- 19 And received meat and was comforted. Then was Saul a certain days with the disciples which were at Damascus.
- 20 And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, how that he was the Son of God.
- 21 All that heard him were amazed and said: is not this he that spoiled them which called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for the intent that he should bring them bound unto the high priest?
- 22 But Saul increased, in strength and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, affirming that this was very Christ.
- 23 And after a good while, the Jews took council together, to kill him.
- 24 But their laying await was known of Saul. And they watched at the gates day and night to kill him.
- 25 Then the disciples took him by night and put him through

Dorcas was sick and died

Acts 9:38

the wall and let him down in a basket.

- 26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to couple himself with the disciples and they were all afraid of him and believed not that he was a disciple.
- 27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and declared to them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and had spoken with him: and how he had done boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus
- 28 And he had his conversation with them at Jerusalem
- 29 And quit himself boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus. And he spake and disputed with the Greeks: and they went about to slay him.
- 30 But when the brethren knew of that, they brought him to Caesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.
- 31 Then had the congregations rest throughout all Jewry and Galilee and Samaria, and were edified; and walked in the fear of the Lord, and multiplied by the comfort of the Holy Ghost.
- 32 And it came to pass that as Peter walked throughout all quarters he came to the saints which dwelt at Lydda
- 33 And there he found a certain man named AEneas, which had kept his bed eight years, sick of the palsy.
- 34 Then said Peter unto him: AEneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole. Arise and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.
- 35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron saw him and turned to the Lord.
- 36 There was at Joppa a certain woman (which was a disciple named Tabitha which by interpretation is called Dorcas:) the same was full of good works and alms deeds, which she did.
- 37 And it chanced in those days that she was sick, and died. when they had washed her and laid her in a chamber:
- 38 Because Lydda was nigh to Joppa and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him, desiring him, that he would not be grieved to come unto them.

Acts 9:39

What thou oughtest to do

- 39 Peter arose and came with them and when he was come, they brought him into the chamber: and all the widows stood roundabout him weeping and showing the coats and garments which Dorcas had made while she was with them,
- 40 And Peter put them all forth and kneeled down and prayed and turned him to the body, and said Tabitha arise. And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter she sat up.
- 41 And he gave her the hand and lift her up, and called the saints and widows, and showed her alive.
- 42 And it was known throughout all Joppa; and many believed on the Lord.
- 43 And it came to pass, that he tarried many days with one Simon a tanner

CHAPTER 10

- THERE was a certain man in Caesarea called Cornelius, a captain of the soldiers of Italy,
- 2 A devout man, and one that feared God with all his household which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God always.
- 3 The same man saw in a vision evidently about the ninth hour of the day an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him: Cornelius.
- 4 When he looked on him, he was afraid and said: what is it Lord? He said unto him. Thy prayers and thy alms are come up into remembrance before God.
- 5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon named also Peter.
- 6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the seaside. He shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.
- 7 When the angel which spake with Cornelius was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout soldier of them that waited on him;
- 8 And told them all the matter and sent them to Joppa.
- 9 On the morrow as they went on their journey, and drew nigh

Get thee down and go with them

Acts 10:23

unto the city, Peter went up into the top of the house to pray about the sixth hour:

- 10 Then waxed he an hungered, and would have eaten. But while they made ready, he fell into a trance,
- 11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel come down unto him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and was let down to the earth:
- 12 Wherein were all manner of four footed beasts of the earth, and vermin, and worms, and fouls of the air.
- 13 And there came a voice to him: Rise, Peter, kill, and eat.
- 14 But Peter said: God forbid Lord; for I have never eaten anything that is common or unclean
- 15 And the voice spake unto him again the second time: what God hath cleansed, that make thou not common.
- 16 This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.
- 17 While Peter mused in himself what this vision which he had seen meant, behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius had made inquiry for Simons house and stood before the door.
- 18 And one called out, and asked whether Simon, which was also called Peter were lodged there.
- 19 While Peter thought on this vision the spirit said unto him: behold, men seek thee:
- 20 Arise therefore get thee down and go with them and doubt not, for I have sent them.
- 21 Peter went down to the men which were sent unto him from Cornelius and said Behold, I am he whom ye seek: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?
- 22 And they said unto him: Cornelius the captain, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the people of the Jews, was warned by an holy angel to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.
- 23 Then called he them in, and lodged them. And on the morrow Peter went away with them and certain brethren from

Acts 10:24

We are all here present before God

Joppa accompanied him.

- 24 And the third day entered they into Caesarea. And Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and special friends.
- 25 And as it chanced, Peter to come in, Cornelius met him and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.
- 26 But Peter took him up, saying: stand up: for even I myself am a man.
- 27 And as he talked with him, he came in and found many that were come together
- 28 And he said unto them: Ye do know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to company, or come unto an ³⁵alien: but God hath shewed me that I should not call any man common or unclean:
- 29 Therefore came I unto you without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent have ye sent for me?
- 30 And Cornelius said: This day now four days I fasted, and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house: and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,
- 31 And said: Cornelius thy prayer is heard, and thine alms deeds are had in remembrance in the sight of God.
- 32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call for Simon, which is also called Peter; He is lodged in the house of one Simon a tanner by the seaside; the which as soon as he is come, shall speak unto thee.
- 33 Then sent I for thee immediately; and thou hast well done for to come. Now are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded unto thee of God.
- 34 Then Peter opened his mouth and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is not partial.
- 35 But in all people he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.

³⁵ Alien one not a Jw

Him God raised up the third day

Acts 11:1

- 36 Ye know the preaching that God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (which is Lord over all things).
- 37 Which preaching was published throughout all Jewry and began in Galilee after the baptism which John preached
- 38 How God had anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power; which Jesus went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil, for God was with him.
- 39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did in the land of the Jews and at Jerusalem, whom they slew, and hanged on a tree.
- 40 Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly,
- 41 Not to all the people but unto us witnesses chosen before of God which ate and drank with him, after he arose from death
- 42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people and testify, that it is he that is ordained of God a judge of quick and dead.
- 43 To him give all the Prophets witness, that through his name, shall receive remission of sins, all that believe in him.
- 44 While Peter yet spake these words the Holy Ghost fell on all them, which heard the preaching.
- 45 And they of the circumcision, which believed, were astonied, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also, was shed out the gifts of the Holy Ghost.
- 46 For they heard them speak with tongues and magnify God. Then answered Peter:
- 47 Can any man forbid water that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?
- 48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him, to tarry a few days.

CHAPTER 11

A ND the Apostles and the brethren that were throughout heard said that the heathen had also received the word of

Acts 11:2

Peter slay and eat

God.

- 2And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they of the circumcision reasoned with him,
- 3 Saying: Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and eatest with them.
- 4 Then Peter began and expounded the thing in order to them saying:
- 5 I was in the city of Joppa praying: and in a trance I saw a vision, a certain vessel descended, as it had been a large linen cloth, let down from heaven by the four corners; and it came to me.
- 6 Unto the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered and saw fourfooted beasts of the earth, and vermin, and worms, and fouls of the air.
- 7 And I heard a voice saying unto me: arise Peter slay and eat.
- 8 And I said: God forbid, Lord, for nothing common or unclean hath at any time entered into my mouth.
- 9 But the voice answered me again from heaven, count not thou those things common, which God hath cleansed.
- 10 And this was done three times: and all were taken up again into heaven.
- 11 And behold, immediately there were three men come unto the houses where I was, sent from Caesarea unto me.
- 12 And the Spirit said unto me that I should go with them, without doubting. Moreover the six brethren accompanied me: and we entered into the man's house.
- 13 And he shewed us. how he had seen an angel in his house which stood and said to him: Send men to Joppa and call for Simon named also Peter:
- 14 he shall tell thee words whereby both thou and all thine house shall be saved
- 15 And as I began to preach, the Holy Ghost fell on them, as he did on us at the beginning.
- 16 Then came to my remembrance the words of the Lord how

Granted repentance unto life

Acts 11:28

he said: John baptized with water but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.

17 For as much then as God gave them like gifts as he did unto us, when we believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I that I should have withstood God?

18 when they heard this, they held their peace and glorified God saying: then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

19 They which were scattered abroad through the affliction that arose about Steven, walked throughout till they came unto Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to no man but unto the Jews only.

20 Some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, which when they were come into Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, and preached the Lord Jesus.

- 21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed and turned unto the Lord.
- 22 Tidings of these things came unto the ears of the congregation, which was in Jerusalem, and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go unto Antioch.
- 23 Which when he was come, and had seen the grace of God, was glad and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would continually cleave unto the Lord.
- 24 For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.
- 25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus for to seek Saul.
- 26 And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass that a whole year they had their conversation with the congregation there and taught much people in so much that the disciples at Anticoh were were the first that were called christians.
- 27 In those days came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch.
- 28 And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit that there should be great dearth

Acts 11:29

The gate opened of his own accord

throughout all the world which come to pass in the Emperor Claudius' days

29 Then the disciples every man according to his ability, purposed to send succor unto the brethren that dwelt in Jewry, 30 Which thing they also did and sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul

CHAPTER 12

N that time Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the congregation.

- 2 And he killed James the brother of John with the sword:
- 3 And because he saw that it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further and took Peter also. (Then were the days of sweet bread.)
- 4 And when he had caught him, he put him in prison and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to be kept intending after ³⁶Easter to bring him forth to the people.
- 5 Then was Peter kept in prison: but prayer was made without ceasing of the congregation unto God for him.
- 6 And when Herod would have brought him out, unto the people the same night Peter slept between two soldiers, bound with two chains: and the keepers before the door kept the prison
- 7 And, behold, the angel of the Lord was there present, and a light shined in the lodge. and smote Peter on the side, and stirred him up, saying, arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands
- 8 And the angel said unto him: gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals. And so he did. And he said unto him, cast thy mantle about thee and follow me.
- 9 And he came out, and followed him; and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel; but thought he had seen a vision.
- 10 When they were past the first and the second watch, they

³⁶ Easter spoken of as feast of sweet bread or as passover

-

Gathered together in prayer

Acts 12:21

came unto that iron gate that leadeth unto the city; which opened to them by his own accord, And they went out, and passed through one street and by and anon the angel departed from him.

- 11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod and from all the waiting of the people of the Jews.
- 12 And as he considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of one John, which was called Mark; also where many were gathered together in prayer.
- 13 As Peter knocked at the entry door, a damsel came forth to hearken, named Rhoda.
- 14 And when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the entry for gladness, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the entry.
- 15 And they said unto her: Thou art mad. And she bare them down that it was even so, Then said they, it is his angel
- 16 Peter continued knocking: when they had opened the door, and saw him they were astonied.
- 17 And he beckoned unto them with the hand to hold their peace, and told them by what means the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And said: go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed and went into another place.
- 18 As soon as it was day there was no little ado among the soldiers, what was become of Peter.
- 19 When Herod had called for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers and commanded to depart. And he descended from Jewry to Caesarea, and there abode.
- 20 Herod was displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: And they came all at once and made intercession unto Blastus the kings chamberlain and desired peace, because their country was nourished by the king's land.
- 21 And upon a day appointed, Herod, arrayed himself in royal

Acts 12:22

Separate me Barnabas and Paul

apparel, and set him in his seat, and made an oration unto them.

- 22 And the people gave a shout, [saying] it is the voice of a god, and not of a man.
- 23 And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the honour and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.
- 24 And the word of God grew and multiplied.
- 25 And Barnabas and Paul returned to Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled their office, and took with them John which was also called Marcus

CHAPTER 13

- THERE were at Antioch in the congregation certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, Herod the tetrarch's, ³⁷ nurse fellow and Saul.
- 2 As they ministered to the Lord and fasted, the Holy Ghost said: separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work where unto I have called them.
- 3 Then fasted they and prayed, and put their hands on them, and let them go.
- 4 And they after they were sent of the Holy Ghost, came unto Seleucia and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.
- 5 And when they were come to Salamis they shewed the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews and they had John to their minister.
- 6 When they had gone throughout the isle unto the city of Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, which was a Jew named Barjesus,
- 7 Which was with the ruler of the country, one Sergius Paulus, a prudent; man. The same ruler called unto him, Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God.

.

³⁷ nurse fellow, that is grew up with Herod

Pervert the straight ways of the Lord

Acts 13:20

- 8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so was his name byinterpretation) withstood them, and sought to turn away the ruler from the faith.
- 9 Then Saul, which also is called Paul, being full of the Holy Ghost, set his eyes on him
- 10 And said: O full of all subtlety and deceitfulness the child of the devil, and the enemy of all righteousness, thou ceasest not to pervert the straight ways of the Lord.
- 11 And now, Behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee and thou shalt be blind, and shall not see the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and darkness; and he went about seeking them that should lead him by the hand.
- 12 Then when the ruler saw what had happened he believed, and wondered at the doctrine of the Lord.
- 13 When they that were with Paul, were departed by ship, from Paphos, they came to Perga a city of Pamphylia: and there John departed from them and returned to Jerusalem.
- 14 But they wandered through the countries from Perga, to Antioch a city of the country of Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and sat down.
- 15 And the rulers of the synagogue after the law and the prophets were read the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them saying: Ye men and brethren if ye have any sermon to exhort for the people say on.
- 16 Then Paul stood up and beckoned with the hand and said: Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience.
- 17 The God of this people chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with a mighty arm brought them out of it,
- 18 And about the time of forty years suffered he their manners in the wilderness.
- 19 And he destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, and divided their land to them by lot.
- 20 And afterward he gave unto them judges about the space of

A cts 13:21

A man after mine own heart

four hundred and fifty years unto the time of Samuel the prophet.

- 21 And after that they desired a king, and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years.
- 22 And after he had put him down, he set up David to be their king, of whom he reported saying. I have found David the son of Jesse a man after mine own heart, he shall fulfill all my will.
- 23 Of this man's seed, hath God (according to his promise) brought forth to the people of Israel, a Saviour one Jesus
- 24 When John had first preached before his coming, the baptism of repentance to Israel.
- 25 And when Iohn had fulfilled his course, he said. whom ye think that I am, the same am I not. But behold there cometh one after me whose shoes of his feet I am not worthy to loose.
- 26 Ye men and brethren children of the generations of Abraham and whosoever among you feareth God to you is this word of salvation sent.
- 27 The inhibiters of Jerusalem and their rulers, because they knew him, not nor yet the voices of the Prophets which are read every Sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning him.
- 28 And when they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate to kill him.
- 29 And when they had fulfilled all that were written of him, they took him down from the tree, and put him in a sepulcher.
- 30 But God raised him again from death:
- 31Aand he was seen many days of them which came with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, which are his witnesses unto the people.
- 32 And we declare unto you how that the promise made unto the fathers
- 33 God hath fulfilled unto us their children, in that he raised up Jesus again; even as it is written in the second psalm: Thou

Preached unto you the forgiveness of sin

Acts 13:46

art my Son this same dayhave I begat thee

- 34 As concerning that he raised him up from death, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, I will give you the holy things of David, I will faithfully give them unto you
- 35 Wherefore, he saith also in another place. Thou shalt not suffer thine holy to see corruption.
- 36 Howbeit David, after he had in his time fulfilled the will of God, he slept and was laid with his fathers and saw corruption.
- 37 But he whom God raised again, saw no corruption.
- 38 Be it known unto you therefore ye men and brethren that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sin
- 39 And that by him, all that believe are justified from all things, from the which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses
- 40 Beware therefore lest that fall on you, which is spoken of in the prophets:
- 41 Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish ye: for I do a work in your days, which ye shall not believe, if a man would declare it you.
- 42 When they were come out of the Synagogue, of the Jews the Gentiles besought that they would preach the word to them between the sabbath days.
- 43 When the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and virtuous converts followed Paul and Barnabas: which spake to them, and exhorted them to continue in the grace of God.
- 44 And the next sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God.
- 45 When the Jews saw the people, they were full of indignation and spake against those things, which were spoken of Paul, speaking against it and railing on it.
- 46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said: it was meet that the word of God should first have been preached to

Acts 13:47

Aquitted themselves boldly

you. but seeing ye put it from you, and think yourselves unworthy of everlasting life: lo we turn to the Gentiles.

- 47 For so hath the Lord commanded us: saying, I have made thee a light to the Gentiles, that thou be salvation unto the end of the world.
- 48 The Gentiles heard and were glad and glorified the word of the Lord: and believed even as many as were ³⁸ ordained to eternal Life believed.
- 49 and the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region
- 50 But the Jews moved the worshipful and honorable women, and the chief men of the city and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas and expelled them out of their coasts.
- 51 And they shook off the dust off their feet against them and came unto Iconium.
- 52 And the disciples were filled with joy and with the Holy Ghost

CHAPTER 14

And it came to pass in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Jews and also of the Grecians believed.

- 2 But the unbelieving Jews stirred up and unquieted the minds of the Gentiles, against the brethren.
- 3 Long time abode they there, and acquitted themselves boldly, with the help of the Lord which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and caused signs and wonders to be done by their hands.
- 4 The people of the city were divided: and part held with the Jews and part with the apostles.
- 5 When there was assault made both of the gentiles and also of the Jews with their rulers to put them to shame and to stone them

³⁸ Ordained That is Chosen

Sirs why do you do this

Acts 14:19

- 6 Then they were aware of it and fled unto Listra and Derby cities of Lycaonia unto the region that lieth round about:
- 7 And there preached the gospel.
- 8 And there sat a certain man at Lystra weak in his feet being crippled from his mothers womb and never walked.
- 9 The same heard Paul preach. Which beheld him and perceived that he had faith to be whole
- 10 And said with a loud voice: stand upright on thy feet. And he stood up and walked.
- 11 And when the people saw what Paul had done they lifted up their voices saying in the speech of Lycaonia: gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.
- 12 And they called Barnabas Jupiter and Paul Mercurius because he was the preacher.
- 13 Then Jupiter's priest which dwelt before their city brought oxen and garlands unto the ³⁹church porch and would have done sacrifice with the people.
- 14 But when the Apostles Barnabas and Paul heard that they rent their clothes and ran in among the people crying
- 15 And saying: sirs why do ye this? We are mortal men like unto you and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God which made heaven and earth and the sea and all that in them is:
- 16 The which in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways.
- 17 Nevertheless he left not himself without witness in that he shewed his benefits in giving us rain from heaven and fruitful seasons filling our hearts with food and gladness
- 18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.
- 19 Thither came certain Jews from Antioch and Iconium, and obtained the peoples consent, and stoned Paul, and drew him out of the city supposing he had been dead.

-

³⁹ That is the temple's porch

Acts 14:20 Opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles

20 How be it as the disciples stood roundabout him, he arose up and came into the city: And the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

- 21 After they had preached to that city and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioch,
- 22 And strengthened the disciples souls, exhorting them to continue in the faith, affirming that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.
- 23 And when they had ordained them elders by election in every Congregation, after they had prayed and fasted, they commended them to God, on whom they believed.
- 24 And they went throughout Pisidia, and came into Pamphylia.
- 25 And when they had preached the word of God in Perga, they descended into Attalia
- 26 And thence departed by ship to Antioch, from whence they were delivered unto the grace of God to the work, which they had fulfilled.
- 27 When they were come, and had gathered the congregation together, they Rehearsed all that God had done by them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.
- 28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

CHAPTER 15

HEN came certain from Jewry and taught the brethren: except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.

- 2 And when there was risen dissension and disputing not a little unto Paul and Barnabas against them. They determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them should ascend to Jerusalem unto the apostles and elders about this question.
- 3 And after they were brought on their way by the congregation they passed over Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles, and they brought great joy unto

Upon whom my name is named

Acts 15:17

all the brethren

- 4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received declared what things God had done by them.
- 5 Then arose there up certain that were of the sect of the Pharisees and did believe, saying, that it was needful to circumcise them, and to enjoin them to keep the law of Moses.
- 6 And the apostles and elders came together to reason of this matter.
- 7 And when there was much disputing, Peter rose up, and said unto them: Ye men and brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God chose among, us that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel and believe.
- 8 And God, which knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, and gave unto them the Holy Ghost, even as he did unto us;
- 9 And he put no difference between them and us, but with faith purified their hearts.
- 10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, that ye would put a yoke on the disciples necks, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?
- 11 But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved as they do,
- 12 Then all the multitude was appeased, and gave audience to Paul and Barnabas which told what signs and wonders God had shewed among the Gentiles by them.
- 13 And when they held their peace James answered saying: Men and brethren hearken unto me:
- 14 Simeon told how God at the beginning did visit the Gentiles, and received of them a people unto his name.
- 15 And to this agreeth the words of the prophets: as it is written.
- 16 After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and that which is fallen in decay, of it will I build again, and I will set it up
- 17 That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and also

Acts 15:18

Ccertain which departed from us

the Gentiles, upon whom my name is named, saith the Lord which doeth all these things:

- 18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world
- 19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:
- 20 But that we write unto them, that they abstain themselves from filthiness of images, from fornication, from things strangled, and from blood.
- 21 For Moses of old time hath in every city that preach him, and he is read in the synagogues every sabbath day.
- 22 Then it pleased the apostles and elders, with the whole congregation; to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas, They sent Judas called also Barsabas and Silas, which were chief men among the brethren
- 23 And they wrote letters by them; after this manner. The apostles elders and brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch Syria and Cilicia:
- 24 Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which departed from us have troubled you saying: Ye must be circumcised, and keep the law: to whom we gave no such commandment:
- 25 It seemed therefore to us a good thing when we were come together with one accord to send chosen men unto you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul,
- 26 Men that have jeopardized their lives, for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.
- 27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, which shall also tell you the same things by mouth.
- 28 For it seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us, to put no grievous thing to you more than these necessary things;
- 29 That is to say that ye abstain from things offered to images, from blood, from strangled, and fornication: from which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well. So fare ye well.
- 30 When they were departed, they came to Antioch: and aaa

A man named Timotheus

Acts 16:4

- 31 When they had read it, they rejoiced of that consolation.
- 32 And Judas and Silas being prophets exhorted the brethren with much preaching and strengthened them.
- 33 And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace of the brethren unto the Apostles.
- 34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.
- 35 Paul and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others.
- 36 But after a certain space Paul said unto Barnabas: Let us. go again and visit our brethren in every city where we have shewed the word of the Lord, and see how they do.
- 37 And Barnabas gave council to take with them John, called also Mark.
- 38 But Paul thought it not meet to take him unto their company, which departed from them at Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.
- 39 And the dissension was so sharp between them that they departed asunder one from the other: so that Barnabas took Mark and sailed unto Cyprus.
- 40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, delivered of the brethren unto the grace of God.
- 41 And he went through all Syria and Cilicia, establishing the congregations.

CHAPTER 16

THEN came he to Derbe and to Lystra. And behold a certain disciple was there named Timotheus, a woman's son, which was a Jewess and believed: but his father was a Greek.

- 2 Of whom reported well by the brethren of Lystra and of Iconium.
- 3 The same, Paul would that he should go forth with him; and took and circumcised him because of the Jews, which were in those quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greek.
- 4 As they went through the cities, they delivered them the

Acts 16:5

Come over into Macedonia and help us

decrees for to keep, ordained of the apostles and elders, which

- 5 And so were the congregations established in the faith and were at Jerusalem. increased in number daily.
- 6 When they had gone throughout Phyrgia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia,
- 7 They came to Mysia and sought to go into Bithynia. But the Spirit suffered them not.
- 8 Then they went over Mysia and came down to Troas.
- 9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night; There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him saying, come over into Macedonia, and help us.
- 10 After he had seen the vision, immediately we prepared to go into Macedonia, certified, that the Lord had called us, for to preach the gospel unto them.
- 11 Then loosed we forth from Troas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis;
- 12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefest city in the parts of Macedonia, and a free city: we were in that city abiding certain days.
- 13 And on the sabbath days we went out of the city besides a river, where men were wont to pray, and we sat down and spake unto the women which resorted thither.
- 14 And a certain woman named Lydia a seller of purple of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God, gave us audience: whose heart the Lord opened that she attended unto the things which Paul spake.
- 15 When she was baptized, and her household, she besought us saying: if ye think that I believe on the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained us.
- 16 And it fortuned as we went to prayer, a certain damsel possessed with a spirit that prophesied, met us, which brought her master and masters much vantage with prophesying.
- 17 The same followed Paul and us and cried saying: these men

A midnight prayer meeting

Acts 16:30

are the servants of the most high God which shew unto us the way of salvation.

- 18 And this did she many days. But Paul not content turned about and said to the spirit: I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ that thou come out of her. And he came out the same hour.
- 19 And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the market place unto the rulers
- 20 And brought them to the officers saying: These men which are Jews, trouble our city,
- 21 And preach ordinances, which are not lawful for us to receive, neither to observe, seeing we are Romans.
- 22 And the people ran on them, and the officers rent their clothes, and commanded them to be beaten with rods
- 23 And when they had beaten them sore, they cast them into prison commanding the jailer to keep them surely:
- 24 Which jailer when he had received such commandment, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.
- 25 At midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and lauded God: And the prisoners heard them.
- 26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundation of the prison was shaken: and by and by all the doors opened, and every mans bonds were loosed.
- 27 When the keeper of the prison waked out of his sleep, and saw the prison doors open he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing the prisoners had been fled.
- 28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying: do thy self no harm: for we are all here
- 29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas,
- 30 And brought them out and said: Sirs what must I do to be saved?

Acts 16:31 We are Romans

- 31 And they said: believe on the Lord Jesus, and thou shalt be saved, and thy household.
- 32 And they preached unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.
- 33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed their wounds; and was baptized, with all that belonged unto him, straightway.
- 34 When he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, that he with all his household believed on God.
- 35 And when it was day the officers, sent the ministers, saying: Let those men go.
- 36 The keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, the officers have sent word to loose you: Now therefore get you hence, and go in peace.
- 37 Then said Paul unto them: they have beaten us openly uncondemned, for all that we are Romans, and have cast us us into prison; and now they would cast us out privily nay not so, but let them come themselves and set us out
- 38 When the ministers: told these words unto the officers they feard when they heard that they were Romans
- 39 And came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the prison
- 40 And thy went out of the prisom and entered into the house of Lydia: and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAPTER 17

A Sthey made their Journey through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews

Searched the scriptures daily

Acts 17:13

- 2 And Paul as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath days declared out of the scripture unto them,
- 3 Opening and alleging that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from death, and that this Jesus was Christ whom, (said he) I preach to you.
- 4 And some of them believed, and came and companied with Paul and Silas; also of the honorable Grecians a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.
- 5 But the Jews which believed not, having indignation, took unto them evil men which were vagabonds, and gathered a company and set all the city on an uproar, and made assault unto the house of Jason and sought to bring them out to the people.
- 6 But when they found them not, they drew Jason and certain brethren unto the heads of the city, crying: these that trouble the world are come hither also
- 7 Which Jason hath received privily: and these all do contrary to the elders of Caesar, affirming another king, one Jesus.
- 8 And they troubled the people and the officers of the city, when they heard these things.
- 9 And when they were sufficiently answered of Jason and of the other, they let them go.
- 10 And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: which when they were come thither they entered into the synagogue of the Jews.
- 11 These were the noblest of birth among them of Thessalonica, which received the word with all diligence of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were even so.
- 12 And many of them believed: also of worshipful women which were Grecians, and of men, not a few.
- 13 When the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came there and moved the people.

Acts 17:16

Him shew I unto you

- 14 And then by and by the brethren sent away Paul to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.
- 15 And they that guided Paul brought him unto Athens andreceived a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus for to come to him at once, and came their way.
- 16 While Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was moved in him, to see the city given to worshipping of images.
- 17 Then he disputed in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that came unto him.
- 18 Certain philosophers of the Epicureans and of the Stoics disputed with him. And some were there which said: what will this babbler say? Others said: he seemeth to be a tidings bringer of new devils, because he preached unto them Jesus and the resurrection.
- 19 And they took him and brought him into Mars street saying: may we not know what this new doctrine whereof thou speakest is?
- 20 For thou bringest strange tidings to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean.
- 21 For all the Athenians and strangers which were there gave themselves to nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear new tidings.
- 22 Paul stood in the midst of Mars street, and said: ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.
- 23 For as I passed by and beheld the manner how ye worship your gods I found an altar wherein was written: UNTO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom ye then ignorantly worship, him shew I unto you.
- 24 God that made the world and all that are in it, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, he dwelleth not in temples made with hands
- 25 Neither is worshipped with men's hands as though he needed of anything, seeing he himself giveth life, and breath, to

A certain Jew named Aquila

Acts 18:2

all men every where

- 26 And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath assigned before how long time, and also the ends of their inhabitation;
- 27 That they should seek God, if they might feel and find him, though he be not far from everyone of us: your own Poets said. for we are also his generation.
- 28 For in him we live, move and have our being; as certain of your own poets said we are also his offspring
- 29 Forasmuch then as we are the generation of God we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, silver, or stone, graven by craft and imagination of man.
- 30 And the time of this ignorance God regarded not; but now he biddeth all men everywhere repent:
- 31 Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world according to righteousness by that man whom he hath appointed; and hath given promise of faith to men, after that he had raised him from death.
- 32 When they heard of the resurrection from death, some mocked: and others said: we will hear thee again of this matter.
- 33 So Paul departed from among them.
- 34 Howbeit certain men clave unto Paul, and believed: among the which was Dionyisus a senator and a woman named Damaris, and other with them.

CHAPTER 18

A FTER that Paul departed from Athens and came to Corinth

2 And found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus. lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla; (because that the Emperor Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome:) and he drew unto them.

Acts 18:3

I have much oeople in this city

- 3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them and wrought: their craft was to make tents.
- 4 And he preached in the synagogue every Sabbath day and exorted the Jews and the Gentiles.
- 5 When Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was constrained by the Spirit, to testify to the Jews that Jesus was very Christ.
- 6 And when they said contrary, and blasphemed, he shook his raiment and said unto them: your blood upon your own heads; and from henceforth I go blameless unto the Gentiles.
- 7 And he departed thence and entered into a certain man's house, named Justus, a worshiper of God, whose house joined hard to the synagogue.
- 8 Howbeit one Crispus the chief ruler of the synagogue believed on the lord with all his household and many of the Corinthians gave audience and believed and were baptized.
- 9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision: be not afraid but speak, and hold not thy peace:
- 10 For I am with thee, and no man shall invade thee that shall hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.
- 11 And he continued there a year and six months, and taught them the word of God.
- 12 When Gallio was ruler of the country of Achaia the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul and brought him to the judgment seat,
- 13 Saying: this fellow counceleth men to worship God contrary to the law.
- 14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews: If it were a matter of wrong or an evil deed (o ye Jews) reason would that I should hear you:
- 15 But if it be a question of words, or of names, or of your law, look ye to it yourselves. for I will be no judge in such matters.

I must needs be in Jerusalem

Acts 18:28

- 16 And he drave them from the seat
- 17 Then took all the Grecians Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and smote him before the judge's seat. And Gallio cared for none of those things.
- 18 Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, Priscilla and Aquila; accompanying him, and he had shorn his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.
- 19 And he came to Ephesus and left them there: but he himself entered into the synagogue and reasoned with the Jews
- 20 When they desired him to tarry longer time with them he consented not;
- 21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must needs at this feast that cometh be in Ierusalem: but I will return again unto you if God will. And he departed from Ephesus
- 22 And came unto Caesarea, and ascended, and saluted the congregation, and departed unto Antioch.
- 23 And when he had tarried there a while, he departed, And went over all the country of Galatia and Phyrgia by order, strengthening all the disciples.
- 24 And a certain Jew named Apollos born at Alexandria came to Ephesus an eloquent man, and mighty, in the scriptures.
- 25 The same was informed in the way of the Lord; and he spake fervently in the spirit, and taught diligently the things of the Lord, and knew but the baptism of John only.
- 26 And the same began to speak boldly in the synagogue: And when Aquila and Priscilla had heard him: they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.
- 27 And when he was disposed to go into Achaia the brethren wrote exhorting the disciples to receive him, after he was come thither he helped them much which had believed through grace.
- 28 And mightily he overcame the Jews and that, shewing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ.

Acts 19:1

The word of the Lord Jesus

CHAPTER 19

through the upper coasts and came to Ephesus: and found certain disciples,

- 2 And said unto them, have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him no, we have not heard whether there be any Holy Ghost or no.
- 3 And he said unto them: wherewith were ye then baptized? And they said: with John's baptism
- 4 Then said Paul: John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him: that is on Christ Jesus.
- 5 When they heard that, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus
- 6 And Paul laid his hands upon them, and the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied more perfectly.
- 7 And all the men were about twelve
- 8 And he went into the synagogue, and behaved himself boldly for the space of three months, disputing and giving them exhortations of the kingdom of God.
- 9 When divers waxed hard hearted, and believed not, but spake evil of the way and that before the multitude: he departed from them, and separated the disciples, And disputed daily in the school of one called Tyrannus.
- 10 And this continued by the space of two years; so that all they which dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Grecians.
- 11 And God wrought no small miracles by the hands of Paul:
- 12 So that from his body were brought to the sick napkins or partlets, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.
- 13 Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon

them to call over them which had evil spirits in the name Lord Jesus, saying: We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth h. Great is Diana of the Ehhesians

Acts 19:26

- 14 And there were seven sons of one Sceva a Jew and chief of the priests, which did so.
- 15 And the evil spirit answered and said: Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye?
- 16 And the man in whom the evil Spirit was, ran on them and overcame them and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.
- 17 And this was known to all the Jews and Grecians also which dwelt at Ephesus and fear came on them all and they magnified the name of the Lord Jesus.
- 18 And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their works.
- 19 Many of them which used curious crafts brought their books and burned them, before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand silverlings.
- 20 So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.
- 21 After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, to pass over Macedonia and Achaia and to go to Jerusalem saying: After I have been there I must also see Rome.
- 22 So sent he into Macedonia, two of them that ministered unto him, Timotheus and Erastus; but he himself remained in Asia for a season.
- 23 The same time there arose no little ado about ⁴⁰that way.
- 24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a silversmith, which made silver shrines for Diana, was not a little beneficial unto the craftsmen;
- 25 Which he called together with the workmen of like occupation and said sirs ye know by this craft we have vantage 26 Moreover ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus but almost throughout all Asia this Paul hath persuaded and turned away much people saying that they be not gods, which are made with hands.

-

⁴⁰ that way, that is the way of Christ

Acts 19:27

Let them accuse one another

- 27 So that not only this craft cometh into peril to be set at naught: but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, which all Asia and the world worshipeth.
- 28 When they heard these sayings they were full of wrath and cried out saying: great is Diana of the Ephesians.
- 29 And all the city was in an uproar: and they rushed into the common hall with one assent and caught Gaius and Aristarchus men of Macedonia Paul's companions.
- 30 When Paul would have entered in unto the people the disciples suffered him not.
- 31 Certain also of the chief of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him desiring him that he would not press into the common hall.
- 32 Some cried one thing and some another and the congregation was all out of quiet, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together
- 33 Some of the company drew forth Alexander the Jews thrusting him forward. Alexander beckoned with the hand, and would have given the people an answer.
- 34 When they knew that he was a Jew there arose a shout almost for the space of two hours of all men crying great is Diana of the Ephesians.
- 35 When the town clerk had ceased the people he said: ye men of Ephesus what man is it that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddess Diana and of the image which came from heaven.
- 36 Seeing then that no man saith here against, ye ought to be content and to do nothing rashly:
- 37 For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers ⁴¹ of churches, nor yet despisers of your goddess.
- 38 Wherefore if Demetrius, and the craftsmen which are with him, have any saying to any man the law is open and there are

_

⁴¹ Temple Robbers

They brought the young man alive

Acts 20:9

8rulers let them accuse one another.

- 39 If ye go about any other thing, it may be determined in a lawful congregation
- 40 For we are in jeopardy to be accused of this days business: for as much as there is no cause whereby we may give a reckoning of this concourse of people.
- 41 And when he had thus spoken he let the congregation depart.

CHAPTER 20

A FTER the rage was ceased, Paul called the disciples unto him and took his leave of them, and departed for to go into Macedonia.

- 2 And when he had gone over those parts, and given them large exhortation, he came into Greece
- 3 and [there] abode three months. And when the Jews laid wait for him as he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return thorough Macedonia.
- 4 There accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of Thessalonica Aristarcus and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus: and out of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.
- 5 These went before, and tarried for us at Troas.
- 6 And we sailed away from Philippi after the Easter holydays and came unto them to Troas in five days where we abode seven days.
- 7 And on the morow after the sabbath day the disciples came together for to break bread and Paul preached unto them (ready to depart on the morrow,) and continued the preaching unto midnight.
- 8And there were many lights in the chamber where they were gathered together
- 9 And there sat in a window a certain young man, named Eutychus fallen into a deep sleep. And as Paul declared he was the more overcome with sleep, and fell down from the third loft

Acts 20:10

I go bound in the spirit

and was taken up dead

- 10 Paul went down and fell on him, and embracing him said: make nothing ado; for his life is in him.
- 11 When he was come up again, he brake bread and tasted, and communed a long while, even till the morning and so departed.
- 12 And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.
- 13 And we went afore to ship, and loosed unto Assos, there to receive Paul: for so had he appointed, and would himself go afoot.
- 14 When he was come to us unto Assos, we took him in, and came to Mytylene.
- 15 And we sailed thence and came the next day against Chios. And the next day we arrived at Samos and tarried at Trogillum: the next day we came to Miletus:
- 16 For Paul had determined to leave Ephesus, as they sailed because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted to be, (if it could be possible) at Jerusalem at the day of Pentecost.
- 17 Wherefore from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the congregation.
- 18 And when they were come to him, he said unto them: Ye know from the first day that I came unto Asia after what manner I have been with you at all seasons,
- 19 Serving the Lord with all humbleness of mind and with many tears and temptations, which happened unto me by the lying in wait of the Jews:
- 20 And how I kept back nothing that was profitable, but that I have shewed you and taught you openly, and at home in your houses,
- 21 Witnessing, both to the Jews, and also to the Grecians, the repentance, toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ
- 22 And now behold I go bound in the spirit unto Jerusalem,

Feed The congregation of God

Acts 20:35

and know not what shall come on me there:

- 23 But that the Holy Ghost witnesseth in every city, saying that bonds and trouble abide me.
- 24 But none of those things move me, neither is my life dear unto myself, that I might fulfill my course with Joy, and the ministration, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.
- 25 And now, behold, I am sure that henceforth ye all, (through whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God) shall see my face no more.
- 26 Wherfore I take you to record this same day that I am pure from the blood of all men.
- 27 For I have kept nothing back: but have shewed you all the council of God.
- 28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, whereof the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the congregation of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.
- 29 For I am sure of this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, which will not spare the flock.
- 30 Moreover of your own selves shall men arise speaking perverse things, to draw disciples after them.
- 31 Therefore awake, and remember, that by the space of three years I ceased not to warn every one of you, both night and day with tears.
- 32 And now brethren I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build further, and to give you an inheritance among all them, which are sanctified.
- 33 I have desired no man's silver, gold, or vesture
- 34 Ye know well that these hands have ministered unto my necessities and to them that were with me.
- 35 I have shewed you all things how that so laboring ye ought to receive the weak and to remember the words of the Lord

Acts 20:36

Kneeled down on the shore and prayed

Jesus how that he said: It is more blessed to give than to receive.

- 36 When he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all
- 37 And they wept all abundantly, and fell on Paul's neck, and kissed him
- 38 Sorrowing most of all for the words which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

CHAPTER 21

A ND it came to pass, that as soon as we had launched forth, and were departed from them, we came with a straight course unto Coos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara:

- 2 And we found a ship ready to sail unto Phenicia, and went aboard, and set forth.
- 3 Then appeared unto us Cyprus, and we left it on the left hand, and sailed unto Syria, and came unto Tyre: for there the ship was to unlade her burden.
- 4 And when we had found brethren we tarried there seven days. And they told Paul through the Spirit that he should not go up to Jerusalem.
- 5 And when the days were ended, we departed and went our way; and they all brought us on our way, with their wives and children, till we were come out of the city: And we kneeled down on the shore, and prayed.
- 6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship; and they returned home again.
- 7 When we had full ended the course from Tyre, we arrived at Ptolemais and saluted the brethren and abode with them one day.
- 8 The next day we that were of Paul's company departed, and came unto Caesarea: And we entered into the house of Philip the evangelist, which was one of the seven deacons; and abode with him.

Which have a vow on them

Acts 21:21

- 9 The same man had four daughters, virgins, which did prophesy.
- 10 And as we tarried there a good many days, there came a certain prophet from Jewry named Agabus.
- 11 When he was come unto us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his hands and feet, and said: thus saith the Holy Ghost: so shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.
- 12 When we heard this, both we, and others of the same place, besought him that he would not go up to Jerusalem.
- 13 Then Paul answered and said: what do ye mean weeping and breaking mine heart? I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.
- 14 When we could not turn his mind we ceased, saying, the will of the Lord be fulfilled.
- 15 After those days we made ourselves ready, and went up to Jerusalem.
- 16 There went with us also certain of his disciples of Caesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge
- 17 And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly.
- 18 And on the morrow Paul went in with us unto James; and all the elders came together.
- 19 And when he had saluted them, he told by order all things that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministration.
- 20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, thou seest brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe; and they are all zealous over the law.
- 21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, and sayest that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to live after the customs.

Acts 21:22

They went about to kill him

- 22 What is it therefore? The multitude must needs come together: for they shall hear that thou art come.
- 23 Do therefore this that we say to thee: We have four men
- 24 Them take, and purify thyself with them and do cost on them, that they may shave their heads: and all shall know that those things, which they have heard thou thyself also walkest, and keepest the law.
- 25 For as touching the Gentiles which believe, we have written and concluded that they observe no such thing: but that they keep themselves from things offered to idols, from blood, from strangled, and from fornication.
- 26 Then the next day Paul took the men, and purified himself with them and entered into the temple declaring that he observed the days of the purification, until that an offering should be offered for every one of them.
- 27 And as the seven days should have been ended, the Jews which were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, they moved all the people, and laid hands on him
- 28 Crying: men of Israel, help: This is the man that teacheth all men everywhere against the people, and the law, and this place. Moreover also he hath brought Grecians into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place.
- 29 For they saw one Trophimus an Ephesian, with him in the city. him they supposed Paul had brought into the temple.
- 30 And all the city was moved, and the people swarmed together. and they took Paul and drew him out of the temple and forthwith the doors were shut to.
- 31 As they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the high captain of the soldiers, that all Jerusalem was moved.
- 32 Which immediately took soldiers and under captains, and ran down unto them, When they saw the upper captain and the soldiers, they left smiting of Paul.
- 33 Then the captain came near, and took him, and commanded Him to be bound with two chains, and demsnded who he was,

Persecuted this way unto death

Acts 22:5

and what he had done.

- 34 And one cried this another that, among the people: and commanded him to be carried into the castle.
- 35 And when he came unto the stairs, it came to pass, that he was borne of the soldiers for the violence of the people.
- 36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying: away with him.
- 37 And as Paul should have been carried into the castle he said unto the high captain: may I speak unto thee? Which said: canst thou speak Greek?
- 38 Are not thou that Egyptian, which before these days made an uproar, and led out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers?
- 39 But Paul said: I am a man, which am a Jew of Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, a citizen of no vile city: I beseech thee suffer me to speak unto the people.
- 40 When he had given him license, Paul stood on the steps, and beckoned with the hand unto the people. And there was made a great silence. And he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue saying:

CHAPTER 22

EN brethren, and fathers, hear mine answer which I make unto you.

- 2 When they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he saith,
- 3 I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in Tarsus, a city in Cilicia: nevertheless yet brought up in this city, at the feet of Gamaliel, and informed diligently in the law of the fathers, and was fervent minded toward God, as ye all are this same day
- 4 And I persecuted this way unto the death; binding and delivering into prison both men and women
- 5 As the chief priest doth bear me witness, and all the elders: of whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to

Acts 22:6

That is pity that he should live

Damascus, to bring them which were there bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

- 6 And it came to pass, as I made my Journey, and was come nigh unto Damascus about noon, that suddenly there shone from heaven a great light roundabout me
- 7 And I fell unto the earth, and heard a voice saying unto me: Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?
- 8 And I answered: who art thou Lord? And he said unto me: I am Jesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.
- 9 And they that were with me saw verily a light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that spake with me.
- 10 And I said, what shall I do Lord? And the Lord said unto me, Arise and go into Damascus; and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.
- 11 And when I saw nothing for the brightness of that light, I was led by the hand of them that were with me, and came into Damascus.
- 12 And one Anianias, a perfect man and as pertaining to the law having good report of all the Jews which dwelt there,
- 13 Came unto me, and stood and said unto me: Brother Saul, look up. And that same hour I received my sight, and saw him.
- 14 And he said the God of our fathers hath ordained thee, before, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that which is rightful and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth:
- 15 For thou shalt be his witness unto all men of those things which thou hast seen and heard.
- 16 And now: why tarriest thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, in calling on the name of the Lord.
- 17 And it fortuned, when I was come again to Jerusalem, and prayed in the temple, that I was in a trance
- 18 And saw him saying unto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive thy witness that thou bearest of me.
- 19 And I said: Lord they know that I imprisoned and beat in

We find no evil in this man

Acts 23:1

every synagogue them that believed on thee:

- 20 And when the blood of thy witness Steven was shed, I also stood by, and consented unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him.
- 21 And he said unto me, Depart for I will send thee afar hence unto the Gentiles.
- 22 They gave him audience unto this word and then lift up their voices, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth, that is pity that he should live.
- 23 And as they cried and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the air,
- 24 The captain bade him to be brought into the castle, and commanded him to be scourged and to be examined; that he might know wherefore they cried on him.
- 25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto the centurion that stood by, Is it lawful or you to scourge a man that is Roman and uncondemned?

When the Centurion heard that, he went and told the upper captain saying:

- 26 What intendest thou to do? This man is a Roman.
- 27 Then the uppercaptain came, and said to him, tell me, art thou a Roman? He said: Yea.
- 28 And the captain answeed ,With a great sum obtained I this freedom. And Paul said, I was free born.
- 29 Then straightway departed from him they which should have examined him: and the high captain also was afraid, after he knew that he was a Roman: because he had bound him.
- 30 On the morrow, because he would have known the certainty wherefore he was accused of the Jews; he loosed him from his bonds, and commanded the high Priest and all the council to come together, and brought Paul and set him before them.

CHAPTER 23

P AUL, beheld, the council, and said, men and brethren, I

Acts 23:2

Plans laid to kill Paul

have lived in all good conscience before God until this day.

- 2 The high priest Anianias commanded them that stood by to smite him on the mouth.
- 3 Then said Paul to him: God smite thee thou painted wall, sittest thou and Judgest me after the law: and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law?
- 4 And they that stood by said: revilest thou Gods high priest?
- 5 Then said Paul: I wist not, brethren that he was the high priest: for it is written thou shalt not curse the ruler of thy people.
- 6 When Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees and the other Pharisees: he cried out in the council. Men and brethren I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: Of the hope and resurrection from death I am judged.
- 7 And when he had so said, there arose a debate between the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided.
- 8 For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel, nor spirit. But the Pharisees grant both.
- 9 And there arose a great cry and the Scribes which were of the Pharisees part arose, and strove, saying: we find no evil in this man. Though a spirit or an angel hath appeared to him, let us not strive against God.
- 10 And when there arose great debate, the captain fearing lest Paul should have been plucked asunder of them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and to take him from among them, and to bring him into the castle.
- 11 The night following God stood by him, and said: Be of good cheer Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness at Rome.
- 12 When day was come, certain of the Jews gathered themselves together, and made a vow, saying, that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul.
- 13 They were about forty, which had made this conspiracy.

But follow not their minds

Acts 23:23

- 14 And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said: we have bound ourselves with a vow, that we will eat nothing until we have slain Paul.
- 15 Now therefore give the knowledge to the upper captain and to the council that he bring him forth unto us tomorrow as though we would know something more perfectly of him: but we, (or ever he come near) are ready in the mean season to kill him.
- 16 When Paul's sister's son heard of their lying wait, he went and entered into the castle, and told Paul.
- 17 And Paul called one of the under captains unto him, and said: bring this young man unto the high captain: for he hath a certain thing to shew him.
- 18 And he took him, and said: Paul the prisoner called me unto him and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, which hath a certain matter to shew thee.
- 19 The high captain took him by the hand, and went apart with him out of the way, and asked him: what hast thou to say unto me?
- 20 And he said: the Jews are determined to desire thee that thou wouldest bring forth Paul tomorrow into the council, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.
- 21 But follow not their minds: for there, lie in wait for him of them more than forty men, which have bound themselves with a vow, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him. and now are they ready and look for thy promise.
- 22 The upper captain let the young man depart, and charged him: see thou tell it out to no man that thou hast shewed these things to me.
- 23 And he called unto him two under captains, saying: make ready two hundred soldiers to go to Caesarea and horsemen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred at the third hour of the night.

Acts 23:24

Paul rescued from sure death

- 24 And deliver them beasts, that they may put Paul on, and bring him safe unto Felix the high deputy
- 25 And wrote a letter in this manner,
- 26 Claudius Lysias unto the most mighty ruler Felix sendeth greetings.
- 27 This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them: then came I with soldiers, and rescued him, and perceived that he was a Roman.
- 28 And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their council,
- 29 There perceived I that he was accused of questions of their law: but was not guilty of anything worthy of death or of bonds.
- 30 Afterward when it was shewed me how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent him straight way to thee, and gave commandment to his accusers, that they had ought against him to tell it unto thee. Farewell.
- 31 Then the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.
- 32 On the morrow they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned unto the castle:
- 33 Which when they came to Caesarea, they delivered the epistle to the deputy, and presented Paul before him.
- 34 When the deputy had read the letter he asked of what country he was and when he understood that he was of Cilicia
- 35 I will hear thee, (said he) when thine accusers are come also: and commanded him to be kept in Herod's Palace.

CHAPTER 24

AFTER five days Ananias the high priest descended with elders, and with a certain Orator named Tertulus and informed the ruler of Paul.

2 When Paul was called forth, Tertulus began to accuse him, saying: Seeing that we live in great quietness, by the means of thee, and that many good things are done unto this nation

After the way they call heresy

Acts 24:6

through thy providence,

- 3 That allow we, ever and in all places, most mighty Felix with all thanks that thou wouldest hear us of thy courtesy a few words.
- 4 Notwithstanding, that I be not tedious unto thee, I pray thee
- 5 We have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of debate unto all the Jews throughout the world, and a maintainer of the sect of the Nazarenes,
- 6 And hath also enforced to pollute the temple: whom we took, and would have judged according to our law.
- 7 But the high captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands
- 8 Commanding his accusers to come unto thee: Of whom thou mayest (if thou wilt enquire) know the certainty of all these things, whereof we accuse him.
- 9 The Jews likewise affirmed, saying that it was even so.
- 10 Then Paul, (after that the ruler himself had beckoned unto him that he should speak) answered: I shall with a more quiet mind answer for myself, for as much as I understand that thou hast been of many years a judge unto this people,
- 11 Because that thou mayest know, that there are yet twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem for to pray.
- 12 And that they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, nor raising up the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the city.
- 13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they accuse me.
- 14 But this I confesses unto thee, that after that way (which they call heresy) so worship I the God of my fathers, believing all things which are written in the law and the Prophets:
- 15 And have hope towards God that the same resurrection from death, (which they themselves also look for) shall be both
- 16 And therefore study I, to have a clear conscience toward God, and toward man also.

Acts 24:17

When I have convienient time

- 17 But after many years I came and brought alms to my people, and offerings
- 18 In the which they found me purified in the temple, neither with the multitude, nor yet with unquietness. Howbeit there were certain Jews out of Asia
- 19 Which ought to be here present before thee, and accuse me, if they had ought against me,
- 20 Or else let these same here say, if they have found any evil doing in me, while I stand here in the council:
- 21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, of the resurrection from death am I judged of you, this day.
- 22 When Felix heard these things he deferred them, for he knew very well of that way, and said, when Lysias the captain is come I will know the utmost of your matters.
- 23 And he commanded an under captain to keep Paul, and that he should have rest, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister unto him or to come unto him.
- 24 And after certain days came Felix and his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewess, and called forth Paul, and heard him of the faith which is toward Christ.
- 25 And as he preached of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled and answered, thou hast done enough at this time, depart, when I have a convenient time, I will send for thee.
- 26 He hoped also that money should have been given him of Paul that he might loose him: wherefore he called him the oftener and communed with him.
- 27 But after two years Festus Porcus came into Felix ⁴² room. and Felix willing to shew the Jews a pleasure left Paul in prison bound

_

⁴² Room that is his official position

I refuse not to die

Acts 25:13

CHAPTER 25

WHEN Festus was come into the province after three days he ascended from Caesarea unto Jerusalem.

- 2 Then enformed him the high priests and the chief of the Jews of Paul. And they be ought him
- 3 And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem: and laying wait for him in the ways to kill him.
- 4 Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Caesarea, but that he himself would shortly depart thither.
- 5 Let them therefore, (said he) which among you are able to do it, come down with us, and accuse him, if there be any fault in the man.
- 6 When he had tarried there more than ten days, he departed unto Caesarea; and the next day sat down in the judgment seat and commanded Paul to be brought.
- 7 When he was come, the Jews which were come from Jerusalem came about, him and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove
- 8 As long as he answered for himself, that he had neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Caesar, offended anything at all.
- 9 Festus, willing to do the Jews a pleasure answered Paul, and said: wilt thou go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?
- 10 Then said Paul: I stand at Caesars judgment seat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no harm, as thou verily well knowest

If I have hurt them, or committed anything worthy of death, I refuse not to die. If there are none of these things to deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Caesar

- 12 Then spake Festus, with deliberation and answered. Thou hast appealed unto Caesar; unto Caesar shalt thou go.
- 13 After a certain days king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Caesarea to salute Festus.

Acts 25:14

Paul affirmed to be alive

- 14 And when they had been there a good season, Festus rehearsed Paul's cause unto the king saying: there is a certain man left in prison of Felix:
- 15 About whom, when I came to Jerusalem, the high priests and elders of the Jews informed me, and desired to have judgment against him.
- 16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man that he should perish, before that he which is accused have the accusers before him, and have license, to answer for himself, concerning the crime laid against him.
- 17 When, they were come hither, without delay on the morrow I sat to give judgment, and commanded the man to be brought forth.
- 18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:
- 19 But had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus, which was dead: whom Paul affirmed to be alive.
- 20 And because I doubted of such manner questions, I asked him whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters.
- 21 Then when Paul had appealed to be kept unto the knowledge of Caesar, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Caesar.
- 22 Agrippa said unto Festus: I would also hear the man myself. Tomorrow, (said he) thou shalt hear him.
- 23 And on the morrow, when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp, and were entered into the council house, with the upper captains, and chief men of the city, at Festus' commandment Paul was brought forth.
- 24 And Festus said: king Agrippa, and all men which are here present with us: ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have been with me both at Jerusalem and also here

For the hope of the promise

Acts 26:9

crying that he ought not to live any longer.

- 25 Yet found I nothing worthy of death, that he had committed, nevertheless seeing that he hath appealed to Caesar, I have determined to send him.
- 26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my Lord. Wherefore I have brought him unto you, and specially unto thee to king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might have somewhat to write.
- 27 For me I thinketh it unreasonable for to send a prisoner, and not to shew the causes which are laid against him.

CHAPTER 26

A GRIPPA said unto Paul, thou art permitted to speak for thyself then Paul stretched forth the hand and answered for himself

- 2 I think myself, happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer this day before thee of all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews:
- 3 Namely because thou art expert in all customs and questions, which are among the Jews, Wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.
- 4 My living as a child, which was at the first among mine own nation, at Jerusalem, know all the Jews;
- 5 Which knew me from the beginning, if they would testify it, for after the straightest sect of our lay, I lived a Pharisee.
- 6 And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers:
- 7 Unto which promise our twelve tribes, instantly serving God day and night, hope to come. For which hopes sake, king Agrippa, am I accused of the Jews.
- 8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible unto you, that God should raise again the dead?
- 9 I also verily thought in myself, that I ought to do many contrary things clean against the name of Jesus of Nazareth

Acts 26:10

Who art thou Lord

- 10 Which thing I also did in Jerusalem: where many of the saints I shut up in prison, and had received authority of the high priests and when they were put to death, I gave the sentence.
- 11 And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme; and was yet more mad upon them and persecuted them even unto strange cities.
- 12 About the which things I went to Damascus with authority and license of the high Priests
- 13 Even at midday, (O king) I saw in the way a light from Heaven above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and them which Journeyed with me.
- 14 When we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying, in the Hebrew tongue: Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.
- 15 And I said: Who art thou Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.
- 16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness in both of those things which thou hast seen, and of those things the which I will appear unto thee;
- 17 Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto which now I send thee,
- 18 To open their eyes, that they might turn from darkness unto light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith in me.
- 19 Wherefore, king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision,
- 20 But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Jewry, and to the Gentiles that they should repent and turn to God and do the right works of repentance
- 21 For this cause the Jews caught me in the temple and went

Bringest me in mind to become a Christian

Acts 27:1

about to kill me

- 22 Nevertheless I obtained the help of God and continue unto this day witnessing both to small and great saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come.
- 23 That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from death, and should shew light unto the people, and the Gentiles.
- 24 As he thus answered for himself: Festus said with a loud voice: Paul thou art beside thyself. Much learning hath made thee mad.
- 25 And Paul said: I am not mad most dear Festus: but speak the words of truth and soberness.
- 26 The king knoweth of these things, before whom I speak freely: neither think I that any of these things are hidden from him; For this thing was not done in a corner.
- 27 king Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I wot well thou believest.
- 28 Agrippa said unto Paul: Somewhat thou bringest me in mind for to become a Christian.
- 29 And Paul said: I would to God that not only thou: but also all that hear me today, were not somewhat only, but altogether such as I am, except these bonds.
- 30 And when he had thus spoken, the king rose up, and the deputy and Bernice and they that sat with them,
- 31 And when they were gone apart, they talked between themselves, saying: This man doth nothing worthy of death nor of bonds.
- 32 Then said Agrippa unto Festus: This man might have been loosed, if he had not appealed unto Caesar.

CHAPTER 27

HEN it was concluded that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners unto one Named Julius under captain of Caesars soldiers.

Acts 27:2

Came to a place called good port

- 2 And we entered into a ship of Adramyttum and loosed from land appointed to sail by the coasts of Asia; one Aristarchus, out of Macedonia of the country of Thessalonica, being with us.
- 3 And the next day we came to Sidon. And Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave him liberty to go unto his friends and to refresh himself.
- 4 And from thence we launched, and sailed hard by Cyprus, because the winds were contrary.
- 5 Then sailed we over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, and came to Myra, a city in Lycia.
- 6 And there the under captain found a ship of Alexandria ready to sail into Italy; and put us therein.
- 7 And when we had sailed slowly many days, and scarce were come over against Cnidus, (because the wind withstood us) we sailed hard by the coast of Crete, over against Salmone.
- 8 And with much work sailed beyond it, and came unto a place called good port; nigh whereunto was a city called Lasea,
- 9 When much time was spent, and sailing was now jeopardous, because also that we had overlong fasted Paul put them in remembrance,
- 10 And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with hurt, and much damage, not of the lading and ship only: but also of our lives.
- 11 Nevertheless the under captain believed the master, and the owner, better than those things which were spoken of Paul.
- 12 And because the haven was not commodious to winter in, many took council to depart thence, if by any means
- they might attain to Phenice, and there to winter; which is an haven of Crete, and serveth to the southwest and northwest wind.
- 13 When the south wind blew, they supposing to obtain their purpose, loosed unto Asson. and sailed past Crete.
- 14 But anon after there arose against their purpose a flow of

All hope was then taken away

Acts 27:28

wind out of the northeast.

- 15 And when the ship was caught, and could not resist the wind, we let her drive, and go, with the weather.
- 16 And we came unto an island named Clauda, and had much work to come by the boat:
- 17 Which they took up, and used helps, undergirding the ship; fearing lest we should have fallen into the quicksand and we let down a vessel and so were carried.
- 18 The next day when we were tossed with an exceeding tempest, they lightened the ship
- 19 And the third day we cast out with our own hands the tackling of the ship.
- 20 When at the last neither sun nor star in many days appeared, and no small tempest lay upon us, all hope that we should be saved was then taken away.
- 21 Then after long abstinence Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said: Sirs, ye should have hearkened to me, and not have loosed from Candy, neither to have brought unto us this harm and loss.
- 22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of any man's life among you save of the ship only.
- 23 For there stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,
- 24 Saying: fear not Paul; for thou must be brought before Caesar. And lo, God hath given unto thee all that sail with thee.
- 25 Wherefore, Sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that so it shall be even as it was told me.
- 26 Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain Island.
- 27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were carried in Adria, about midnight the shipmen deemed that there appeared unto them some country:
- 28And sounded and found it twenty fathoms: And when they

Acts 27:29

Except these abide in the ship

had gone a little further they sounded again and found fifteen fathoms.

- 29 Then fearing lest they should have fallen on some rocks,
- 30 As the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, and had let down the boat into the sea, under a colour as though they would have cast anchors out of the foreship,
- 31 Paul said unto the under captain and the soldiers: except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be safe.
- 32 Then the soldiers cut off the rope of the boat, and let it fall away.
- 33 And in the mean time betwixt that, and day, Paul besought them all to take meat, saying: this is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried and continued fasting, receiving nothing at all.
- 34 Wherefore I pray you to take meat: for this no doubt is for your health: for there shall not an hair fall from the head of any of you.
- 35 And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all: and brake it, and began to eat.
- 36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they also took meat.
- 37 We were all together in the ship two hundred three score and sixteen souls.
- 38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.
- 39 When it was day, they knew not the land: but they spied a certain haven with a bank, into the which they were minded, if it were possible) to thrust in the ship.
- 40 And when they had taken up the anchors, they committed themselves unto the sea and loosed the rudder bands, and hoisted up the mainsail to the wind, and drew to land.
- 41 But they came to pass, on a place which had the sea on both the sides, and thrust in the ship; And the forepart stuck fast, and moved not but the hinder part brake with the violence of the waves.

With your ears shall ye hear

Acts 28:9

- 42 The soldiers council was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them when he had swam out, should flee away.
- 43 But the under captain willing to save Paul kept them from their purpose, and commanded that they that could swim, should cast themselves first into the sea, and escape to land.
- 44 And the other, he commanded some to go on boards, and some on broken pieces of the ship. And so it came to pass, that they came all safe to land.

CHAPTER 28

A ND when they were escaped, then they knew that the Island was called Melita.

- 2 And the people of the country shewed us no little kindness: for they kindled a fire, and received us everyone, because of the present rain, and because of the cold.
- 3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and put them into the fire, there came a viper out of the heat and leapt on his hand.
- 4 When the men of the country saw the worm hang on his hand, they said among themselves: this man must needs be a murderer, whom (though he have escaped the sea) yet vengeance suffereth not to live.
- 5 But he shook off the vermin into the fire, and felt no harm.
- 6 Howbeit they waited when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly. But after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a god.
- 7 In the same quarters, the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius had a Lordship: the same received us, and lodged us three days courteously.
- 8 And it came to pass, that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever and of a bloody flux: to whom Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.
- 9 When this was done, others also, which had diseases in the

Acts 28:10 Because for the hope of Israel I am bound

island, came, and were healed.

- 10 And they did us great honour: And when we departed, they Laded us with things necessary.
- 11 After three months we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the island, whose badge was Castor and Pollux.
- 12 And when we came to Syracuse, we tarried there three days.
- 13 And from thence we set a compass, and came to Rehgium: and after one day the south wind blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli:
- 14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven days: and so came to Rome.
- 15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to greet us to Appiiforum, and to the three taverns: When Paul saw them, he thanked God and waxed bold.
- 16 And when he came to Rome, the under captain delivered the prisoners to the chief captain of the host: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself with one soldier that kept him.
- 17 And it came to pass, after three days that Paul called the chief of the Jews together: and when they were come, he said unto them: Men and brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people, or laws, of our fathers: yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans.
- 18 Which when they had examined me, would have let me go because they found no cause of death in me.
- 19 But when the Jews cried contrary, I was constrained to appeal unto Caesar: not because I had ought to accuse my people of.
- 20 For this cause have I called for you, even to see you, and to speak with you because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.
- 21 And they said unto him: We neither received letters out of Jewry pertaining unto thee, neither came any of the brethren

Preaching the kingdom of God

Luke 28:31

that shewed or spake any harm of thee.

- 22 But we will hear of thee what thou thinkest: for we have heard of this sect, that there came many unto him into his Lodging; everywhere it is spoken against.
- 23 And when they had appointed him a day, To whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, and preached unto them of Jesus: both out of the law of Moses, and also out of the prophets, even from morning to night.
- 24 And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not.
- 25 When they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the Holy Ghost by Isaiah the prophet
- 26 Saying: unto our fathers, Go unto this people and say: with your ears shall ye hear, and shall not understand: and with your eyes shall ye see, and shall not perceive.
- 27 For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears were thick of hearing, and their eyes have they closed: lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.
- 28 Be it known therefore unto you, that this salvation of God is sent to the Gentiles, and they shall hear it.
- 29 And when he had said that, the Jews departed, and had great deliberations, among themselves.
- 30 And Paul dwelt two full years in his lodging, and received all that came to him.
- 31 Preaching the Kingdom of God, and teaching those things that concerned the Lord Jesus, with all confidence, unforbidden

Romans 1:1

For I long to see you

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO THE ROMANS

PAUL the servant of Jesus Christ called to be an apostle, put apart to preach the gospel of God

- 2 Which he promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures,
- 3 That make mention of his Son the which was begotten of the seed of David as pertaining to the flesh:
- 4 And declared to be the Son of God with power, of the Holy Ghost, that sanctifieth since the time that Jesus Christ our Lord rose again from death:
- 5 By whom we have received grace and apostleship, to bring all manner heathen people, unto obedience of the faith that is in his name:
- 6 Of the which heathen are ye a part also which are Jesus Christ's by vocation.
- 7 To all you of Rome, beloved of God, and saints by calling. Grace be with you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 8 First verily I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, because your faith is published throughout all the world.
- 9 For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers;
- 10 Beseeching that at one time or another a prosperous journey (by the will of God) might permit me to come unto you.
- 11 For I long to see you, that I might bestow among you some spiritual gift, to strengthen you withal:
- 12 That is, that I might have consolation together with you through the common faith which both ye and I have.
- 13 I would that ye should know brethren, how that I have often times purposed to come unto you (but have been ⁴³let hitherto)

-

⁴³ Let that is hindered or held back,

Man with man wrought filthiness

Romans 1:26

- to have some fruit among you, as I have among other of Gentiles,
- 14 For I am debtor both to the Greeks and to them which are no Greeks unto the learned and also unto the unlearned.
- 15 Likewise, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you of Rome also.
- 16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ, because it is the power of God unto salvation to all that believe, namely to the Jew, and also to the Gentile.
- 17 For by it the righteousness which cometh of God, is opened, from faith to faith, As it is written: The just shall live by faith.
- 18 For the wrath of God appeareth from heaven against all ungodliness, and unrighteousness of men which with hold the truth in unrighteousness:
- 19 Seeing, what may be known of God, that same is manifest among them, for God did shew it unto them.
- 20 So that his invisible things: that is to say, his eternal power and Godhead; are understood and seen, by the works from the creation of the world. So that they are without excuse,
- 21 Inasmuch as when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful, but waxed full of vanities in their imaginations, and their foolish hearts were blinded.
- 22 When they counted themselves wise, they became fools,
- 23 And turned the glory of the immortal God, unto the similitude of the image of mortal man, and of birds, and four footed beasts, and of serpents.
- 24 Wherefore God likewise ⁴⁴gave them up unto their hearts lusts, unto uncleanness, to defile their own bodies between themselves:
- 25 Which turned his truth unto a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the maker, which is blessed forever. Amen.
- 26 For this cause God gave them up unto shameful lusts, For

_

⁴⁴ Gave them up to reprobate minds

Romans 1:27 Commit such things are worthy of death

even their women did change the natural use, unto the unnatural.

- 27 And likewise also the men left the natural use of the woman, and burned in their lusts one on another. And man with man wrought filthiness and received in themselves the reward of their error as it was according.
- 28 And as it seemed not good unto them to be known of God, even so God delivered them up unto a lewd mind that they should do those things, which were not comely,
- 29 Being full of all unrighteousness doing, of fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness, full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, evil conditioned, whisperers,
- 30 Backbiters, haters of God, doers of wrong, proud boasters, bringers up of evil things, disobedient to father and mother,
- 31 Without understanding, covenant breakers, unloving, trucebreakers, and merciless.
- 32 Which men though they knew the righteousness of God how that they which commit such things are worthy of death, yet not only do the same, but also have pleasure in them that do them.

CHAPTER 2

THEREFORE art thou inexcusable O man, whosoever thou be that judgest. for in the same wherein thou Judgest another, thou condemnest thy self. for thou that judgest; doest even the same self things

- 2 But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things.
- 3 Thinkest thou this, O thou man that judgest them which do such things, and yet doest even the very same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?
- 4 Either despisest thou the riches of his goodness, patience and longsufferance? and rememberest not how that the kindness of God leadeth thee to repentance?
- 5 But thou after thine hard heart that cannot repent, heapest ve together the treasure of wrath against the day of vengeance,

The treasure of wrath

Romans 2:21

when shall be opened the righteous judgment of God,

- 6 Which will reward every man according to his deeds:
- 7 That is to say praise, honour and immortality, to them which continue in good doing, and seek eternal life.
- 8 But unto them that are rebellious and disobey the truth, yet followed iniquities, shall come indignation and wrath,
- 9 Tribulation and anguish, upon the soul of every man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile.
- 10 To every man that doeth good, shall come praise, honour, and peace, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:
- 11 For there is no partiality with God
- 12 But whosoever hath sinned without law, shall perish without law.
- 13 For before God they are not righteous which hear the law: but the doers of the law shall be justified.
- 14 For if the Gentiles, which have no law, do of nature the things contained in the law: then they having no law are a law unto themselves,
- 15 Which shew the deed of the law written in their hearts: while their conscience beareth witness unto them, and also their thoughts, accusing one another or excusing,
- 16 At the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel.
- 17 Behold, thou art called a Jew, and trustest in the law, and rejoiceth in God,
- 18 And knoweth his will, and hast experience of good and bad, in that thou art informed by the law:
- 19 And believest that thou thyself art a guide unto the blind, a light to them which are in darkness,
- 20 An informer of them which lack discretion, a teacher of unlearned, which hast the example of that which ought to be known, and of the truth in the law.
- 21 But thou which teachest another teachest not thyself, thou preachest a man should not steal: and yet thou dost steal.

Romans 2:22 Gentiles and Jews equalLy guilty under sin

- 22 Thou sayest, a man should not commit adultery, and thou breakest wedlock. Thou abhorrest images, and robbest God of his honour.
- 23 Thou rejoiceth in the law, and through breaking the law dishonourest God.
- 24 For the name of God is evil spoken of among the Gentiles through you, as it is written.
- 25 Circumcision verily availeth, if thou keep the law. But if thou break the law, thy circumsiion is made uncircumcision
- 26 Therefore if the uncircumcised keep the right things contained in the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?
- 27 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature (if it keep the law) judge thee, which being under the letter and circumcision, dost transgresses the law?
- 28 For he is not a Jew, which is a Jew outward. Neither is that thing circumcision, which is outward in the flesh.
- 29 But he is a Jew, which is hid within and the circumcision of the heart is the true circumcision, which is in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

CHAPTER 3

WHAT preferment then hath the Jew? or what advantage circumcision?

- 2 Surely very much: First unto them, was committed the word of God
- 3 What then though some of them did not believe? shall their unbelief make the promise of God without effect?
- 4 God forbid. Let God be true and all men liars as it is written: That thou mightest be justifyed in thy sayings and shouldest overcome when thou art judged.
- 5 If our unrighteousness make the righteousness of God more excellent: what shall we say? Is God unrighteous, which taketh vengeance? I speak after the manner of men.
- 6 God forbid: how then shall God judge the world

For all have sinned

Romans 3:22

- 7 If the ⁴⁵verity of God appears more excellent through my life unto his praise, why am I henceforth judged as a sinner?
- 8 And say not rather, (as men evil speak of us, and as some affirm that we say) let us do evil, that good may come thereof, whose damnation is just.
- 9 What say we then? Are we better then they? No in no wise: for we have already proved how that both Jews and Gentiles are all under sin;
- 10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:
- 11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.
- 12 They are all gone out of the way, they are all made unprofitable: there is none that doeth good, no not one.
- 13 Their throat is an open sepulcher; with their tongues they have deceived; the poison of asps is under their lips:
- 14 Whose mouths are full of cursing and bitterness:
- 15 Their feet are swift to shed blood:
- 16 Destruction and wretchedness are in their ways:
- 17 And the way of peace they have not known:
- 18 There is no fear of God before their eyes:
- 19 Yea, and we know that whatsoever the law saith, he saith it to them, which are under the law: that all mouths may be stopped, and all the world be subdued to God.
- 20 Because that by the deeds of the law shall no flesh be justified in the sight of God: for by the law cometh the knowledge of sin.
- 21 Now verily, is the righteousness that cometh of God declared, without the fulfilling of the law, having witness yet of the law and of the prophets;
- 22 The righteousness no doubt which is good before God cometh by the faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all that believe: there is no difference:

-

⁴⁵ Verity that is truthfulness

Romans 3:23

HE is just and justifier

- 23 For all have sinned, and lack the praise that is of valor before God:
- 24 But are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:
- 25 Whom God hath made a seat of mercy through faith in his blood, to shew the righteousness which before him is of valor in that he forgiveth the sins that are past, which God did suffer
- 26 To shew at this time the righteousness, that is allowed of him that he might be counted just, and a justifier, of him which believeth on Jesus.
- 27 Where is then thy rejoicing? It is excluded. By what law? by the law of works? Nay but by the law of faith.
- 28 For we suppose that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.
- 29 Is he the God of the Jews only? Is he not also the God of the Gentiles? Yes even of the Gentiles also.
- 30 For it is God only which justifieth circumcision which is of faith and uncircumcision through faith,
- 31 Do we then destroy the law through faith? God forbid. But we rather maintain the law.

- HAT shall we say then that Abraham our father as pertaining to The flesh did find?
- 2 If Abraham were justified by deeds, then hath he wherein to rejoice: but not with God.
- 3 For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.
- 4 To him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of favour: but of duty.
- 5 To him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, is his faith counted for righteousness.
- 6 Even as David describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God ascribed righteousness without deeds,

Staggered not at the promise

Romans 4:18

- 7 Blessed are they whose unrighteousness are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.
- 8 Blessed is that man to whom the Lord imputeth not sin.
- 9 Came this blessedness then upon the circumcised, or upon the uncircumcised? we say verily how that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.
- 10 How was it reckoned? In the time of circumcision? or in the time before he was circumcised? Not in time of circumcision, but when he was yet uncircumcised.
- 11 And he received the sign of circumcision, as a seal of that righteousness which is by faith which faith he had yet being uncircumcised: that he should be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed to them also:
- 12 And that he might be the father of the circumcised not because they are circumcised only: but because they walk also in the steps of that faith that was in our father Abraham, before the time of circumcision.
- 13 For the promise that he should be the heir of the world was not given to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law: but through the righteousness which cometh of faith.
- 14 For if they which are of the law be heirs, then is faith but vane and the promise of none effect.
- 15 Because the law causeth wrath, for where no law is, there is no transgression.
- 16 Therefore by faith, the [inheritance is given] that it might come of grace: and the promise might be sure to all the seed: not to them only which are of the law: but also to them which are of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,
- 17 As it is written: I have made thee a father of many nations, even before God, whom thou hast believed which quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were
- 18 Which Abraham contrary to hope believed in hope, that he should be the father of many nations, according to that which

Romans 4:19

Death reigned from Adam to Moses

was spoken:

- 19 So shall thy seed be. And he fainted not in the faith, nor yet considered his own body which was now dead, even when he was almost an hundred years old: neither yet that Sara was past childbearing.
- 20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was made strong in the faith and gave honour to God;
- 21 Being fully certified that, what he had promised, that he was able to make good.
- 22 And therefore was it reckoned to him for righteousness
- 23 It is not written for him only, that it was reckoned to him for righteousness:
- 24 But for us also, to whom it shall be counted, for righteousness if so we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from death;
- 25 Which was delivered for our sins, and raised again for our justification.

- THEREFORE because we are justified by faith, we are at peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:
- 2 By whom we have a way in through faith unto this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the praise that shall be given of God.
- 3 Neither do we so only, but also we rejoice in tribulation, for we know that tribulation bringeth patience;
- 4 And patience bringeth experience; experience, bringeth hope:
- 5 And hope maketh not ashamed; for the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.
- 6 For when we were yet weak according to the time: Christ died for us, which were ungodly.
- 7 Yet scarce will any man die for a righteous man: Peradventure for a good man durst a man die.
- 8 But God setteth out his love that he hath to us seeing, that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

Baptized to die with

Romans 5:20

- 9 Much more then, now (seeing we are justified by his blood)we shall be saved from wrath through him.
- 10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son: much more, seeing we are reconciled, we shall be preserved by his life.
- 11 Not only so, but we also joy in God by the means of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have received the atonement.
- 12 Wherefore, as by one-man sin entered into the world, and death by the means of sin. And so death went over all men, insomuch that all men sinned.
- 13 For even until the time of the law was sin in the world: but sin was not regarded, as long as there was no law,
- 14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses even over them also that sinned not, with like transgression, as did Adam: which is similitude of him that is to come.
- 15 But the gift is not like as the sin. For if through the sin of one, many be dead: much more plenteous upon many, was the grace of God, and the gift by grace: which grace was given by one man, Jesus Christ.
- 16 And the gift is not over one sin, as death came through one sin of one that sinned. for damnation came of one sin unto condemnation: but the gift came to justify from many sins.
- 17 For if by the sin of one death reigned by the means of one; much more shall they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousness reign in life by the means of one (that is to say Jesus Christ).
- 18 Likewise then as by the sin of one, condemnation; came on all men: even so by the justifying of one cometh the righteousness that bringeth life, upon ⁴⁶all men.
- 19 For as by one man's disobedience many became sinners: so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous
- 20 But the law in the meantime entered in, that sin should increase. Neverthelater where abundance of sin was, there was

-

⁴⁶ All men who are Christ's

Romans 5:21

Whereunto ye were delivered

more plenteousness of grace.

21 That as sin had reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life, by the help of Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER 6

Hat shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that there may be abundance of grace?

- 2 God forbid. How shall we, that are dead as touching sin, live any longer therein?
- 3 Remember ye not, that all we which are baptized in the name of Jesus Christ are baptized to die with him?
- 4 We are buried with him by baptism for to die; that likewise as Christ was raised up from death by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in a new life.
- 5 For if we be graft in death like unto him, Even so must we be in the resurrection.
- 6 This we must remember that our old man is crucified with him, also that the body of sin might utterly be destroyed, that henceforth we should not be servants of sin.
- 7 For he that is dead is justified from sin.
- 8 Wherefore if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall live with him:
- 9 Remembering that Christ once risen from death dieth no more; death hath no more power over him.
- 10 For as touching that he died, he died concerning sin once: and as touching that he liveth, he liveth unto God
- 11 Likewise, imagine ye also that ye are dead concerning sin. but are alive unto God, through Jesus Christ our Lord.
- 12 Let not sin reign therefore in your mortal body, that ye should thereunto obey in the lusts of it.
- 13 Neither give ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but give your selves unto God, as they that are alive from death, and give your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.
- 14 Let not sin have power over you: for ye are not under the

Thou shalt not lust

Romans 7:3

law, but under grace.

- 15 What then? Shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.
- 16 Remember ye not, how that to whomsoever ye commit yourselves as whom ye obey: whether it be of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?
- 17 God be thanked, that though ye were once the servants of sin, ye have yet obeyed with the heart unto the form of doctrine whereunto ye were delivered.
- 18 Ye are then made free from sin and are become the servants of righteousness.
- 19 I will speak grossly because of the infirmities of your flesh: As ye have given your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity, from iniquity unto iniquity: even so now give your members servants unto righteousness that ye maybe sanctified.
- 20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were not under righteousness.
- 21 What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.
- 22 But now are ye delivered from sin, and made the servants of God, and have your fruit, that ye should be sanctified, and the end everlasting life.
- 23 For the reward of sin is death; but eternal life is the gift of God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAPTER 7

REMEMBER ye not brethren (I speak to them that know the law) how that the law hath power over a man as long as it endureth?

- 2 For the woman which is in subjection to a man is bound by the law to the man as long as he liveth; If the man be dead, she is loosed from the law of the man.
- 3 So then if while the man liveth, she couple herself with another man, she shall be counted a wedlock breaker, But if the man be dead she is free from the law: so that she is no

Romans 7: 4

Sin is without measure sinful

wedlock breaker, though she couple herself with another man.

- 4 Even so, ye my brethren, are dead concerning the law by the body of Christ; that ye, should be coupled to another, (I mean to him that is risen again from death) that we should bring forth fruit unto God.
- 5 For when we were in the flesh, the lusts of sin, which were stirred up by the law, reigned in our members to bring forth fruit unto death.
- 6 But now are we delivered from the law, and dead from that whereunto we were in bondage; that we should serve in a new conversation of the spirit, and not in the old conversation of the letter.
- 7 What shall we say then? is the law sin? God forbid: but I knew not what sin meant, but by the law: for I had not known what lust had meant, except the law had said thou shalt not lust.
- 8 But sin took an occasion by the means of the commandment and wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead.
- 9 I once lived without law. But when the commandment came, sin revived, and I was dead.
- 10 And the very same commandment which was ordained unto life, was found to be unto me an occasion of death.
- 11 For sin, took occasion by the means of the commandment, and so deceived me, and by the self commandment slew me.
- 12 Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, just, and good.
- 13 Was that then which is good made death unto me? God forbid. Nay sin was death unto me, that it might appear, how that sin by the means of that which is good, had wrought death in me: that sin which is under the commandment might be out of measure sinful.
- 14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin

Which walk after the Spirit

Romans 8:5

- 15 Because I wot not, what I do. for what I would that do I not: but what I hate, that do I.
- 16 If I do now, that which I would not, I grant to the law that it is good.
- 17 So then now it is not I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.
- 18 For I know that in me (that is to say in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing. To will is present with me: but I find no means to perform that, which is good.
- 19 For I do not that good thing which I would: but that evil do I, which I would not.
- 20 Finally if I do that I would not then is it not I that do it but sin that dwelleth in me, doeth it.
- 21 I find then by the law that when I would do good, evil is present with me.
- 22 I delight in the law of God, concerning the inner man.
- 23 But I see another law in my members rebelling against the law of my mind, and subduing me unto the law of sin, which is in my members.
- 24 O wretched man that I am: who shall deliver me from this body of death?
- 25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then I myself in my mind serve the law of God, and in my flesh the law of sin.

- HERE is then no damnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, which walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit.
- 2 For the law of the spirit that bringeth life through Jesus Christ hath delivered me from the law of sin and death.
- 3 For what the law could not do in as much it was weak because of the flesh: That performed God, and sent his Son in the similitude of sinful flesh and by sin damned sin in the flesh:
- 4 That the righteousness required of the law might be fulfilled in us, which walk not after the flesh but after the Spirit.
- 5 For they that are carnal, are carnally minded. But they that

Romans 8:6

The same spirit certifieth

are spiritual are spiritually minded.

- 6 To be carnally minded is death: but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.
- 7 Because that the fleshly mind is enmity against God: for it is not obedient to the law of God, neither can be.
- 8 So then they that are given to the flesh cannot please God.
- 9 But ye are not given to the flesh, but to the spirit: if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. If there be any man that hath not the Spirit of Christ, the same is none of his.
- 10 If Christ be in you the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life for righteousness sake.
- 11 Wherefore if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from death dwell in you: even he that raised up Christ from death shall quicken your mortal bodies because that his Spirit dwelleth in you.
- 12Therefore brethren we are now debtors not to the flesh to live after the flesh.
- 13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye must die, But if ye mortify the deeds of the body, by the help of the Spirit ye shall live.
- 14 For as many as are led by the spirit of God, they are the sons of God.
- 15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage any more to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba Father.
- 16 The same Spirit certifieth our spirit that we are the sons of God:
- 17 If we be sons, we are also heirs; the heirs I mean of God, and heirs jointly with Christ: if so be that we suffer together that we may be glorified together.
- 18 For I suppose that the afflictions of this life are not worthy of the glory which shall be shewed upon us.
- 19 Also the fervent desire of the creatures abideth, looking when the sons of God shall appear.
- 20 Because the creatures are subdued to vanity against their

It is God that justifieth

Romans 8:32

will: but for his will which subdueth them in hope.

- 21 For the very creatures shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the sons of God.
- 22 For we know that every creature groaneth with us also, and travaileth in pain even unto this time.
- 23 Not they only, but even we also which have the first fruits of the Spirit, mourn in ourselves and waiting for the (adoption) and looking for the deliverance of our bodies.
- 24 For we are saved by hope. But hope that is seen is not hope. for how can a man hope for that which he seeth?
- 25 But and if we hope for that we see not, then do we abide for it, with patience.
- 26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what to desire as we ought: but the Spirit maketh intercession mightily for us with groanings, which cannot be expressed with tongue.
- 27 And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit: for he maketh intercession for the saints according to the pleasure of God.
- 28 For we know that all things work for the best unto them that love God which also are the called of his purpose.
- 29 For those which he foreknew, he also did predestinate, that they should be like fashioned unto the shape of his Son, that he might be the first begotten Son among many brethren.
- 30 Moreover which he before predestinated them he also called, and which he called, them also he justified, which he justified them he also glorified.
- 31 What shall we then say unto these things? if God be on our side: who can be against us?
- 32 He which spared not his own Son, but gave him for us all:

Romans 8: 33

It is God that justiiyeth

how shall he not with him give us all things also?

- 33 Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's chosen? it is God that justifieth,
- 34 Who then shall condemn? it is Christ which has died, yea rather which is risen again, which is also on the right hand of God, and maketh intercession for us.
- 35 Who shall separate us from the love of God? shall tribulation? or anguish? or persecution? or hunger? or nakedness? or peril? or sword?
- 36 As it is written: For thy sake we are killed all day long and are counted as sheep appointed to be slain.
- 37 Nevertheless in all these things we overcome strongly through his help that loved us.
- 38 Yea and I am sure that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor rulers, nor power nor things present, nor things to come,
- 39 Neither height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to depart us from the love of God, shewed in Christ Jesus our Lord.

CHAPTER 9

asy the truth in Christ, and lie not, in that whereof my conscience beareth me witness in the Holy Ghost,

- 2 That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart.
- 3 For I have wished myself to be acursed from Christ for my brethren, and my kinsmen as pertaining to the flesh:
- 4 Which are the Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the law that was given, and the service of God, and the promises:
- 5 Whose also are the fathers, and they of whom (as concerning

The purpose of God according to election

Romans 9:19

the flesh) Christ came, which is God over all things, blessed forever Amen.

- 6 I speak not these things as though the words of God had taken none effect. For they are not all Israelites, which came of Israel:
- 7 Neither are they all children straightway, because they are the seed of Abraham. But in Isaac shall thy seed be called:
- 8 That is to say, they which are the children of the flesh, are not the children of God. but the children of promise are counted the seed.
- 9 For this is a word of promise, about this time will I come, and Sara shall have a son. neither was it so with her only: but also when Rebecca was with child by one I mean by our father Isaac
- 11 Ere the children were born, when they had neither done good neither bad: that the purpose of God which is by election might stand,
- 12 it was said unto her, not by the reason of works but by grace of the caller: the elder shall serve the younger.
- 13As it is written, Jacob have I loved but Esau he hated.
- 14 What shall we say then? is there any unrighteousness with God? God forbid.
- 15 For he saith to Moses: I will shew mercy to whom I shew mercy: and will have compassion on whom I have compassion.
- 16 So lieth it not then in a man's will or cunning but in the mercy of God.
- 17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh: Even for this same purpose have I stirred you up to shew my power on ye and that my name myght be declared through out all the world.
- 18 So hath he mercy on whom he will and whom he will he maketh hard hearted.
- 19 Thou wilt say then unto me: why then blameth he us yet? For who can resist his will?

Romans: 9:20 Stumbled at the stumbling stone

- 20 But o man what art thou which disputest with God? Shall the work say to the workman: why hast thou made me on this fashion?
- 21 Hath not the potter power over the clay even of the same lump to make one vessell unto honour and another unto dishonour?
- 22 Even so God willing to shew his wrath and to make his power known suffered with long patience the vessels of wrath ordained to damnation
- 23 that he might declare the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy which he had prepared unto glory:
- 24 That is to say us which he called not of the Jews only but also of The Gentiles.
- 25 As he saith in Osee: I will call them my people which were not my people: and her beloved which was not beloved.
- 26 And it shall come to pass in the place where it was said unto them ye are not my people, that there they shall be called the children of the living God.
- 27 But Esaias crieth concerning Israel though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea yet shall a remnant be saved.
- 28 He finisheth the work verily and maketh it short in righteousness for a short work will God make on earth.
- 29 And as Isaiah said before: Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us seed we had been made as Sodom and had been likened to Gomorrha
- 30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not righteousness, have overtaken righteousness, I mean the righteousness which cometh of faith.
- 31 But Israel, which followed the law of righteousness, could not attain unto the law of righteousness.
- 32 And wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith: but as it were by the works of the law. For they have stumbled at the

That they might be saved

Romans 10:12

stumblingstone;

33 As it is written: Behold, I put in Sion a stumblingstone and a rock which shall make men fall. And none that believe on him shall be ashamed.

CHAPTER 10

BRETHREN my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel, is that they might be saved.

- 2 For I bear them record that they have a fervent mind to Godward but not according to knowledge.
- 3 For they are ignorant of the righteousness which is allowed before God, and go about to establish their own righteousness, and therefore are not obedient unto the righteousness which is of value before God.
- 4 For Christ is the end of the law to justify all that believe.
- 5 Moses describeth the righteousness which cometh of the law, how that the man which doeth the things of the law shall live therein.
- 6 But the righteousness which cometh of faith speaketh on this wise. Say not in thine heart, who shall ascend into heaven? (That is nothing else than to fetch Christ down)
- 7 Or, who shall descend into the deep? (that is, nothing else but to fetch up Christ from death)
- 8 But what saith the scripture? The word is nigh thee even in thy mouth, and in thine heart: This word is the word of faith, which we preach
- 9 For if thou shalt knowledge with thy mouth that Jesus is the which we preach;
- Lord, and shalt believe with thine heart that God raised him up from death, thou shalt be safe.
- 10 For the belief of the heart justifieth: and knowledge with the mouth maketh a man safe.
- 11 For the scripture saith: whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.
- 12 There is no difference between the Jew and the Gentile: for

Romans 10:13

The word of faith which we preach

one is Lord of all which is rich unto all that call on him.

- 13 For whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be safe.
- 14 But how shall they call on him on whom they believed not? How shall they believe on him of whom they have not heard? How shall they hear without a preacher?
- 15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? As it is written: how beautiful are the feet of them, which bring glad tidings of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!
- 16 But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Isaiah saith, Lord, who shall believe our sayings?
- 17 So then faith cometh by hearing and hearing cometh by the word of God.
- 18 But I ask: have they not heard? No doubt, their sound went out into all lands: and their words into the ends of the world.
- 19 But I demand, whether Israel did know or not? First Moses saith, I will provoke you for to envy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation, I will anger you.
- 20 Isaiah after that is bold, and saith. I am found of them that sought me not; and have appeared to them that asked not after me.
- 21 And against Israel he saith: All day long have I stretched forth my hands unto a people that believeth not but speaketh against me.

- asy then: hath God cast a way his people? God forbid. For even I verily am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, and of the tribe of Benjamin
- 2 God hath not cast away his people which he knew before. Either wot ye not what the scripture saith by the mouth of Elijah? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,
- 3 Lord they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine

The election of grace

Romans 11:15

altars; and I am left only, and they seek my life.

- 4 But what saith the answer of God to him again? I have reserved unto me seven thousand men, which have not bowed the knee to Baal.
- 5 Even so at this time there is a remnant left through the election of grace.
- 6 If it be of grace, then is it not of works. for then were grace no more grace. If it be of works then is it no more grace: for then were deserving no longer deserving.
- 7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that, that he sought, No but yet the election hath obtained it, the remnant are blinded
- 8 According as it is written, God hath given them the spirit of ⁴⁷unquietness, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear; even unto this day.
- 9 And David saith: Let their table be made a snare, to take Them withal, and an occasion to fall, and a reward unto them, 10 Let their eyes be blinded, that they see not: and ever bow down their backs.
- 11 I say then, have they therefore stumbled, that they should but fall only? God forbid: but through their fall is salvation happened unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them, withal.
- 12 Wherefore if the fall of them, be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles: How much more should it be so, if they all believed?
- 13 I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I will magnify mine office:
- 14 That I might provoke them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.
- 15 For if the casting a way of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life again from death?

_

⁴⁷ A spirit of discomfort

Romans 11:16

Blinded that they see not

- 16 For if one piece be holy the whole heap is holy: And if the root be holy, the branches are holy also.
- 17 Though some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, art grafted in among them, and made partaker of the root and fatness of the olive tree;
- 18 Boast not thyself against the branches, For if thou boast thyself, remember that thou bearest not the root but the root, thee.
- 19 Thou wilt say then: the branches are broken off that I might be grafted in.
- 20 Thou sayest well: because of unbelief they are broken off and thou standest steadfast in faith.
- 21 Be not high minded but fear: seeing that God spared not the natural branches lest haply he also spare not thee.
- 22 Behold the kindness and 48 rigorousness of God: on them which fell, rigorousness: but towards thee, kindness, if thou continue in his kindness. Or else thou shalt be hewn off
- 23 And they if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in again: for God is of power to graft them in again.
- 24 For if thou wast cut out of a natural wild olive tree, and wast grafted contrary to nature in a true olive tree: how much more shall the natural branches, be grafted in their own olive tree again.
- 25 I would not, that this secret should be hid from you my brethren, (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits:) that partly blindness is happened in Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles be come in:
- 26 And so all Israel shall be saved. As it is written: There shall come out of Sion he that doth deliver, and shall turn away the ungodliness of Jacob
- 27 And this is my covenant unto them when, I shall take away

-

 $^{^{48}}$ Here Rigorousness denotes strictness, exactness

Who hath known the mind of the Lord

Romans 12:3

their sins.

- 28 As concerning the gospel they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election they are loved for the Father's sake.
- 29 For verily the gifts and calling of God are such that it cannot repent him, of them,
- 30 For look as ye in time passed have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief:
- 31 Even so now have they not believed, the mercy which is happened unto you, that they also may obtain mercy.
- 32 God hath wrapped all nations in unbelief, that he might have mercy on all.
- 33 O the depth of the abundant wisdom and knowledge of God: how unsearchable are his judgments and his ways past finding out.
- 34 For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or who was his councilor?
- 35 or who hath first given unto him, that he might be recompensed again?
- 36 For of him, and through him, and for him, are all things: To him be glory for ever Amen.

- 2 And fashion not your selves like unto this world: But be ye changed in your shape by the renewing of your witts, that ye may feel what thing that good, that acceptable, and perfect will of God is.
- 3 For I say (through the grace that is given unto me) to every becometh him to esteem: but that he discretely judge of himself, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure

Romans 12:4

That that which is evil

of faith.

- 4 As we have many members in one body and all members:
- 5 So we being many are one body, in Christ and every man (among ourselves) one another's members seeing,
- 6 That we have divers gifts according to the grace that is given unto us: if any man have the gift of prophesy let him have it that it be agreeing unto the faith.
- 7 Let him that hath an office wait on his office. Let him that teacheth, take heed to his doctrine.
- 8 Let him that exorteth, give attendance to his exhortation. If any man give, let him do it with singleness. Let him that ruleth do it with diligence, If any man show mercy, let him do it with cheerfulness.
- 9 Let love be without dissimulation. Hate that which is evil, and cleave unto that which is good.
- 10 Be kind one to another with brotherly love. In giving honour, go one before another.
- 11 Let not that business which ye have in hand, be tedious to you. Be fervent in the spirit, apply yourselves to the time.
- 12 Rejoice in hope. Be patient in tribulation. continue in prayer.
- 13 Distribute unto the necessity of the saints and diligently to harbour
- 14 Bless them which persecute you: bless but curse not.
- 15 Be merry with them that are merry, weep with them that weep.
- 16 Be of like affection one towards another, be not high minded: but make yourselves equal to them of the lower sort. Be not wise in your own opinions of all men.
- 17 Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide afore hand things honest in the sight of all men

But to love one another

Romans 13:9

- 18 If it be possible, howbeit of your part have peace with all men
- 19 Dearly beloved avenge not yourselves, but give room unto the wrath of God. For it is written: vengeance is mine and I will reward saith the Lord.
- 20 Therefore if thine enemy hunger feed him: if he thirsts give him drink. for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head:
- 21 Be not overcome of evil: But overcome evil with goodness.

- ET every soul submit himself unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God,
- 2 The powers that be, are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.
- 3 For rulers are not to be feared for good works but for evil. Wilt thou be without fear of the power? Do well then: and so shalt thou be praised of the same.
- 4 For he is the minister of God for thy wealth. But and if thou do evil then fear: for he beareth not a sword for naught: but is minister of God to take vengeance on them that do evil.
- 5 Wherefore ye must needs obey, not for fear of vengeance only: but also because of conscience sake.
- 6 And even for this cause pay ye tribute: for they are Gods ministers, serving for the same purpose.
- 7 Give to every man therefore his due: tribute to whom tribute belongeth; custom to whom custom is due: fear to whom fear belongeth; honour to whom honour pertaineth.
- 8 Owe nothing to any man: but to love one another: for he that Loveth another fulfilleth the law.
- 9 For these commandments: Thou shalt not commit adultery: Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not steal: Thou shalt not bear

Romans 13:10

Love fulfills the law

false witness: Thou shalt not desire and so forth (if there be any other commandment) they are all comprehended in this saying: Love thine neighbor as thy self.

- 10 Love hurteth not his neighbor: Therefore is love the fulfilling of the law.
- 11 This also we know, I mean the season, how that it is time that we should now awake out of sleep, for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.
- 12 The night is passed and the day is come nigh. Let us therefore cast away the deeds of darkness and let us put on the (Armour) of light.
- 13 Let us walk honestly as it were in the day light: not in eating and drinking: neither in chambering and wantonness: neither in strife and envying.
- 14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ. And make not provision for the flesh to fulfill the lusts of it

CHAPTER 14

- H IM that is weak in the faith receive unto you, not in disputing and troubling his conscience.
- 2 One believeth that he may eat all things: Another, which is weak, eateth herbs.
- 3 Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not: And let not him which eateth not judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.
- 4 Who art thou that Judgest another man's servant? Whether he standeth or falleth that pertaineth unto his master: Yea, he shall stand. for God is able to make him stand. day and day.
- 5 Another man counteth all days alike. See that no man waver in his own meaning.
- 6 He that observeth one day more than another doeth it for the Lords pleasure: and he that observeth not one day more than another, doeth it to please the Lord

also: He that eateth, doeth it to please the Lord, for he giveth

None of us liveth of himself

Romans 14:20

God thanks.

- 7 And he that eateth not, eateth not to please the Lord, withal and giveth God thanks.
- 8 For none of us liveth his own servant: neither doth any of us dieth his own servant.
- If we live we live to be at the Lords will. and if we die we die at the Lords will. whether we live therefore or die we are the Lord's.
- 9 For Christ therefore died, and rose again, and revived, that he might be Lord both of dead and quick.
- 10 But why dost thou then judge thy brother? Or why dost thou despise thy brother? We shall all be brought before the judgment seat of Christ.
- 11 For it is written: as truly as I live, saith the Lord, all knees shall bow to me, and all tongues shall give a knowledge to God.
- 12 So shall everyone of us give account of himself to God.
- 13 Let us. not therefore judge one another anymore, but judge this rather that no man put a stumbling block or an occasion to fall in his brothers way.
- 14 For I know and am full certified in the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing common of itself: but unto him that judgeth it to be common: to him is it common.
- 15 If thy brother be grieved with thy meat, now walkest thou not charitably. Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died
- 16 Cause not your treasure to be evil spoken of:
- 17 For the Kingdom of God is not meat and drink: but righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.
- 18 For whosoever in these things serveth Christ pleaseth well God, and is commended of men.
- 19 Let us follow those things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another.
- 20 Destroy not the work of God for a little meat's sake. All things are pure: but it is evil for that man which eateth with

Romans 14:21

The glad tidings of God

hurt of his conscience

- 21 It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, neither anything whereby thy brother stumbleth, or falleth, or is made weak.
- 22 Hast thou faith? have it with thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.
- 23 For he that maketh conscience, is damned if he eat: because he doth it not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith that same is sin.

- W E which are strong ought to bear the frailness of them which are weak, and not to stand in our own conceits.
- 2 Let every man please his neighbor unto his wealth and edifying.
- 3 For Christ pleased not himself; but, as it is written, The rebukes of them which rebuked thee fell on me.
- 4 Whatsoever things are written afore time are written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scripture might have hope.
- 5 The God of patience and consolation gave unto everyone of you that ye be like minded one towards another after the example of Christ:
- 6 That ye all agreeing together may with one mouth praise God, the Father of our Lord Jesus.
- 7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ received us to the praise of God.
- 8 And I say that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers.
- 9 And let the Gentiles praise God for his mercy as it is written: For this cause I will praise thee among the Gentiles, and sing in thy name.

That I may come unto you with joy

Romans 15:21

- 10 And again he saith: rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people.
- 11 And again praise the Lord all ye Gentiles and laude him all nations.
- 12 And in another place Isaiah saith: there shall be the root of Jesse and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles: in him shall the Gentiles trust.
- 13 The God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing: that ye may be rich in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost.
- 14 I myself am full certified of you my brethren, that ye yourselves are full of goodness and filled with all knowledge. and are able to exhort one another.
- 15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have somewhat boldly written unto you, as one that putteth you in remembrance, through the grace that is given me of God,
- 16 That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ among the Gentiles, and should minister the glad tidings of God, that the Gentiles might be an acceptable offering, sanctified by the Holy Ghost.
- 17 I have therefore whereof I may rejoice in Christ Jesus in those things which pertain to God. things, which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, with word and deed
- 19 In mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God: so that from Jerusalem and the coasts round about unto Illyricum, I have filled all countries with the glad tidings of Christ.
- 20 So have I enforced myself to preach the gospel not where Christ was named lest I should have built on another man's Foundation
- 21 But as it is written: To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that heard not shall understand.

Romans 15:22

Where Christ was named

- 22 For this cause I have been often ⁴⁹let to come unto you:
- 23 But now seeing I have no more to do in these countries, and also have been desirous many years to come unto you;
- 24 When I shall take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: I trust to see you in my journey and to be brought on my way thitherward by you after that I have somewhat enjoyed you.
- 25 Now go I unto Jerusalem and minister unto the saints.
- 26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia to make a certain distribution for the poor saints which are at Jerusalem.
- 27 It hath pleased them verily; and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles be made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is to minister unto them, in carnal things.
- 28 When I have performed this and have brought them this fruit sealed. I will come back again by you into Spain
- 29 And I am sure; when I come that I shall come with abundance of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.
- 30 I beseech you, brethren, for our Lord Jesus Christs sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye help me in my business with your prayers to God for me;
- 31 That I may be delivered from them which believe not in Jewry; and that this my service which I have to Jerusalem may be accepted of the saints;
- 32 That I may come unto you with Joy, by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.
- 33 The God of peace be with you. Amen.

CHAPTER 16

L commend unto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the congregation of Cenchrea:

- 2 That ye receive her in the Lord as, it becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she needeth of you. for she hath succored many, and mine own self also.
- 3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus:

⁴⁹ Let That is hindered

The God of peace

Romans 16:19

- 4 Which have for my life laid down their own necks: Unto which not I only give thanks, but also the congregations of the Gentiles.
- 5 Likewise greet all the company that is in thy house. Salute my well beloved Epaenetus, which is the first fruits among them of Achaia.
- 6 Greet Mary, which bestowed much labour on us.
- 7 Salute Andronicus and Junia, my cousins, which were prisoners with me also, which are well taken among the apostles, and were in Christ before me.
- 8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.
- 9 Salute Urbane, our helper in Christ and Stachys my beloved.
- 10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus household.
- 11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them of the household of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.
- 12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, which women did labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured in the Lord.
- 13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.
- 14 Greet Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.
- 15 Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.
- 16 Salute one another with an holy kiss. the congregations of Christ salute you.
- 17 I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause division and give occasions of evil contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.
- 18 For they that are such serve not the Lord Jesus Christ: but their own belly; and with sweet preaching and flattering words deceive the hearts of the innocent.
- 19 For your obedience extendeth to all men. I am glad no

Romans 16:20

Salutations to the saints

doubt of you: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and to be innocent concerning evil.

- 20 The God of peace tread Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.
- 21 Timotheus my work fellow and Lucius, and Jason and, Sosipater, my kinsmen salute you.
- 22 I Tertius, which wrote this epistle salute you, in the Lord.
- 23 Gaius mine host, and the host of all the congregations saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, And Quartus a brother saluteth you.
- 24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen
- 25 To him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and preaching of Jesus Christ, in uttering of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began,
- 26 But, at the commandment of the everlasting God to stir up obedience to the faith: published among all nations:
- 27 Now is opened, by the scriptures of prophets To the same God which alone is wise, be praised through Jesus Christ forever.

A-men'

Saints by calling

1 Corinthians 1:14

PAUL'S FIRST EPISTLE OF TO THE CORINTHIANS

PAUL by vocation an Apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and brother, Sosthenes.

- 2 Unto the congregation of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, saints by calling, with all that call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ in every place, both of theirs and of ours:
- 3 Grace be with you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 4 I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God, which is given you by Jesus Christ;
- 5 That in all things ye are made rich by him, in all learning, and in all knowledge;
- 6 Even as the testimony of Jesus Christ was confirmed in you:
- 7 So that ye are behind in no gift; and wait for the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ
- 8 Which shall strengthen you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.
- 9 For God is faithful, by whom ye are called, unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.
- 10 I beseech you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak one thing, and that there be no dissension among you: but be ye knit together in one mind and in one meaning.
- 11 It is shewed unto me of you, my brethren, by them that are of the house of Chloe that there is strife among you. And this is it that I mean:
- 12 How that commonly among you one saith, I hold of Paul: another I hold of Apollos: the third I hold of Cephas: the fourth I hold of Christ.
- 13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?
- 14 I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius

1 Corinthians 1:15

Christ crucified But we preach

- 15 lest any should say that I had baptized in mine own name.
- 16 I baptized also the household of Stephanas: Furthermore I know not whether I baptized any other man or not
- 17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should have been made of none effect.
- 18 For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.
- 19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will cast away the understanding of the prudent.
- 20 Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the searcher of this world?
- 21 Hath not God made the wisdom of this world foolishness? for when the world through wisdom knew not God, in the wisdom of God: it pleased God through foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.
- 22 For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom:
- 23 But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews an occasion of falling, and unto the Greeks foolishness:
- 24 But unto them which are called, both of Jews and Greeks, we preach Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God.
- 25 For the foolishness of God is wiser than men: and the weakness of God is stronger than men.
- 26 Brethren look on your calling, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many of high degree, are called:
- 27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; And God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound things which are mighty;
- 28 And vile things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen Yea, and things of no reputation, for to bring to naught things of reputation:
- 29 That no flesh should rejoice in his presence.
- 30 And unto him pertain ye, in Christ Jesus, which of God is

Eye hath not seen

1 Corinthians 2:12

made unto us wisdom, and also, sanctification, and redemption:

31 That according as it is written: He which rejoiceth should rejoice in the Lord.

CHAPTER 2

A ND I, Brethren, when I came to you came not in gloriousness of words or of wisdom shewing unto you the testimony of God

- 2 Neither shewed I myself that I knew anything among you, save Jesus Christ even the same that was crucified.
- 3 And I was among you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling.
- 4 And my words and my preaching were not with enticing words of mans wisdom, but in shewing of the Spirit and of power:
- 5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God:
- 6 That we speak of is wisdom among them that are perfect: not the wisdom of this world, neither of the rulers of this world, (which go to naught:)
- 7But we speak the wisdom, of God, which is in secret, and lieth hidden, which God ordained before the world unto our glory:
- 8 Which wisdom none of the rulers of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.
- 9 But as it is written, The eye hath not seen, and the ear hath not heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.
- 10 But God hath opened them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things Yea the bottom of Gods secrets.
- 11 For what man knoweth the things of a man: save the spirit of a man which is within him? Even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.
- 12 And we have not received, the spirit of the world: but the Spirit which cometh of God for to know the things that are given to us of God

1 Corinthians 2:13

Every man's work shall appear

- 13 Which things also we speak, not in the cunning words of mans wisdom but with the cunning words of the Holy Ghost making spiritual comparison of spiritual things.
- 14 For the natural man perceaveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are but foolishness unto him: neither can he perceive them because he is spiritually examined.
- 15 But he that is spiritual discusseth all things: yet he himself is judged of no man.
- 16 For who knoweth the mind of the Lord, or who shall inform him? But we understand the mind of Christ.

CHAPTER 3

And I could not speak unto you brethren as unto spiritual: but as unto carnal, even as it were unto babes in Christ.

- 2 I gave you milk to drink, and not meat: for ye then were not strong, no neither yet are.
- 3 For ye are yet carnal: as long verily as there is among you envying, strife, and dissension: are ye not carnal and walk after the manner of men?
- 4 As long as one saith I hold of Paul; and another I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal?
- 5 What is Paul, What thing is Apollos, only ministers are they by whom ye believed even as the Lord gave every man grace.
- 6 I have planted: Apollos watered: but God gave increase.
- 7 So then neither is he that planteth anything, neither he that watereth: but God which gave the increase.
- 8 He that planteth and he that watereth are neither better than the other. Every man yet shall receive his reward according to his labor.
- 9 We are Gods laborers, ye are Gods husbandry, ye are Gods building.
- 10 According to the grace of God given unto me, as a wise builder, have I laid the foundation. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.
- 11 For other foundation can no man lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

Is foolishness with God

Corinthians 4:5

- 12 If any man build on this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, timber, hay, or stubble:
- it, and it shall be shewed by fire; and the fire shall try every mans work what it is.
- 14 If any mans work that he hath built upon, abide he shall receive a reward.
- 15 If any mans work burns, he shall suffer loss: but he shall be safe himself: nevertheless, yet as it were through fire.
- 16 Are ye not aware that ye are the temple of God, and how that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?
- 17 If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy. for the temple of God is Holy which temple ye are.
- 18 Let no man deceive himself. If any man seem wise among you, let him be a fool in this world, that he may be wise.
- 19 For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written: he compasseth the wise in their own craftiness.
- 20 And again God knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they be vain.
- 21 Therefore let no man rejoice in men. For all things are yours whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, whether it be the world, or life, or death, whether they be present things, or things to come, all are yours
- 22 And ye are Christ's, and Christ is God's.

- ET men this wise, esteem us even as the ministers of Christ, and dispensers of the secrets of God.
- 2 Furthermore it is required of the dispensers that they be found faithful.
- 3 With me is it but a very small thing that I should be judged of you, either of mans judgment: Yea I judge not mine own self.
- 4 I know naught by myself: yet am I not thereby justified. It is the Lord that judgeth me or who shall inform him?
- 5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord

1 Corinthians 4:6

My beloved sons I warn you

come, which will lighten things that are hidden in darkness, and open the councils of the hearts, and then shall every man have praise of God.

- 6 These things brethren, I have described in mine own person and Apollos, for your sakes; that ye might learn by us, that no man count of himself beyond that which is above written, that one ⁵⁰swell not against another for any mans cause.
- 7 For who prefereth thee? What hast thou that thou hast not received? If thou have received it why rejoiceth thou as though thou hadst not received it?
- 8 Now ye are full: now ye are made rich: ye reign as kings without us. and I would to God you did reign, that we might reign with you.
- 9 Me thinketh that God hath set forth us which are apostles, for the lowest of all as it were men, appointed to death. for we are a gazing stock, unto the world, and to angels and to men.
- 10 We are fools for Christ's sake, but ye are wise through Christ; We are weak, and ye are strong; Ye are honorable, and we are despised.
- 11 Even unto this day we hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, with fists and have no certain dwelling place;
- 12 And labor, working with our own hands; are reviled, and yet we bless; We are persecuted, and suffer it.
- 13 We are evil spoken of, and we pray: We are made as it were the filthiness of the world, the offscouring of all things even unto this time.
- 14 I write not these things to shame you: but as my beloved sons I warn you.
- 15 For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ: yet have ye not many fathers: In Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.
- 16 Wherefore I desire you to follow me.
- 17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, which is my

Ξ

⁵⁰ swell- that is be puffed up

Deliver him unto Satan

2 Corinthians 5:10

dear son, and faithful in the Lord, which shall put you in remembrance of my ways, which I have in Christ, even as I teach everywhere in all congregations.

- 18 Some swell, as though I would come to you no more.
- 19 But I will come to you shortly, if God will: and will know not the words of them which swell, but the power:
- 20 for the kingdom of God is not in words, but in power.
- 21 What will ye? Shall I come unto you with a rod, or else in love and in the spirit of meekness?

CHAPTER 5

THERE goeth a common saying that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not once named among the Gentiles: that one should have his father's wife.

- 2 And ye swell up and have not rather sorrowed that he which hath done this deed might be put from among you.
- 3 For I verily, as absent in body, even so present in Spirit, have determined already (as though I were present) of him that hath done this deed
- 4 In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my Spirit, with the power of the Lord Jesus Christ,
- 5 To deliver him unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the Spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.
- 6 Your rejoicing is not good: know ye not that a little leaven sourest the whole lump of dough? ye are sweet bread.
- 7 Purge therefore the old leaven, that ye may be new dough, as Christ our easter[pasca that is Passover] lamb is offered up for us:
- 8 Therefore let us keep Holy day, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of maliciousness and wickedness; but with the sweet bread of pureness and truth.
- 9 I wrote unto you in an epistle that ye should not company with fornicators:
- 10 And I meant not all of the fornicators of this world, either of the covetous, or of extortioners, either of the idolaters; for

1 Corinthians 5:11

Do not ye jugdge them that are within

then ye needs must have gone out of the world.

- 11 But now I write unto you that ye company not together, if any that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or a worshipper of images, either a railer, either a drunkard, or an extortioner: with him that is such see that ye eat not.
- 12 For what have I to do to judge them which are without? Do ye not judge them that are within?
- 13 Them that are without, God shall judge. put away from among yourselves that evil person.

CHAPTER 6

- How dare one of you, having business with another, go to law under the wicked, and not rather under the saints?
- 2 Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? If the world shall be judged by you, are ye not good enough to judge small trifles?
- 3 Know ye not how that we shall judge the angels? how much more may we judge things that pertain to this life?
- 4 If ye have judgments of worldly matters, take them, which are despised in the congregation and make them judges.
- 5 This I say to your shame. Is there utterly no wise man among you? what not one at all, that can judge between brother and brother?
- 6 But one brother goeth to law with another: and that under the unbelievers?
- 7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you because ye go to law one with another. Why rather suffer ye not wrong? why rather suffer ye not your selves to be robbed?
- 8 Nay, ye your selves do wrong, and defraud: and that the brethren.
- 9 Do ye not remember how that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived. for neither fornicators, nor worshippers of images, nor whoremongers, neither weaklings, neither abusers of themselves with mankind,
- 10 Neither thieves, nor the covetous, nor drunkards, nor

There is utterly a fault among you

1 Corinthians 7:3

cursed speakers nor ⁵¹pillers, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

- 11 And such were ye verily: but ye are washed: ye are sanctified: ye are justified by the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God.
- 12 All things are lawful unto me: but all things are not profitable. I may do all things: but I will be brought under no mans power.
- 13 Meats are ordained for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Let not the body be applied unto fornication, but unto the Lord, and the Lord unto the body.
- 14 God hath raised up the Lord, and shall raise us up by his power.
- 15 Either remember ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.
- 16 Do ye not understand that he which coupleth himself with an harlot is become one body? for two (saith he) shall be one flesh.
- 17 But he that is joined unto the Lord, is one spirit.
- 18 Flee fornication, All sins that a man doeth are without the body; but he that is a fornicator, sinneth against his own body
- 19 Or know ye not. how that your bodies are the temple of the Holy Ghost, which is in you, whom ye have of God, and how that ye are not your own?
- 20 For ye are dearly bought: Therefore glorify ye God in your bodies and in your Spirit, for they are God's.

CHAPTER 7

A S concerning the things wherof ye wrote unto me, it is good for a man not to touch a woman.

- 2 Nevertheless to avoid fornication let every man have his Wife, and let every woman have her husband.
- 3 Let the husband give unto the wife due benevolence. Likewise

⁵¹ Pillers that is extortiners

1 Corinthians 7:4

Lest Satan tempt you

also the wife unto the husband.

- 4 The wife hath not power over her own body: but the husband. And likewise the man hath not power over his own body: but the wife.
- 5. Withdraw not yourselves one from another, except it be with consent for a time, for to give yourselves to fasting and prayer. and afterward come again to the same thing, lest Satan tempt you for your incontinence.
- 6 This I say of favor not of commandment.
- 7 For I would that all men were as I myself: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, another after that.
- 8 I say unto the unmarried men and widows: it is good for them if they abide even as I.
- 9 But and if they cannot abstain let them marry: For it is better to marry than to 52 burn.
- 10 Unto the married command not I but the Lord: that the wife separate not herself from her husband.
- 11 If she separate herself, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled: unto her husband again. and let not the husband put away his wife from him.
- 12 To the remnant speak I, and not the Lord: If any brother have a wife that believeth not, if she be content to dwell with him, let him not put her away.
- 13 And the woman which hath to her husband an infidel if he consent to dwell with her, let her not put him away.
- 14 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife: and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: Or else were your children unclean: but now are they pure.
- 15 But and if the unbelieving depart, let him depart, A brother or a sister is not in subjection to such: God hath called us in peace.

_

⁵² Burn with lust not eternal punishment

God hath called us to peace

1 Corinthians 7:30

- 16 For how knowest thou o woman whether thou shalt save that man or no? Or how knowest thou o man whether thou shalt save thy wife or no?
- 17 But even as God hath distributed to every man, As the Lord hath called every person so let him walk: and so ordain I in all congregations.
- 18 If any man be called being circumcised, let him add nothing thereto. If any be called uncircumcised: let him not be circumcised
- 19 Circumcision is nothing, uncircumcision is nothing: but the keeping of the commandments of God is altogether.
- 20 Let every man abide in the same state, wherein he was called.
- 21 Art thou called a servant? care not for it: nevertheless if thou mayest be free, use it rather.
- 22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lords freeman. Likewise he that is called, being free, is Christ's servant.
- 23 Ye are dearly bought, be not men's servants.
- 24 Brethren let every man wherein he is called therein abide with God.
- 25 As concerning virgins I have no commandment of the Lord: yet give I council, as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.
- 26 I suppose that it is good for the present necessity, for it is good for a man so to be
- 27 Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife.
- 28 But and if thou take a wife thou sinneth not. Likewise if a virgin marry she sinneth not. Nevertheless such shall have trouble in their flesh: but I spare you.
- 29 This say I, brethren the time is short. It remaineth, that they 30 And they that weep be as though thy wept not: and they which have wives be as though they had none;

1 Corinthians 7:31

Seek not to be loosed

And they that rejoice be as though they rejoiced not and those that buy as though they possessed not:

- 31 And they that use this world be as though they used it not: for the fashion of this world goeth away.
- 32 I would have you without care: the single man careth for the things of the Lord, how he may please the Lord.
- 33 But he that hath married careth for the things of the world, how he may please his wife.
- 34 There is difference between a virgin and a wife. The single woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be pure both in body and also in spirit: But she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.
- 35 This speak I, for your profit; not to tangle you in a snare: but for that which is honest, and comely unto you, and that ye may quietly cleave unto the Lord without separation.
- 36 If any man think that it is uncomely for his virgin, if she pass the time of marriage and if so need require, let him do what he listeth, he sinneth not: let them be coupled in marriage.
- 37 Nevertheless, he that purposeth surely in his heart, having none need: but hath power over his own will:
- 38 So then he that joineth his virgin in marriage doth well. But he that joineth not his virgin in marriage doeth better.
- 39 The wife is bound to the law as long as her husband liveth If her husband sleep she is at liberty to marry with whom she will only in the Lord.
- 40 But she is happier if she so abide, in my judgment. And I think verily that I have the Spirit of God.

CHAPTER 8

T O speak of things dedicated unto idols, we are sure that we all have knowledge. Knowledge maketh a man swell: but love edifieth.

2 If any man think that he knoweth anything, he knoweth

About things dedicated to idols

1 Corinthians 9:3

nothing yet as he ought to know.

- 3 But if any man love God, the same is known of him.
- 4 To speak of meat dedicated unto idols, we are sure that there is none idol in the world and that there is none other God but one.
- 5 And though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth (as there be gods many, and lords many)
- 6 Yet unto us is there but one God, which is the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him: and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.
- 7 But every man hath not that knowledge: for some suppose that there is an idol until this hour and eat as of a thing offered unto the idol; and so their conscience being yet weak are defiled.
- 8 Meat maketh us not acceptable to God. neither if we eat are we the better; neither if we eat not, are we the worse.
- 9 But take heed that your liberty causes not the weak to fall.
- 10 For if some man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idols temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered unto the idol;
- 11 And so through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died.
- 12 When ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience ye sin against Christ.
- 13 Wherefore if meat hurt my brother I will eat no flesh while the world standeth because I will not hurt my brother.

CHAPTER 9

A M I not an apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord?

- 2 Are not ye my work in the Lord? If I be not an apostle unto others, yet I am unto you. for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord.
- 3 Mine answer to them that ask me is this,

1 Corinthians 9:4 Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox

- 4 Have we not power to eat and to drink?
- 5 Or have we not power to lead about a sister to wife as well as other apostles and as the brethren of the Lord and Cephas?
- 6 Or only I and Barnabas have not power this to do?
- 7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his own cost? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit? Who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk?
- 8 Say I these things after the manner of men? Or saith not the law the same also?
- 9 For it is written in the law of Moses. Thou shall not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take thought for oxen?
- 10 Or saith he it not altogether for our sakes? for our sakes no doubt this is written: that he which planteth ears should plant in hope: and that he which eareth in hope should be partaker of his hope.
- 11 If we sow unto you spiritual things: is it a great thing if we reap your carnal things
- 12 If others be partakers of this power over you, Wherefore are not we rather? Nevertheless we have not used this power: but suffer all things lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ.
- 13 Do ye not understand how that they which minister in the temple, have their finding of the temple? and they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar?
- 14 Even so also did the Lord ordain, that they which preach the gospel, should live of the gospel.
- 15 But I have used none of these things: neither wrote I these things, that it should be so done unto me. for it were better for me to die, than that any man should take this rejoicing from me.
- 16 In that I preach the gospel, I have nothing to rejoice of: for necessity is put unto me; Woe is it unto me, if I preach not the gospel.
- 17 If I do it with a good will, I have a reward. But if I do it against my will, an office is committed unto me.

If I preach not the: gospel

1 Corinthians 10:4

- 18 What is my reward then? Verily that when I preach the the gospel I make the gospel of Christ free, that I misuse not mine authority in the gospel
- 19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself servant unto all men, that I might win the more.
- 20 Unto the Jews, I became as a Jew, to win the Jews; to them that were under the law, was I made as though I had been under the law, to win them that were under the law.
- 21 To them that were without law became I as though I had been without law (when I was not without law, as pertaining to God but under a law as concerning Christ) to win them that were without law.
- 22 To the weak became I as weak, to win the weak. In all things I fashioned myself to all men, to save at the least some.
- 23 And this I do for the gospels sake, that I might have my part thereof.
- 24 Perceive ye not how that they which run in a course run all, vet but one receiveth the reward? So run that ye may obtain.
- 25 Every man that proveth mastery abstaineth from all things. And they do it to obtain a corruptible crown: but we to obtain an incorruptible crown
- 26 I therefore so run, not as at an uncertain thing. So fight I, not as one that beateth the air:
- 27 but I tame my body and bring it into subjection, lest after that I have preached to others I myself should be a castaway.

CHAPTER 10:

- **B**RETHREN, I would not that ye should be ignorant, of his, how that our fathers were all under a cloud, and all passed through the sea
- 2 And were all baptized under Moses in the cloud and in sea;
- 3 And did all eat of one spiritual meat;
- 4 And did all drink of one manner of spiritual drink: And they drank of that spiritual rock that followed them, which rock was Christ.

1 Corinthians 10:5

Which rock was Christ

- 5 But in many of them had God no delight: for they were verthrown in the wilderness.
- 6 These are examples, to us that we should not lust after evil things, as they lusted
- 7 Neither be ye worshippers of Images, as were some of them; according as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up again to play.
- 8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them ommitted fornication, and were destroyed in one day three and twenty thousand.
- 9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them tempted, and were destroyed of serpents.
- 10 Neither murmur ye, as some of them murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer
- 11 All these things happened unto them for example: and were written to put us in remembrance, upon whom the ends of the world are come.
- 12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.
- 13 There hath none other temptation taken you but such as followeth the nature of man, but God is faithful, which shall not suffer you to be tempted above your strength: but shall in the midst of the temptation make a way to escape it.
- 14 Wherefore, my dear beloved, flee from worshipping of idols.
- 15 I speak as unto them; which have discretion Judge ye what I say.
- 16 Is not the cup of blessing which we bless, partaking of the blood of Christ? Is not the bread which we break, partaking of the body of Christ?
- 17 Because we being many, yet are one bread, and one body in as much as we all are partakers of one bread.
- 18 Behold Israel which walketh carnally: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar? is offered to images is anything?
- 19 What say I then? that the image is anything? Or that which

Pray or prophesieth bare headed

1 Corinthians 10:33

- 20 Nay but I say that those things which the Gentiles offer, they offer to devils and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with the devils
- 21 Ye cannot drink of the cup of the Lord, and of that cup of the devils: Ye cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of devils.
- 22 Either shall we provoke the Lord? Or are we stronger than he?
- 23 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient. all things are lawful unto me, but all things edify not.
- 24 Let no man seek his own profit: but let every man seek another's wealth.
- 25 Whatsoever is sold in the market, that eat and ask no questions for conscience sake:
- 26 For the earth is the lords, and all that therein is.
- 27 If any of them that believe not bid you to a feast, and if ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you: eat, asking no question for conscience sake.
- 28 But and if any man say unto you: this is dedicated unto idols eat not of it for his sake that shewed it, and for hurting of conscience,
- 29 Conscience I say, not thine: but the conscience of that other: for why should my liberty be judged of another man's conscience?
- 30 For if I take my part with thanks, why am I evil spoken of for that thing wherefore I have given thanks.
- 31 Whether therefore ye eat or drink or whatsoever ye do, do all to the praise of God.
- 32 See that ye give no occasion of evil, neither to the Jews, nor yet to the Gentiles, neither to the congregation of God:
- 33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they might be saved.

1 Corinthians 11:1

This do ye in remembrance of me

CHAPTER 11

FOLLOW me as I do Christ 2 I commend you brethren that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances even as I delivered them to you.

- 3 I would ye knew that Christ is the head of every man. and the man is the woman's head. and God is Christ's head.
- 4 Every man praying or prophesieth having anything on his head shameth his head.
- 5 Every woman that prayeth or prophesieth bare headed dishonoureth her head: for it is even all one and the very same thing even as though she were shaven.
- 6 If the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: If it be shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her cover her head.
- 7 A man ought not to cover his head, for as much as he is the image and glory of God: The woman is the glory of the man.
- 8 For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man.
- 9 Neither was the man created for the woman's sake: but the woman for the man
- 10 For this cause ought the woman to have ⁵³power on her head for the angel's sakes.
- 11 Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.
- 12 For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man by the woman; but all is of God.
- 13 Judge in yourselves whether it be comely that a woman pray unto God bare headed.
- 14 Or else doth not nature teach you that it is a shame for a man,
- 15 If he have long hair: and a praise to a woman if she have long hair? For her hair is given her to cover her withal.
- 16 If there be any man among you that ⁵⁴lusteth to strive let

⁵³ Power- that is Authority

⁵⁴ No custom of Lusting and striving

Many are weak and sick and many sleep 1 Corinthians 11:29

him know that we have no such custom neither the congregations of God.

- 17 This I warn you of and commend not, that ye come together: not after a better manner but after a worse.
- 18 First of all, when ye come together in the congregation, I hear that there is dissention among you: and I partly believe it.
- 19 For there must be sects among you, that they which are ⁵⁵perfect among you might be known.
- 20 When ye come together a man cannot eat, the Lords supper. For every man begineth afore to eat his own supper.
- 21 And one is hungry, and another is drunken have ye not houses to eat and to drink in?
- 22 Or else despise ye the congregation of God and shame them that have not? What shall I say unto you? Shall I praise you? In this I praise you not.
- 23 That which I delivered unto you, I received of the Lord. For the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread:
- 24 And thanked, and brake, and said. Take ye and eat thee: this is my body which is broken for you. this do ye in the remembrance of me.
- 25 After the same manner he took the cup when supper was done saying. This cup is the new testament in my blood, This do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in the remembrance of me.
- 26 For as often as ye shall eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye shall shew the Lords death till he come.
- 27 Wherefore whosoever shall eat of this bread, or drink of the cup unworthily shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.
- 28 Let a man therefore examine himself, and so let him eat of the bread and drink of the cup.
- 29 For he that eateth or drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh his own damnation, because he maketh no difference, of the Lords body.

⁵⁵ Perfect- that is Justified

1 Corinthians 11:30

To profit the congregation

- 30 For this cause many are weak and sick among you and many sleep.
- 31 If we had truly judged ourselves, we should not have been judged.
- 32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, because we should not be damned with the world.
- 33 Wherefore, my Brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.
- 34 If any man hunger, let him eat at home; that ye come not together unto condemnation. Other things will I set in order when I come.

CHAPTER 12

- N spiritual things Brethren I would not have you ignorant. 2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles and went your own ways unto dumb idols, even as ye were led.
- 3 Wherefore I declare unto you that no man speaking in the Spirit of God, defieth Jesus. also no man can say that Jesus is the Lord: but by the Holy Ghost.
- 4 There are diversities of gifts verily, yet but one Spirit.
- 5 And there are differences of administrations, and yet but one Lord.
- 6 And there are divers manners of operations, and yet but one God, which worketh all things that are wrought, in all creatures.
- 7 The gifts of the Spirit are given to every man to profit the congregation.
- 8 To one is given through the spirit the utterance of wisdom; to another is given the utterance of knowledge by the same Spirit;
- 9 To another is given faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit;
- 10 To another power to do miracles; to another prophesy? to another judgment of spirits; To another divers tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues:
- 11 And these all worketh even the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally gifts even as he will.

Shew I unto you a more excellent way

Corinthians 12:28

- 12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of one body, though they be many yet are but one body, even so is Christ.
- 13 For in one Spirit are we all baptized to make one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have all drunk of one Spirit.
- 14 For the body is not one member but many.
- 15 If the foot say: I am not the hand, therefore I am not of the body; is he therefore not of the body:
- 16 And if the ear say, I am not the eye, therefore I am not of the body; is he therefore not of the body?
- 17 If all the body were an eye, where were then the ear? If all were hearing, where was the smelling?
- 18 But now hath God disposed the members everyone of them in the body, at his own pleasure.
- 19 If they were all one member: where were the bodies?
- 20 Now are there many members yet, but one body.
- 21 And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor the head also to the feet. I have no need of you.
- 22 Yea rather a great deal those members of the body, which seem to be most feeble are most necessary.
- 23 And upon those members of that body which we think less honest put we most honesty on; And our uncomely parts have most beauty on.
- 24 For our honest members need it not, But God hath so disposed the body, and hath given most honour, to that part which lacked
- 25 lest there should be any strife in the body; but that the members should indifferently care one for another.
- 26 And if one member suffer all suffer with him, if one member be had in honour all members be glad also
- 27 Ye are the body of Christ, and members one of another.
- 28 And God hath also ordained, in the congregation, first the apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, then them that do miracles, after that the gifts of healing, helpers, governors,

1 Corinthians 12:29

Concerning speaking

diversity of tongues.

- 29 Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are all teachers? Are all doers of miracles?
- 30 Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? Do all interpret?
- 31 Covet after the best gifts. And yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

CHAPTER 13

T HOUGH I spake with the tongues of men and angels, and vet had not love. I were a second and angels are to the second angels and the second angels are to the second angels. Lyet had not love, I were even as sounding brass, or as a tinkling cymbal.

- 2 And though I could prophesy, and understand all secrets and all knowledge: vet if I had all faith, so that I could move mountains, out of their places and yet had no love, I were nothing.
- 3 And though I bestowed all my goods to feed the poor and though I gave my body even that I burned, and yet had no love, it profiteth me nothing.
- 4 Love suffereth long, and is courteous; Love envieth not; Love doth not frowardly, swelleth not,
- 5 Dealeth not dishonestly, seeketh not her own, is not provoked to anger, thinketh not evil;
- 6 Rejoiceth not in iniquity: but rejoiceth in the truth.
- 7 Suffereth all things, hopeth all things, endureth in all things.
- 8 Though that prophesying shall fail, or tongues shall cease, or knowledge vanishes away, yet love falleth never away
- 9 For our knowledge is imperfect, and our prophesying is imperfect,
- 10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is Imperfect shall be done away.
- 11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I imagined as a child, But as soon as I was a man I put away childishness.
- 12 Now we see in a glass even in a dark speaking: but then

Every man hath his doctrine

1 Corinthians 14:12

shall we see face to face. Now I know imperfectly: but then shall I know even as I am known.

13 Now abideth faith, hope, and love, even these three: but the chief of these is love.

CHAPTER 14

ABOUR for love, and covet spiritual gifts, and most **∠**chiefly for to prophesy.

- 2 For he that speaketh with tongues speaketh not unto men, but unto God for no man heareth him, howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.
- 3 But he that prophesieth speaketh unto edifying and
- 4 He that speaketh with tongues profiteth himself: he that prophesieth edifieth the congregation
- 5 I would that ye all spake with tongues: but rather that ye prophesied. for greater is he that prophesieth? than he that speaketh with tongues, except he expound it also, that the congregation may have edifying.
- 6 Now brethren if I come unto you speaking with tongues: what shall I profit you, except I speak unto you, either by revelation or knowledge or prophesying, or doctrine.
- 7 Moreover when things without life, give sound: whether it be a pipe or an harp: except they make a distinction in the sounds: how shall it be known what is piped or harped?
- 8 And also if the trumpet giveth an uncertain voice, who shall prepare himself to fight?
- 9 Even so likewise when ye speak with tongues, except ye speak words that have signification, how shall it be understood what is spoken? for ye shall but speak in the air.
- 10 Many kinds of voices are in the world and none of them are without signification.
- 11 If I know not what the voice meaneth, I shall be unto him that speaketh an alien, and he that speaketh shall be an alien unto me.
- 12 Even so ye, (for as much as ye covet spiritual gifts) seek that ve may have plenty unto the edifying of the congregation.

1 Corinthians 14:13

Concerning languages

- 13 Wherefore let him that speaketh with an tongue pray that he may interpret.
- 14 If I pray with tongues, my spirit prayeth: but my mind, is without fruit.
- 15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and will pray with the mind also: I will sing with the spirit, and will sing with the mind also.
- 16 For else when thou bless with the Spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest?
- 17 Thou verily giveth thanks well, but the other is not edified.
- 18 I thank my God; I speak with tongues more than ye all:
- 19 Yet had I rather in the congregation to speak five words with my mind to the understanding, of others, rather than ten thousand words with the tongue.
- 20 Brethren, be not children in wit: howbeit as concerning maliciousness be children: but in wit be perfect.
- 21 In the law it is written, with other tongues and with other lips will I speak unto this people, and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord.
- 22 Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe: but to them that believe not: contrary wise prophesying serveth not for them that believe not: but for them which believe.
- 23 If therefore when all the congregation is come together and all speak with tongues, there come in they that are unlearned, or they which believe not: will they not say that ye are out of your wits?
- 24 But and if all prophesy and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is rebuked of all men, and is judged of every man:
- 25 And so are the secrets of his heart opened and so falleth he down on his face and worshipeth God and saith that God is with you indeed.

Let your wives keep silent

1 Corinthians 14:37

- 26 How is it then, brethren? When ye come together, every man hath his song, hath his doctrine, hath his tongue, hath his revelation, hath his interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying.
- 27 If any man speak with tongues, let it be two at once, or at the most three at once, and that by course: and let another interpret it.
- 28 But if there be no interpreter let him keep silence in the congregation and let him speak to himself and to God.
- 29 Let the prophets speak two at once or three at once, and let other judge.
- 30 If any revelation be made to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.
- 31 For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all may have comfort.
- 32 For the spirits of the prophets are in the power of the prophets.
- 33 For God is not causer of strife: but of peace, as he is in all other congregations of the saints.
- 34 Let your wives keep silence in the congregations: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but let them be under obedience, as saith the law.
- 35 If they will learn anything, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the congregation.
- 36 Sprang the word of God from you? Either came it unto you only?
- 37 If any man think himself a prophet, or spiritual: let him understand what thinges I write unto you. for they are the commandments, of the Lord.

1 Corinthians 14:38

Concerning the gospell

- 38 But and if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.
- 39 Wherefore brethren covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues.
- 40 And let all things be done honestly and in order

CHAPTER 15

BRETHREN as pertaining to the gospel which I preached unto you which ye which ye have also received, and in the which you continue

- 2 By which also ye are saved: I do you to wit after what manner I preached unto you if ye keep it except ye have believed in vain.
- 3 For first of all I delivered unto you that which I received: how that Christ died for our sins agreeing to the scriptures:
- 4 And that he was buried, and that he arose again the third day, according to the scriptures:
- 5 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve.
- 6 After that he was seen of more than five hundred Brethren at once; of which many remain unto this day, and many are fallen asleep.
- 7 After that, he appeared to James, then to all the apostles.
- 8 And last of all he was seen of me, as of one that was born out of due time.
- 9 For I am the least of all the apostles, which am not worthy to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the congregation of God.
- 10 But by the grace of God I am that I am: and his grace which is in me, was not in vain: but I labored more abundantly than they all: not I, but the grace of God which is with me.
- 11 Whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so have ye

Now is Christ risen from death

1 Corinthians 15:24

believed.

- 12 If Christ be preached how that he rose from death: how say some that are among you that there is no resurrection from death?
- 13 If there be no rising again from death: then is Christ not risen.
- 14 If Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also in vain.
- 15 Yea and we are found false witnesses of God. for we have testified of God how that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up if it be so that the dead rise not up again.
- 16 For if the dead rise not again, then is Christ not risen again.
- 17 If it be so that Christ rose not, then is your faith in vain: and yet are ye in your sins.
- 18 And thereto they which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished.
- 19 If in this life only we believe on Christ then we are of all men the miserablest.
- 20 But now is Christ risen from death, and is become the first fruits of them that slept.
- 21 For by a man came death, and by a man came resurrection from death.
- 22 For as by Adam all die: even so by Christ shall all be made alive.
- 23 And every man in his own order: The first is Christ then they that are Christ's at his coming.
- 24 Then cometh the end when he hath delivered up the kingdom to God the Father when he hath put down all rule authority and power.

1 Corinthians 15:25

How arise the dead

- 25 For he must reign, till he have put all his enemies under his feet.
- 26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.
- 27 For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him.
- 28 When all things are subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all things.
- 29 Either else what do they which are baptized over the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized over the dead?
- 30 Yea and why stand we in jeopardy every hour?
- 31 By our rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord I die daily.
- 32 That after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantangeth it me, if the dead rise not again? Let us eat and drink, tomorrow we shall die.
- 33 Be not deceived: malicious speaking corrupt good manners.
- 34 Awake, truly out of sleep, and sin not, for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this unto your rebuke.
- 35 But some man will say: how arise the dead? With what bodies come they in?
- 36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die.
- 37 And what sowest thou? Thou sowest not that body that shall be: but bare corn, (I mean either of wheat or of some other:)
- 38 And God giveth it a body at his pleasure, to every seed a several body.

Sown in corruption raised in incorrupyion 1 Corrinthians 15:52

- 39 All flesh is not one manner of flesh: but there is one manner flesh of men, another manner flesh of beasts, another manner flesh of fishes, and another of birds.
- 40 There are celestial bodies, and there are bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.
- 41 There is one manner glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another in glory.
- 42 So is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; and rises in incorruption:
- 43 It is sown in dishonor; and rises in honour: It is sown in weakness; and riseth in power: It is sown a natural body; and riseth a spiritual body.
- 44 There is a natural body; and there is a spiritual body:
- 45 As it is written: the first man Adam was made a living soul: and the last Adam was made a quickening Spirit.
- 46 Howbeit that is not first, which is spiritual: but that which is natural; and then that which is spiritual.
- 47 The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven.
- 48 As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy. and as is the heavenly, such are they that are heavenly.
- 49 And as we have borne the image of the earthy, so shall we bear the image of the heavenly.
- 50 This say I brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God. neither [doth] corruption inherit incorruption.
- 51 Behold I shew you a mystery. We shall not all sleep: but we shall all be changed
- 52 And that in a moment, and in the twinkling of an eye, at the

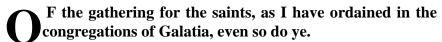
1 Corinthians 15:53

We shall be changed

sound of the last trump: for the trumpet shall blow, and the dead shall rise incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

- 53 For this corruptible must put on incorruptibility: and this mortal must put on immortality.
- 54 When this corruptible hath put on incorruptibility, and this mortal hath put on immortality: then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is consumed into victory.
- 55 Death where is thy sting? hell where is thy victory?
- 56 The sting of death is sin: and the strength of sin is the law.
- 57 But thanks be unto God, which hath given us victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.
- 58 Therefore, my dear Brethren, be ye steadfast, and unmovable, always rich in the works of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know how that your labor is not in vain in the Lord.

CHAPTER 16



- 2 Upon some Sunday let everyone of you put aside at home, and lay up whatsoever he thinketh meet that there be no gatherings when I come.
- 3 When I am come, whosoever ye shall allow by your letters, them will I send to bring your liberality unto Jerusalem.
- 4 And if it be meet that I go, they shall go with me
- 5 I will come unto you after I have gone over Macedonia.for I will go throughout Macedonia.
- 6 With you peradventure I will abide, awhile: or else winter with you that ye may bring me on my way whithersoever I go.
- 7 I will not see you now in my passage: but I trust to abide a while with you, if God shall suffer me.
- 8 I will tarry at Ephesus until Whitsuntide.

Let no man despise him

1 Corinthians 16:22

- 9 For a great door and a fruitful is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.
- 10 If Timotheus comes, See that he be without fear with you. for he worketh the work of the Lord as I do.
- 11 Let no man despise him: but convey him forth in peace that he may come unto me. For I look for him with the brethren.
- 12 To speak of brother Apollos: I greatly desired him to come unto you with the brethren: but his mind was not at all to come at this time; howbeit he will come when he shall have convenient time.
- 13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, and be strong.
- 14 Let all your business be done in love.
- 15 Brethren (ye know the house of Stephanas how that they are the first fruits of Achaia and that they have appointed themselves to minister unto the saints)
- 16 I beseech you, that ye be obedient unto such, and to all that help and labor.
- 17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas, Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied.
- 18 They have comforted my spirit and yours: Look therefore that ye acknowledge them that are such.
- 19 The congregations of Asia salute you. Aquila, and Priscilla, salute you much in the Lord and so doth the congregation that is in their house.
- 20 All the Brethren greet you. Greet ye one another with an Holy kiss.
- 21 The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.
- 22 If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ the same be

1 Corinthians 16:22

Annathema maranatha

Anathema Maranatha.

- 23 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with you all
- 24 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus

A-men'.

Not put our trust in ourselves

2 Corinthians 1:12

PAULS SECOND EPISTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS

AUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and brother Timotheus, Unto the congregation of God which is at Corinth with all the saints which are in all Achaia.

- 2 Grace be with you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 3 Blessed be God the Father, of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort
- 4 Which comforteth us in all our tribulation, in so much that we are able to comfort them which are troubled in whatsoever tribulation it be, with the same comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.
- 5 For as the afflictions of Christ are plenteous in us, even so is our consolation plenteous by Christ.
- 6 Whether we be troubled for your consolation and salvation, which salvation sheweth her power in that ye suffer the same afflictions which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, for your consolation and salvation:
- 7 Yet our hope is steadfast for you, in as much as we know, how that as ye have your part in afflictions, so shall ye be partakers of consolation.
- 8 Brethren, I would not have you ignorant of our trouble which happened unto us in Asia, for we were grieved out of measure, passing strength, so greatly that we despaired even of life:
- 9 Also we received an answer of death in ourselves and that because we should not put our trust in our selves: but in God which raiseth the dead to life again:
- 10 And which delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: On whom we trust that yet hereafter he will deliver
- 11 By the help of your prayer for us: that by the means of many occasions, thanks may be given of many on our behalf, for the grace given unto us.
- 12 Our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in

2 Corinthians 1:13

The surety of the Spirit

singleness and godly pureness, and not in fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God we have had our conversation in the world, and most of all to you-ward.

- 13 We write no other things unto you, than that ye read and also know; Yea and I trust ye shall find us unto the end; even as ye have found us partly:
- 14 For we are your rejoicing, even as ye are ours, in the day of the Lord Jesus.
- 15 And in this confidence was I minded the other time, to have come unto you that ye might have had yet one pleasure more;
- 16 And to have passed by you into Macedonia, and to have come again out of Macedonia unto you, and to have been led of you, toward Jewry
- 17 When I was thus wise minded: did I use lightness? Or think I carnally, those things which I think? that with me should be yea, yea, and nay, nay.
- 18 God is faithful, for our preaching unto you was not yea and nay.
- 19 For God's Son, Jesus Christ which was preached among you by us (that is to say by me and Silvanus and Timotheus) was not yea and nay: but in him it was yea.
- 20 For all the promises of God in him are yea: and are in him Amen, unto the ⁵⁶laud of God through us.
- 21 For it is God which stablisheth us and you in Christ, and hath anointed us,
- 22 Which hath also sealed us, and hath given the earnest of the Spirit into our hearts.
- 23 I call God for a record unto my soul, that for to spare you withal, I came not any more unto Corinth.
- 24 Not that we be Lords over your faith: but helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

⁵⁶ Laud- that is praise

Found not Titus my brother

2 Corinthians 2:14

CHAPTER 2

BUT I determined this in myself that I would not come Dagain to you in heaviness.

- 2 For if I make you sorry who is it that should make me glad but the same which is made sorry by me?
- 3 And I wrote this same epistle unto you lest if I came I should take heaviness of them of whom I ought to rejoice certainly this confidence have I in you all that my joy is the joy of you all.
- 4 For in great affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you with many tears: not to make you sorry but that ye might perceive the love which I have most specially unto you.
- 5 If any man hath caused sorrow the same hath not made me sorry but partly: lest I should grieve you all.
- 6 It is sufficient unto the same man that he was rebuked of many.
- 7 So that now contrary wise ye ought to forgive him and comfort him: lest that same person should be swallowed up with over much heaviness.
- 8 Wherefore I exhort you that love may have strength over him.
- 9 For this cause verily did I write that I might know the proof of you whether ye should be obedient in all things.
- 10 To whom ye forgive anything I[forgive] also. And verily if I forgive anything to whom I forgave it for your sakes forgave I it in the room of Christ
- 11 Lest Satan should prevent us. For his thoughts are not unknown unto us.
- 12 When I was come to Troas for Christ's gospels sake (and a great door was opened unto me of the Lord)
- 13 I had no rest in my spirit because I found not Titus my brother: but took my leave of them and went away into Macedonia.
- 14 Thanks be unto God, which always giveth us the victory in

2 Corinthians 2:15

Our ableness cometh of God

Christ and openeth the savour of his knowledge by us in every place.

15 For we are unto God the sweet savour of Christ both among them that are saved, and also among them which perish.

16 To the one part are we the savour of death unto death. and unto the other part are we the savour of life unto life. And who is meet unto these things?

17 For we are not as many are which chop and change with the word of God: but even out of purenes and by the power of God and in the sight of God so speak we in Christ.

CHAPTER 3

W E begin to praise ourselves again. need we as some other, of epistles of recommendation unto you? or letters of recommendation from you?

- 2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, which is understood and read of all men
- 3 In that ye are known, how that ye are the epistle of Christ, ministered by us and written not with ink: but with the Spirit of the living God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart.
- 4 Such trust have we through Christ to God-ward
- 5 Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think anything as it were of our selves; but our ableness cometh of God;
- 6 Which hath made us able to minister of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth but the spirit giveth life.
- 7 If the ministration of death, through the letters figured in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance, which glory nevertheless is done away:
- 8 Why shall not the ministration of the spirit be much more glorious?

Which put a veil over his face

2 Corinhiasn 4:4

- 9 For if the ministering of condemnation be glorious: much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory.
- 10 For no doubt that which was there glorified is not once glorified in respect, of this exceeding glory.
- 11 Then if that which is destroyed was glorious, much more shall that which remaineth be glorious,
- 12 Seeing then that we have such trust, we use great boldness
- 13 And do not as Moses which put a veil over his face that the children of Israel should not see for what purpose that served which is put away:
- 14 But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same covering untaken away in the old testament; when they read it which [veil]I is put away in Christ.
- 15 But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil hangeth before their hearts.
- 16 Nevertheless when they turn to the Lord, the 57 veil shall be taken away.
- 17 The Lord no doubt is a Spirit. and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.
- 18 But we all behold the glory of the Lord with his face open, and are changed unto the same similitude, from glory to glory, even of the Spirit of the Lord.

CHAPTER 4

- HEREFORE seeing that we have such an ⁵⁸office, even as mercy is come on us, we faint not:
- 2 But have cast from us the cloaks of dishonesty, and walk not in craftiness, neither corrupt we the word of God: but walk in open truth and report ourselves to every mans conscience in the sight of God.
- 3 If our Gospel be yet hid, it is hid among them that are lost:
- 4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of

_

⁵⁷ The veil was rent into two pieces

⁵⁸ Again Office = ministry

2 Corinthians 4:5

Things not seen are eternal

them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, which is the image of God, should shine unto them.

- 5 For we preach not our selves but Christ Jesus the Lord, and ourselves, your servants for Jesus sake.
- 6 For it is God, that commanded the light to shine out of darkness, which hath shined in our hearts, for to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.
- 7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellent power of it might appear to be of God, and not of us.
- 8 We are troubled on every side, yet are not without shift: We are in poverty: but not utterly without, somewhat.
- 9 We are persecuted: but are not forsaken; we are cast down, nevertheless we perish not.
- 10 And we always bear in our bodies the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life of Jesus might appear in our bodies.
- 11 For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus might appear in our mortal flesh.
- 12 So then death worketh in us, and life in you.
- 13 Seeing then that we have the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed and therefore have I spoken, We also believe and therefore speak;
- 14 For we know that he which raised up the Lord Jesus shall raise up us also by the means of Jesus, and shall set us with you.
- 15 For all things [do] I for your sakes, that the plenteous grace by thanks given of many, may redound to the praise of God.
- 16 Wherefore we are not wearied but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.
- 17 For our exceeding tribulation, which is momentary and light, prepareth an exceeding and an eternal weight of glory;
- 18 Unto us while we look not on the things which are seen but on the things which are not seen: for things which are seen are temporal: but things which are not seen are eternal.

We walk by faith and see not

2 Corinthians 5:15

CHAPTER 5

W E know surely if our earthy mansion wherein we now dwell were destroyed, that we have a building ordained of God, an habitation not made with hands, but eternal in heaven

- 2 And therefore we sigh, desiring to be clothed with our mansion which is from heaven:
- 3 So yet if that we be found clothed and not naked.
- 4 For as long as we are in this tabernacle we sigh, and are grieved, for we would not be unclothed, but would be clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.
- 5 He that hath ordained us for this thing is God, which very same hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.
- 6 Therefore we are always of good cheer, and know well, that as long as we are at home in the body, we are absent from God.
- 7 For we walk in faith and see not.
- 8 Nevertheless we are of good comfort, and had rather be absent from the body and to be present with the Lord.
- 9 Wherefore, whether we be at home, or from home, we endeavor, ourselves to please him.
- 10 For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every man may receive the works of his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad?
- 11 Seeing then that we know how the Lord is to be feared, we persuade men; for we are known well enough unto God; I trust also that we are known in your consciences.
- 12 We praise not our selves again unto you, but give you an occasion to rejoice of us that ye may have somewhat against them, which rejoice in the face, and not in the heart.
- 13 For if we be too fervent to God, are we too fervent. If we keep measure, for your cause keep we measure.
- 14 For the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, if one be dead for all, that then are all dead:
- 15 And that he died for all, that they which live should not

2 Corinthians 5:16

Now is that day of salvation

henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

- 16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh. Insomuch though we have known Christ after the flesh, now henceforth know we him so, no more.
- 17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: Old things are passed away; behold all things are become new.
- 18 Nevertheless all things are of God, which hath reconciled us unto himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given unto us the office to preach the atonement;
- 19 For God was in Christ, and made agreement between the world and himself, and imputed not their sins unto them; and hath committed to us the preaching of the atonement;
- 20 Now then we are messengers in the room of Christ: even as though God did beseech you through us: So pray we you in Christs stead, that ye be at one with God:
- 21 For he hath made him to be sin for us, which knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

CHAPTER 6

- E as helpers therefore exhort you that ye receive not the grace of God in vain
- 2 For he saith: I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succored thee. Behold now is that day of salvation.
- 3 Let us give no man occasion of evil, that in our ministry be found no fault:
- 4 But in all things, let us behave our selves as the ministers of God, In much patience, in afflictions, in necessity, in anguish,
- 5 In stripes, imprisonments, in strife in labours, in watching, in fasting,
- 6 In pureness, in knowledge, in long-suffering, in kindness, in the Holy Ghost, in love unfeigned,
- 7 In the words of truth, in the power of God, by the armour of righteousness, on the right hand and on the left
- 8 In honour and dishonour, in evil report and good report as

Bear not a stangers yoke

2 Corinthians 7:4

deceivers, and yet true;

- 9 As unknown and yet known: as dying and behold, we yet live; as chastened, and not killed;
- 10 As sorrowful and yet always merry: as poor and yet make many rich: as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.
- 11 O ye Corinthians our mouth is open unto you, our heart is made large:
- 12 Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your own bowels:
- 13 I promise you, like reward with me, as to my children,
- 14 Set you therefore at large, and bear not a strangers yoke, with the unbelievers. for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? What company hath light with darkness?
- 15 What concord hath Christ with Belial? Either what part hath he that believeth with an infidel?
- 16 How agreeth the temple of God with images? and ye are the temple of that living God; as said God. I will dwell among them, and walk among them; and be their God: and they shall be my people.
- 17 Wherefore come out from among them and separate yourselves (saith the Lord) and touch no unclean thing: so will I receive you
- 18 And will be a Father unto you and ye shall be unto me sons and daughters saith the Lord almighty

CHAPTER 7

- SEEING that we have such promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, and grow up to full holiness in the fear of God.
- 2 Understand us. we have hurt no man: we have corrupted no man: we have defrauded no man.
- 3 I speak not this to condemn you: for I have shewed you before, that ye are in our hearts to die and live with you.
- 4 I am very bold over you, and rejoice greatly in you: I am

2 Corinthians 7:5

The coming of Titus

filled with comfort and am exceeding joyful in all our tribulations.

- 5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side; outward was fighting inward, was fear.
- 6 Nevertheless God, that comforteth the abject, comforted us at the coming of Titus;
- 7 And not with his coming only: but also with the consolation wherewith he was comforted of you, for he told us your desire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me; so that I now rejoice the more.
- 8 Wherefore though I made you sorry with a letter, I repent not: though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle made you sorry, though it were but for a season.
- 9 But I now rejoice, not that ye were sorry but that ye so sorrowed that ye repented. for ye sorrowed godly: so that in nothing ye were hurt by us.
- 10 For godly sorrow causeth repentance unto salvation not to be repented of: when worldly sorrow causeth death.
- 11 Behold what diligence this godly sorrow that ye took hath wrought in you: yea it caused you to clear yourselves. It caused indignation, it caused fear, that caused desire, it caused a fervent mind, it caused punishment, for in all things yea have shewed yourselves that ye were clear, in that matter.
- 12 Wherefore though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that did hurt, neither for his cause that was hurt: but that our good mind which we have toward you in the sight of God, might appear unto you.
- 13 Therefore we are comforted because ye are comforted: yea and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy that Titus, had: because his spirit was refreshed of you all.
- 14 I am therefore now not ashamed, though I boasted to him, of you, for as all things which I preached unto you are true, even so is our boasting that I boasted to Titus, withal is found true.

Tried with much tribulation

2 Corinthians 8:11

15 And now is his inward affection more abundant toward you, when he remembreth the obedience of everyone of you: how with fear and trembling ye received him.

16 I rejoice that I may be bold over you in all things.

CHAPTER 8

do you to ⁵⁹wit, Brethren, of the grace of God which is given in the congregations of Macedonia

- 2 How that the abundance of their rejoicing, in that they are tried with much tribulation, and thereto though they were exceeding poor, yet have they given exceeding richly, and that in singleness.
- 3 For to their powers (I bear record) yea and beyond their power, they were willing of their own accord;
- 4 And prayed us with great instance that we would receive their benefit, and suffer them to be partakers with others in ministering to the saints.
- 5 And this they did, not as we looked for: but gave their ownselves first to the Lord, and after unto us by the will of God:
- 6 So that we could not but desire Titus, to accomplish the same benevolence among you also even as he had begun.
- 7 Now therefore as ye are rich in all parts in faith, in word, in knowledge, in all 60 ferventness, and in love which ye have to us: even so see that ye be plenteous in this benevolence..
- 8 This say I not as a commandment: but because others are so fervent therfore prove I your love whether it be perfect or no.
- 9 Ye know the liberality of our Lord Jesus Christ, which though he were rich, yet for your sakes became poor: that ye through his poverty might be made rich.
- 10 And I give council hereto. for this is expedient for you, which began, not to do only: but also to will, a year ago.
- 11 Now therefore perform the deed: that as there was in you a

⁵⁹ To wit is to have knowledge or witness

⁶⁰ ferventness that is diligense

2 Corinthians 8:12

To be a fellow with us

readiness to will, even so ye may perform the deed, of that which ye have.

- 12 For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.
- 13 It is not my mind that others be set at ease, and ye brought into cumbrance:
- 14 but that there be equalness now at this time, that your abundance succor their lack: that their abundance may supply your lack:
- 15 That there may be equality agreeing to that which is written. He that gathered much, had never the more abundance, and he that gathered little, had never the less.
- 16 Thanks be unto God, which put in the heart of Titus the same good mind toward you.
- 17 For he accepted the request; yea rather he was so willing that of his own accord came unto you.
- 18 We have sent with him that brother ⁶¹whose laud is in the gospel throughout all the congregations:
- 19 And not so only, but is also chosen of the congregations to be a fellow with us in our journey concerning this benevolence, that is administered by us unto the praise of the Lord, and to stir up your prompt mind.
- 20 For this we ⁶² eschew, that any man should rebuke us, in this plenteous distribution that is administered by us:
- 21 And therefore make provision for honest things, not in the sight of God, only but also in the sight of men.
- 22 We have sent with them a brother of ours whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, The great confidence which I have in you.
- 23 Hath caused me to do this: partly for Titus sake, which is my fellow and helper as concerning you: partly because of others which are our brethren and the messengers of the congregations and the glory of Christ.

⁶¹ Whose laud that is whose praise

⁶² eschew that is avoid

A blessing and not a defrauding

2 Corinthians 9: 12

24 Wherefore shew unto them the proof of your love, and of the rejoicing that we have of you, that congregations may see it CHAPTER 9

F the ministering to the saints, it is but superfluous for me to write unto you:

- 2 For I know your readiness of mind whereof I boast myself unto them of Macedonia and say that Achaia was prepared a year ago and your ferventness hath provoked many.
- 3 Nevertheless yet have I sent these brethren, lest our rejoicing over you should be in vain in this behalf, and that ye (as I have said) prepare yourselves:
- 4 Lest peradventure, if they of Macedonia, come with me, and find you unprepared the boast that I made in this matter should be a shame to us: I say not unto you.
- 5 Wherefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren to come beforehand unto you for to prepare your good blessing promised afore that it might be ready: so that it be a blessing, and not a defrauding.
- 6 This yet remember, how that he which soweth little, shall reap little; and he that soweth plenteously shall reap plenteously.
- 7 And let every man do according as he hath purposed in his heart, not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.
- 8 God is able to make you rich in all grace, that ye in all things having sufficient unto the utmost may be rich, unto all manner good works
- 9 As it is written: He that dispersed abroad and hath given to the poor his righteousness remaineth forever.
- 10 He that findeth seed for the sower shall minister bread for food, and shall multiply your seed and increase the fruits of your righteousness
- 11 That on all parts ye may be made rich in all singleness which causeth through us thanksgiving unto God.
- 12 For the office of this ministraion not only supplieth the need

2 Corinthians 9:13

Yet we war not fleshly

of the saints: but also is abundant herein that for this laudable ministering thanks might be given to God

- 13 Of many which praise God for the obedience of your professing the gospel of Christ and for your singleness in distributing to them and to all men:
- 14 And in their prayers to God for you, long after you, for the abundant grace of God given unto you.
- 15 Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

CHAPTER 10

NOW I Paul myself beseech you by the meekness and softness of Christ, which when I am present among you am of no reputation, but being absent am bold toward you:

- 2 I beseech you, that I need not to be bold when I am present (with that same confidence where with I am supposed to be bold) against some, which repute us as though we walked carnally.
- 3 Nevertheless though we walk compassed with the flesh, yet we war not fleshly
- 4 For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal things, but things mighty, in God to casting down strong holds
- 5 Wherewith we overthrow imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bring into captivity all understanding to the obedience of Christ;
- 6 And are ready to take vengeance on all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.
- 7 Look ye on things after the outward appearance? If any man trust in himself that he is Christ's, let the same also consider of himself that as he is Christ's, even so are we Christ's.
- 8 And though I should boast myself somewhat more of our authority which the Lord hath given us to edify, and not to destroy you, it should not be to my shame.
- 9 This say I, lest I should seem as though I went about to make you afraid with letters.

If he preach another Jesus

2 Corinthians 11:3

- 10 For the epistles (saith he) are sore and strong: but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech rude.
- 11 Let him that is such, think on this wise: that as we are in words by letters, when we are absent, such are we in deeds when we are present.
- 12 For we cannot find in our hearts to make ourselves of the number of them; or to compare ourselves to them which ⁶³laude themselves, nevertheless while they measure themselves with themselves, and comparing themselves with themselves, they understood naught.
- 13 But we will not rejoice above measure: but according to the quantity of the measure which God hath distributed unto us, a measure that reacheth even unto you.
- 14 For we stretch not our selves beyond measure, as though we had not reached unto you. for even unto you have we come with the gospel of Christ.
- 15 And we boast not ourselves out of measure in other men's labours: Yea, and we hope, when your faith is increased among you, to be magnified according to our measure more largely,
- 16 And to preach the gospel in those regions which are beyond you: and not to rejoice of that which is by another man's measure prepared all ready.
- 17 Let him that rejoiceth, rejoice in the Lord.
- 18 For he that praiseth himself is not allowed: but he whom the Lord praiseth.

CHAPTER 11

Would to God ye could suffer me a little in my foolishness: yea and I pray you forbear me.

- 2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I coupled you to one man, to make you a chaste virgin to Christ.
- 3 But I fear, lest as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty even so your wits should be corrupted from th single-

⁶³ Laud themselves that is praise themselves

2 Corinthians 11:4

I robbed other congregations

ness that is in Christ.

- 4 For if he that cometh, preach another Jesus, than him whom we preached: or if ye receive another spirit than that which ye have received: either another gospel than that ye have received, ye might right well have been content.
- 5 I suppose that I was not behind the chief apostles.
- 6 Though I be rude in speaking, yet I am not so in knowledge, howbeit among you, we are known to the utmost what we are in all things.
- 7 Did I therein sin because I submitted myself, that ye might be exalted, and because I preached to you the gospel of God freely?
- 8 I robbed other congregations, and took wages of them, to do you service withall.
- 9 And when I was present with you, and had need, I was grievous to no man: for that which was lacking unto me, the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied, and in all things I kept myself that I should not be grievous to you: and so will I keep myself.
- 10 If the truth of Christ be in me, this rejoicing shall not be taken from me in the regions of Achaia.
- 11 Wherefore? Because I love you not? God knoweth.
- 12 Nevertheless what I do, that will I do, to cut away occasion from them which desire occasion, that they might be found like unto us, in that wherein they rejoice.
- 13 For these false apostles are deceitful workers. and fashion themselves like unto the apostles of Christ.
- 14 And no marvel, for Satan himself is changed into the fashion of an angel of light.
- 15 Therefore it is no great thing though his minister's fashion themselves as though they were the ministers of righteousness, whose end shall be according to their deeds.
- 16 I say again, lest any man think that I am foolish: or else

Into the fashion of an angel of light

2 Corinthians 11:29

even now take me as a fool, that I may boast myself a little.

- 17 That I speak I speak it not after the ways of the Lord: but as it were foolishly, while we are now come to boasting.
- 18 Seeing that many rejoice after the flesh I will rejoice also.
- 19 For ye suffer fools gladly, because that ye your selves are wise.
- 20 For ye suffer even if a man bring you into bondage: if a man devour: if a man take: if a man exalt himself: if a man smite you on the face.
- 21 I speak as concerning rebuke, as though we had been weak. Howbeit whereinsoever any man dare be bold (I speak foolishly) I dare be bold also.
- 22 They are Hebrews so am I: They are Israelites so am I; they are the seed of Abraham even so am I.
- 23 They are the ministers of Christ (I speak as a fool) I am more: In labours more abundant: In stripes above measure: In prison more plenteously: In death oft.
- 24 Of the Jews five times received I every time forty stripes save one.
- 25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, I was once stoned, I suffered thrice shipwreck, a night and day have I been in the deep of the sea:
- 26 In journeying often: In perils of waters: In perils of robbers: In perils of mine own nation: In perils among the heathen, I have been in perils in cities, in perils in wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false rethren,
- 27 In labor and travail, in watching often in hunger, in thirst, in fasting often, in cold and in nakedness.
- 28 And beside the things which outwardly happen, unto me I am cumbered daily and do care for all congregations.
- 29 Who is sick, and I am not sick? Who is hurt in the faith and my heart burneth not?

2 Corinthians:11:30 Grace is sufficient

- 30 If I must needs rejoice, I will rejoice of mine infirmities.
- 31 The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore knoweth that I lie not.
- 32 In the city of Damascus the governor of the people under king Aretas laid watch in the city of the Damascenes with a garrison and would have caught me
- 33 And at a window was I let down in a basket through the wall and so escaped his hands.

CHAPTER 12

T is not expedient for me (no doubt to rejoice. Nevertheless, I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

- 2 I know a man in Christ above fourteen years ago (whether he were in the body I cannot tell; or whether he were out of the body I cannot tell: God knoweth;) which was taken up into the third heaven.
- 3 And I know the same man (whether in the body or out of the body I cannot tell God knoweth;)
- 4 How that he was taken up into paradise, and heard words, not to be spoken which no man can utter.
- 5 Of this man will I rejoice of myself: will I not rejoice, except it be of mine infirmities.
- 6 And yet though I would rejoice, I should not be a fool; for I would say the truth. nevertheless I spare, lest any man should think of me above that he seeth me to be, or heareth of me.
- 7 And lest I should be exalted out of measure through the abundance of revelations, there was given unto me unquietness, of the flesh the messenger of Satan to buffet me: because I should not be exalted out of measure
- 8 For this thing besought I the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.
- 9 And he said unto me: my grace is sufficient for thee: for my

Walked we not in like steps

2 Corinthians 12:20

strength is made perfect through weakness. Very gladly therefore will I rejoice of my weakness that the strength of Christ may dwell in me

- 10 Therefore I take delectation in infirmities in rebukes in need in persecutions in anguish for Christ's sake. for when I am weak then am I strong.
- 11 I am made a fool in boasting myself. Ye have compelled me: I ought to have been commended of you. for in nothing was I inferior unto the chief apostles though I be nothing
- 12 Yet the tokens of an apostle were wrought among you with all patience, with signes, and wonders, and mighty deeds.
- 13 For what is it wherein ye were inferiors unto other congregations, except it be therein that I was not grievous unto you? forgive me this wrong done unto you.
- 14 Behold, now the third time I am ready to come unto you: and yet will I not be grievous unto you; for I seek not yours,
- but you: also the children ought not to lay up for the fathers and mothers: but the fathers and mothers for the children.
- 15 I will very gladly bestow and will be bestowed for your souls: though the more I love you the, less I am loved again.
- 16 But it be so, that I grieved you not: nevertheless I being crafty, took you with guile.
- 17 Did I ⁶⁴pill of you by any of them which I sent unto you?
- 18 I desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother. Did Titus defraud you of anything? walked we not in one spirit? walked we not in like steps?
- 19 Again, think ye that we excuse ourselves? We speak in Christ in the sight of God. but we do all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying
- 20 For I fear, lest it come to pass, that when I come, I shall not

_

⁶⁴ Pil that is extort

2 Corinthians 12:21

Except ye be castaways

find you such as I would: and I shall be found unto you such as ye would not: I fear lest there be found among you debates, envyings, swellings, discord:

21 I fear lest, when I come again, God bring me low among you, and I be constrained to bewail many of them which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanness fornication, and wantonness which they have committed.

CHAPTER 13

OW come I the third time unto you In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall everything stand.

- 2 I told you before, and foretell you: and as I said when I was present with you the second time; so I write now being absent to them which in time past have sinned, and to all others: that if I come again I will not spare
- 3 Seeing that ye seek evidence of Christ which speaketh in me which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.
- 4 And verily though it came of weakness, that he was crucified yet liveth he through the power of God. And we no doubt are weak in him, but we shall live with him by the might of God among you.
- 5 Prove your selves whether ye are in the faith or not Examine your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be castaways?
- 6 I trust that ye shall know that we are not castaways.
- 7 I desire before God that ye do none evil; not that we should seem commendable: but that ye should do that which is honest: and let us be counted as lewd persons.
- 8 We can do nothing against the truth, but: for the truth.
- 9 We are glad when we are weak, and ye strong, this also we wish for, even that ye were perfect
- 10 Therefore write I these things being absent, lest when I am

Be perfect and of good comfort

2 Corinthians 13:14

present I should use sharpness according to the power which the Lord hath given me to edify, and not to destroy.

- 11 Finally, Brethren, fare ye well, Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.
- 12 Greet one another in an Holy kiss.
- 13 All the saints salute you.
- 14 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Ghost be with you all.

A-men.

Galatians 1:1

Called me by his grace

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE GALATIANS

- PAUL an apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and by God the Father, which raised him from death;
- 2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the congregations of Galatia:
- 3 Grace be with you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ,
- 4 Which gave himself for our sins, to deliver us from this present evil world, through the will of God our Father:
- 5 To whom be praise forever and ever. Amen.
- 6 I marvel that ye are so soon turned from him that called you in the grace of Christ unto another gospel:
- 7 Which is nothing else; but there be some, which trouble you, and intend to pervert the gospel of Christ.
- 8 Nevertheless, though we ourselves or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, hold him as accursed.
- 9 As I said before, so say I now again, if any man preach any other thing unto you than that ye have received, hold him accursed.
- 10 Preach I man's doctrine, or God's? Or do I go I about to please men? If I studied to please men, I were not the servant of Christ.
- 11 I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me was not after the manner of men.
- 12 I neither received it of man, nor was I taught it: but received it by the revelation of Jesus Christ.
- 13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews ways, how that beyond measure I persecuted the congregation of God, and spoiled it:
- 14 And prevailed in the Jews lay, above many of my companions which were of mine own nation, and was a much more fervent maintainer of the traditions of the elders.

I went up by revelation

Galatians 2:5

- 15 But when it pleased God, which separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace,
- 16 To declare his Son by me, that I should preach him among the heathen; immediately I communed not of the matter with flesh and blood,
- 17 Neither returned to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me; but went my ways into Arabia, and came again unto Damascus.
- 18 Then after three years I returned to Jerusalem to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen days
- 19 No other of the apostles saw I, save James the Lords brother.
- 20 The things which I write, behold, God knoweth I lie not.
- 21 After that I went into the coasts of Syria and Cilicia;
- 22 And was unknown as touching my person unto the congregations of Jewry which were in Christ:
- 23 But they heard only, that he which persecuted us in time past now preacheth the faith which before he destroyed.
- 24 And they glorified God on my behalf.

CHAPTER 2

- THEN fourteen years after that I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas and took with me Titus also.
- 2 Yea and I went up by revelation, and communed with them of the Gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but apart with them which were counted chief, lest it should have been thought that I should run, or had run in vain.
- 3 Also Titus, which was with me, though he were a Greek, yet was not compelled to be circumcised:
- 4 And that because of incomers, being false brethren, which came in among others to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:
- 5 To whom we gave no room, no not for the space of an hour, as concerning to be brought into subjection: and that because that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

Galatians 2:6

He was worthy to be blamed

- 6 Of them which seem to be great, (what they were in time passed, it maketh no matter to me: God looketh on no mans person:) nevertheless they which seem great, added nothing to me.
- 7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel over the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel over the circumcision was unto Peter;
- 8 For he that was mighty in Peter in the apostleship over the circumcision, the same was mighty in me among the Gentiles:
- 9 And therefore when they perceived the grace that was given unto me, then James, Cephas, and John, which seemed to be pillars, gave to me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship; and agreed with us that we should preach among the heathen, and they among the Jews:
- 10 Warning only that we should remember the poor; which thing also I was diligent to do.
- 11 And when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, for he was worthy to be blamed.
- 12 For before that certain came from James, he ate with the Gentiles: but when they were come he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision.
- 13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise, insomuch that Barnabas was brought into their dissimulation also.
- 14 But when I saw that they went not the right way after the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before all men, if thou being a Jew, livest after the manner of the Gentiles, and not as do the Jews: why causest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?
- 15 We which are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles.
- 16 Know that a man is not justified by the deeds of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, And therefore we have believed on Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the deeds of the law: because that by the deeds of the law no flesh shall be justified.

The same are the children of Abraham

Galatians 3:9

- 17 If then while we seek to be made righteous by Christ, we ourselves are found sinners, is not then Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.
- 18 For if I build again that which I destroyed, then I make myself a trespasser.
- 19 But I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.
- 20 I am crucified with Christ: I live verily yet now not I, but Christ liveth in me: for the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of Son of God, which loved me, and gave himself for me.
- 21 I do not despise the grace of God: for if righteousness come of the law, then Christ died in vain.

CHAPTER 3

- of foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth? to whom Jesus Christ was described before the eyes, and among you crucified.
- 2 This only would I learn of you, received ye the Spirit by the deeds of the law, or else by preaching of the faith?
- 3 Are ye so unwise, that after ye have begun in the Spirit, ye would now end in the flesh?
- 4 So many things there ye suffered in vain? if that be vain.
- 5 Which ministered to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it through the deeds of the law, or by preaching of the faith?
- 6 Even as Abraham believed God, and it was ascribed to him for righteousness.
- 7 Understand therefore that they, which are of faith, the same, are the children of Abraham.
- 8 For the scripture, saw aforehand that God would justify the heathen through faith, and therefore shewed beforehand the good tidings unto Abraham,[saying] In thee shall all nations be blessed.
- 9 So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham

Galations 3:10

Have put on Christ

- 10 For as many as are under the deeds of the law are under the malediction: for it is written: cursed is every man that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to fulfill them.
- 11 That no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, is evident. for the just shall live by faith.
- 12 The law is not of faith: but the man that fulfilleth the things contained in the law (shall live in them.)
- 13 But Christ hath delivered us from the curse of the law, and was made a curse for us: for it is written, cursed is everyone that hangeth on tree:
- 14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; and that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.
- 15 Brethren I speak after the manner of men; though it be but a man's testament, yet no man despiseth it or addeth anything thereto when it is once allowed.
- 16 To Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not in the seeds as in many; but in thy seed as in one, which is Christ.
- 17 This I say, that the law, which began afterward beyond four hundred and thirty years doth not disannul the testament, that was confirmed afore, of God unto Christ, to make the promise of none effect.
- 18 For if the inheritance come of the law, it cometh not of promise: but God gave it unto Abraham by promise.
- 19 Wherefore then serveth the law? The law was added because of transgression, till the seed came to which the promise was made;) and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.
- 20 A mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one.
- 21 Is the law then against the promise of God? God forbid: how be it, if there had been a law given which could have given life: then no doubt righteousness should have come by the law.
- 22 But the scripture concluded all things under sin, that the

The fullness of time was come

Galatians 4:24

- 9 But now, seeing ye know God, (yea rather are known of God.) how is it that ye turn again unto the weak and beggarly ceremonies, whereunto ye again desire afresh to be in bondage?
- 10 Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.
- 11 I am in fear of you, lest I have bestowed on you labour in vane.
- 12 Brethren, I beseech you be ye as I am: for I am as ye are. Ye have not hurt me at all.
- 13 Ye know how thorough infirmity of the flesh, I preached the gospel unto you at the first:
- 14 And my temptation which I suffered by reason of my flesh ye despised not nether abhorred: but received me as an angel of God: yet as Christ Jesus.
- 15 How happy were ye then? for I bear you record, that if it had been possible ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.
- 16 Am I therefore become your enemy because, I tell you the truth?
- 17 They are jealous over you amiss: yea, they intend to exclude you that ye should be fervent to them- ward.
- 18 It is good always to be fervent so it be in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you.
- 19 My little children, (of whom I travail in birth again, until Christ be fashioned in you)
- 20 I would, I were with you now and could change my voice: for I stand in a doubt of you.
- 21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, have ye not heard of the law?
- 22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons the one by a bond maiden the other by a free woman.
- 23 Yea and he which was of the bond woman was borne after the flesh: but he which was of the free woman was born by promise.
- 24 Which things betoken mystery, for these women are two

Galations 4:25 Not be heir with the son of the free woman

testaments the one from the mount Sinai which gendereth unto bondage which is Agar.

- 25 For mount Sinai is called Agar in Arabia, and bordereth upon the city which is now Jerusalem and is in bondage with her children.
- 26 But Jerusalem, which is above, is, free which is the mother of us all.
- 27 For it is written: rejoice, thou barren that bearest no children: break forth and cry, thou that travailest not, for the desolate hath many more children than she which hath an husband.
- 28 Brethren we are after the manner of Isaac children of promise.
- 29 But as then he that was born carnally persecuted him that was born spiritually, even so is it now.
- 30 Nevertheless what saith the scripture: put away the bond woman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman.
- 31 So then, brethren we are not children of the bondwoman: but of the freewoman.

CHAPTER 5

TAND fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and wrap not yourselves again in the yoke of bondage.

- 2 Behold, I Paul say unto you that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing at all.
- 3 I testify again to every man which is circumcised, that he is bound to keep the whole law.
- 4 Ye are gone quite from Christ, as many as are justified by the law; are fallen from grace.
- 5 We look for and hope in the spirit to be justified through

Ye were called unto liberty

Galatians 5:20

faith.

- 6 For in Jesus Christ neither is circumcision worth anything, neither yet uncircumcision: but faith which by love is mighty in operation.
- 7 Ye did run well: who was a ⁶⁵let unto you that ye should not obey the truth?
- 8 Even that council that is not of him that called you.
- 9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump of dough.
- 10 I have trust toward you in the Lord, that ye will be none otherwise minded: He that troubled you shall bear his judgment whosoever he be.
- 11 Brethren if I, yet preach circumcision: why do I yet suffer persecution? for then had the offence which the cross giveth ceased.
- 12 I would to God they were separated from you, which trouble you.
- 13 Brethren ye were called unto liberty; only let not your liberty be an occasion unto the flesh, but in love serve one another.
- 14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, which is this: thou shalt love thine neighbor as thyself.
- 15 If ye bite and devour one another: take heed lest ye be consumed one of another.
- 16 I say, walk in the spirit, and fulfill not the lusts of the flesh.
- 17 For the flesh lusteth contrary to the spirit and the spirit contrary to the flesh, these are contrary one to the other: so that ye cannot do that which ye would.
- 18 But and if ye be led of the Spirit then ye are not under the law.
- 19 The deeds of the flesh are manifest which are these adultery, fornication, uncleanness, wantonness,
- 20 idolatry, witchcraft hatred, variance, zeal, wrath, strife,

_

⁶⁵ A let that is a hindrance

Galatians 6:21

Bear ye one another's burden

sedition, sects,

- 21 Envying, murder, drunkenness, gluttony, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have told you in time past, that they which commit such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.
- 22 But the fruit of spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faithfulness,
- 23 Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.
- 24 They that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the appetites and lusts
- 25 If we live in the Spirit, let us walk in the Spirit.
- 26 Let us not be vain glorious, provoking one another and envying one another.

CHAPTER 6

BRETHREN if any man be fallen by chance into any fault: ye which are spiritual help to amend him in the spirit of meekness: considering thyself lest thou also be tempted.

- 2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.
- 3 If any man seem to himself that he is somewhat, when indeed he is nothing, the same deceaveth himself in his imagination.
- 4 Let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in his own self, and not in another.
- 5 For every man shall bear his own burden.
- 6 Let him that is taught in the word minister unto him that teacheth him in all good things
- 7 Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he reap.
- 8 He that soweth in his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth in the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.
- 9 Let us not be weary of well doing, for when the time is come we shall reap, without weariness.
- 10 While we have therefore time, let us do good unto all men,

Walk according to this rule

Galations 6:18

and especially unto them which are of the household of faith.

11 Behold, how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.

12 As many as desire with outward appearance to please carnally, they constrain you to be circumcised. only because they would not suffer persecution with the cross of Christ

13 For they themselves which are circumcised keep not the law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they might rejoice in your flesh.

14 God forbid that I should rejoice, but in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, whereby the world is crucified as touching me, and I as concerning the world.

15 For in Christ neither circumcision availeth anything at all, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature

16 And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon Israel that pertaineth to God

17 From henceforth let no man put me to 66 business. for I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus

18 Brethren the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.

Amen'.

66 business here is trouble

-

Ephesians 1:1

The pleasure of his will

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE EPHESIANS

- PAUL an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to them which believe on Jesus Christ:
- 2 Grace be with you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 3 Blessed be God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which hath blessed us with all manner of spiritual blessings in heavenly things by Christ:
- 4 According as he had chosen us in him before the foundation of the world was laid, that we should be saints, and without blame before him through love:
- 5 And ordained us before through Jesus Christ to be heirs, unto himself, according to the pleasure of his will,
- 6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherewith he hath made us accepted in the beloved.
- 7 By whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;
- 8 Which grace he shed on us abundantly in all wisdom and prudence;
- 9 And hath opened unto us the mystery of his will according to his pleasure and purposed the same in himself,
- 10 To have it declared when the time were full come that all things both the things which are in heaven and also the things which are in earth should be gathered together even in Christ,:
- 11 That is to say in him in whom we are made heirs, and were thereto, predestinated according to the purpose of him which worketh all things after the purpose of his own will:
- 12 That we which before believed in Christ should be unto the praise of his glory.
- 13 In whom also ye, (after that ye heard the word of truth, I mean the gospel of your salvation wherein ye believed) were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise.

And hath quickened you also

Ephesians 2:3

- 14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance to redeem the purchased possession, and that unto the praise of his glory.
- 15 Wherefore even I (after that I heard of the faith which ye have in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints)
- 16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers
- 17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the Father of glory, might give unto you the spirit of wisdom and open to you the knowledge of himself:
- 18 And lighten the eyes of your minds; that ye might know what that hope is, where unto he hath called you, and what the riches of his glorious inheritance is upon the saints,
- 19 And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward which believe, according to the working of his mighty power,
- 20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from death, and set him on his right hand in heavenly things,
- 21 Above all rule, and power, and might and dominion and above all names that are named, not in this world only but also in the world to come:
- 22 And hath put all things under his feet, and hath made him above all things the head of the congregation,
- 23 Which is his body, and the fullness of him that filleth all in all things.

CHAPTER 2

A ND hath ⁶⁷quickened you, also that were dead in trespasses and sins;

- 2 In which in time past ye walked, according to the course of this world, and after the governor that ruleth in the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of unbelief,
- 3 Among which we also had our conversation in time past, in the lusts of our flesh, and fulfilled the will of the flesh and of the mind: and were naturally the children of wrath, even as well as others.

_

 $^{^{67}}$ quickened that is made alive

Ephesians 2:4

Are made nigh by the blood of Christ

- 4 But God which is rich in mercy, through his great love wherewith he loved us,
- 5 Even when we were dead by sin, hath quickened us together in Christ (for by grace are ye saved)
- 6 And hath raised [us] up together, and made [us] sit together in heavenly things through Christ Jesus:
- 7 For to shew in times to come the exceeding riches of his grace in kindness to us-ward in Christ Jesus.
- 8 For by grace are ye made safe through faith; and that not of yourselves: for it is the gift of God
- 9 And cometh not of works, lest any man should boast himself.
- 10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, unto the which God before ordained that we should walk in them.
- 11 Wherefore remember that ye being in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, and were called uncircumcision by that which are called circumcision in the flesh which circumcision is made by hands:
- 12 Remember I say that ye were at that time without Christ, and were reputed aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and were strangers from the testaments of promise, and had no hope and were without God in this world:
- 13 But now in Christ Jesus ye which a while ago were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.
- 14 For he is our peace, which hath made of both one, and hath broken down the wall that was a stop between us;
- 15 And hath also put away through his flesh the cause of hatred, (that is to say the law of commandments contained in the law written) for to make of twain one new man in himself, so making peace:
- 16 And to reconcile both unto God in one body through his cross, and slew hatred thereby,

Fellowship of the mystery

Ephesians 3:8

- 17 And came to preached peace to you which were afar off and to them that were nigh.
- 18 For through him we both have an open way in one Spirit unto the Father.
- 19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners: but citizens with the saints and of the household of God:
- 20 and are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ being the head corner stone;
- ${\bf 21}$ In whom every building coupled together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord
- 22 In whom ye also are built together and made an habitation for God in the Spirit.

CHAPTER 3

P OR this cause I Paul am in the bonds of Jesus Christ for your sakes, which are heathen:

- 2 If ye have heard of the ministration of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward:
- 3 For by revelation shewed he this mystery; unto me as I wrote afore in few words
- 4 Whereby, when ye read, ye may know mine understanding in the mystery of Christ,
- 5 Which mystery in times past was not opened unto the sons of men, as it is now declared unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit:
- 6 That the Gentiles should be inheritors also, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise that is in Christ by the means of the gospel:
- 7 Whereof I am made a minister, by the gift of the grace of God given unto me through the working of his power.
- 8 Unto me, the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ;

Ephesians 3:9

Walk worthy of the vocation

- 9 And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, which made all things through Jesus Christ:
- 10 To the intent that now unto the rulers and powers in heaven might be known by the congregation the manifold wisdom of God,
- 11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord,
- 12 By whom we are bold to draw nigh in the trust which we have by faith in him
- 13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not because of my tribulations for your sakes: which is your praise.
- 14 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,
- 15 Which is Father over all that is called Father in heaven and in earth.
- 16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory, that ye may be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man:
- 17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye being rooted and grounded in love,
- 18 Might be able to comprehend with all saints what is that breadth, and length, depth, and height:
- 19 And to know the love of Christ, which love passeth knowledge: that ye might be fulfilled with all manner of fulness which cometh of God.
- 20 Unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think according to the power that worketh in us
- 21 Unto him be glory in the congregation by Jesus Christ throughout all generations, from time to time Amen.

That we be henceforth no more children

Ephesians 4:14

CHAPTER 4

- Therefore which am in bonds for the Lords sake, exhort you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,
- 2 In all humbleness of mind and meekness, and long suffering, forbearing one another through love;
- 3 And that ye be diligent to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.
- 4 Being one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling;
- 5 There is but one Lord, one faith, one baptism:
- 6 One God and Father of all, which is above all, through all, and in you all.
- 7 Unto everyone of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.
- 8 Wherefore he saith, He is gone up on high, and hath led captivity captive, and hath given gifts unto men.
- 9 That he ascended: what meaneth it but that he also descended first into the lowest parts of the earth?
- 10 He that descended is even the same also that ascended up even above all heavens, to fulfill all things.
- 11 And the very same, made some apostles; some prophets; some evangelists; some shepherds, some teachers:
- 12 That the saints might have all things necessary to work and minister, withal to the edifying of the body of Christ:
- 13 Till we everyone grow up unto a perfect man (in the unity of faith, and knowledge of the Son of God) after the measure of age of the fulness of Christ:
- 14 That we henceforth be no more children, wavering, and carried with every wind of doctrine, by the wiles of men, and craftiness, whereby they lie in wait for us to deceive us;

Ephesians 4:15

Unfruitful works of darkness

- 15 But let us follow the truth in love, and in all things grow in him, which is the head, that is to say Christ:
- 16 In whom all the body is fitly coupled and knit together in every joint wherewith one ministereth to another, (according to the operation as every part hath his measure) and increaseth the body unto the edifying of itself in love.
- 17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in vanity of their mind
- 18 Blinded in their understanding, being strangers from the life which is in God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their hearts:
- 19 Which being past repentance have given themselves unto wantonness, to work all manner of uncleanness even with greediness.
- 20 But ye have not so learned Christ;
- 21 If so be ye have heard of him, and are taught in him, even as the truth is in Jesus:
- 22 So then as concerning the conversation in time past, lay from you that old man which is corrupt through the deceivable lusts;
- 23 And be ye renewed in the spirit of your minds; shapen in righteousness and true holiness.
- 25 Wherefore put away lying, and speak every man truth unto his neighbor: for as much as we are members one of another.
- 26 Be angry, but sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath:
- 27 Neither give place unto the backbiter.
- 28 Let him that stole steal no more but let him rather labour, with his hands some good thing, that he may have to give unto him that needeth.

Let no man deceive you

Ephesians 5:11

- 29 Let no filthy communication proceed out of your mouths: but that which is good to edify, all who are in need: that it may have favor with the hearers.
- 30 And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, by whom ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.
- 31 Let all bitterness, fierceness, and wrath, roaring, and cursed speaking, be put away from you with all maliciousness:
- 32 Be ye courteous one to another, and merciful, forgiving one another, even as God for Christs sake forgave you.

CHAPTER 5

- B E ye followers of God as dear children 2 And walk in love, even as Christ loved us, and gave himself for us an offering and a sacrifice of a sweet savor to God.
- 3 So that fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, be not once named among you as it becometh saints;
- 4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not comely: but rather giving of thanks.
- 5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, or unclean person, or covetous person, which is the worshipper of images, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.
- 6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for through such things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of unbelief.
- 7 Be not therefore companions with them.
- 8 Ye were once darkness, but are now light in the Lord: walk as children of light
- 9 For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness righteousness and truth;
- 10 Accept that which is pleasing to the Lord:
- 11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works ofs

Ephesians 5:12

The time Redeeming

darkness, but rather rebuke them.

- 12 For it is shame even to name those things which are done of them in secret, for whatsoever is manifest that same is light.
- 14 Wherefore he saith: awake thou that sleepest, and stand up from death, and Christ shall give thee light.
- 15 Take heed therefore that ye walk circumspectly: not as fools: but as wise,
- 16 Redeeming the time: for the days are evil. understand what is the will of the Lord.
- 17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles wallk, in the vanity of their mind.
- 18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be fulfilled with the Spirit;
- 19 Speaking unto yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your hearts to the Lord;
- 20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ;
- 21 Submitting your selves one to another in the fear of God.
- 22 Women, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.
- 23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the congregation: and the same is the Saviour of the body.
- 24 Therefore as the congregation is in subjection to Christ, likewise let the wives be in subjection, to their husbands in all things.
- 25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ loved the congregation, and gave himself for it
- 26 To sanctify it and cleanse it in the fountain of water through

Husbands love your wives

Ephesians 6:6

the word,

- 27 To make it unto himself a glorious congregation, without spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blame
- 28 So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.
- 29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh: but nourisheth and cherisheth it even as the Lord doth the congregation.
- 30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.
- 31 For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall continue with his wife, and two shall be made one flesh.
- 32 This is a great secret but I speak between Christ and the congregation.
- 33 Nevertheless do ye so that every one of you love his wife truly, even as himself; and let the wife see that she reverence her husband.

CHAPTER 6

C HILDREN, obey your fathers and mothers; in the Lord: for so is it right.

- 2 Honour thy father and mother; that is the first commandment that hath any promise;
- 3 That thou mayest be in good estate, and live long on the earth.
- 4 And, ye fathers,⁶⁸ move not your children to wrath: but bring them up with the nurture and information of the Lord.
- 5 Servants, be obedient unto your carnal masters, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your hearts, as unto Christ:
- 6 Not with service, in the eye-sight as menpleasers: but as the

_

⁶⁸ Move that is do not provoke

Ephesians 6:7

Put on the armour of God

servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart;

- 7 With good will serving, the Lord and not men.
- 8 And remember that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, that shall he receive again of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.
- 9 And ye masters do even the same things unto them, putting away threatenings: and remember that even your master also is in heaven neither is there any respect of person with him.
- 10 Finally my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.
- 11 Put on the armour of God, that ye may stand steadfast against the crafty assaults of the devil.
- 12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against rule, against power and against worldly rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness for heavenly things.
- 13 For this cause take unto you the armour of God, that ye may be able to resist in the evil day, and to stand perfect in all things.
- 14 Stand therefore, and your loins girt about with verity having on the Breastplate of righteousness
- 15 And shod with shoes prepared by the gospel of peace.
- 16 Above all, take to you the shield of faith wherewith ye may quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.
- 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the spirit, which is the word of God.
- 18 And pray always with all manner prayer and supplication: and that in the spirit: and watch thereunto with all instance and supplication for all saints;
- 19 And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to utter the secrets of the gospel

I am a messenger in bonds

Ephesians 6:24

- 20 Whereof I am a messenger in bonds: that therein I may speak freely, as it becometh me to speak.
- 21 But that ye may also know what condition I am in, and what I do, Tychicus my dear brother and Faithful minister in the Lord, shall shew you of all things
- 22 Whom I sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know what case I stand in, and that he might comfort your hearts.
- 23 Peace be with the brethren, and love with faith, from God the Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 24 Grace be with all them, which love our Lord Jesus Christ in pureness.

A-men'

Philippians 1:1

Defend and establish the gospel

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE PHILIPPIANS

PAUL and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons.

- 2 Grace be with you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 3 I thank my God with all remembrance of you,
- 4 Always in all my prayers for you and pray with gladness,
- 5 Because of the fellowship which ye have in the gospel from the first day unto now:
- 6 And am surely certified of this, that he which began a good work in you, shall go forth with it until the day of Jesus Christ,
- 7 As it becometh me so to judge of you all because I have you in my heart, and have you also everyone companions of grace with me, even in my bonds, as I defend and establish the gospel.
- 8 For God beareth me record how greatly I long after you all from the very heart root in Jesus Christ.
- 9 And this I pray that your love may increase more and more in knowledge, and in all feeling,
- 10 That ye might accept things most excellent, that ye might be pure and such as should hurt no man's conscience, until the day of Christ
- 11 Filled with the fruits of righteousness, which fruits come by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and laud of God.
- 12 I would that ye understood, brethren that my business is happened unto the greater furthering of the gospel;
- 13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifest throughout all the judgment hall, and in all other places:
- 14 In so much that many of the brethren in the Lord, are emboldened through my bonds, and dare more largely speak the word without fear
- 15 There are some which preach Christ of envy, and strife, and some of good will:

That in nothing I shall be ashamed

Philippians 1:30

- 16 The one part preacheth Christ of strife, and not purely, supposing to add more adversity to my bonds:
- 17 The other part of love because they see that I am set to defend the gospel.
- 18 What then? So that Christ be preached all manner ways, whether it be by occasion, or of true meaning, I therein joy: yea and will joy.
- 19 For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and ministering of the Spirit of Jesus Christ,
- 20 As I heartily look for and hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed: but that with all confidence, as always, in times past even so now Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be through life, or else death.
- 21 For Christ is to me life, and death is to me advantage.
- 22 If it be for me to live in the flesh, that is to me fruitful, for to work and what to choose I wot not.
- 23 I am constrained of two things: I desire to be loosed, and to be with Christ: which thing is best of all.
- 24 Nevertheless to abide in the flesh, is more needful for you.
- 25 And this I am sure of, that I shall abide and with you all continue for the furtherance and joy of your faith;
- 26 That ye may more abundantly rejoice in Jesus Christ through me, by my coming to you again.
- 27 Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent I may yet hear of you, that ye continue in one Spirit, and in one mind laboring as we do to maintain the faith of the gospel;
- 28 And in nothing fearing your adversaries: which is to them a token of perdition, and to you of salvation and that of God.
- 29 For unto you it is given that not only ye should believe on Christ: but also suffer for his sake;
- 30 And have even the same fight, which ye saw of me, and now hear of me.

Philippians 2:1

A name above all names

CHAPTER 2

If there be among you any consolation in Christ, if there be any comfortable love, if there be any fellowship of the Spirit, If there be any compassion or mercy:

- 2 Fulfill my joy that ye draw one way, having one love, being of one accord, and of one mind.
- 3 That nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but that in meekness of mind every man esteem other better than himself.
- 4 And that no man consider his own, but what is meet for others.
- 5 Let the same mind be in you that was in Christ Jesus:
- 6 Which, being in the shape of God, and thought it not robbery to be equal with God:
- 7 Nevertheless he made himself of no reputation, and took on him the shape of a servant, and became like unto men:
- 8 And was found in his apparel as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.
- 9 Wherefore God hath exalted him, and given him a name above all names:
- 10 That at the name of Jesus should every knee bow, both of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under earth;
- 11 And that all tongues should confess that Jesus Christ is the Lord, unto the praise of God the Father.
- 12 Wherefore my dearly beloved as ye have always obeyed, not when I was present only, but now much more in mine absence, even so ⁶⁹work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.
- 13 For it is God which worketh in you both to will and also to do even of his good will.
- 14 Do all things without murmurings and disputing:
- 15 That ye may be faultless and pure, and the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and a perverse nation, among whom see that ye shine as lights in the world;

-

⁶⁹ Work out what God has worked within

My companion in labour

Philippians 3:1

- 16 Holding fast the word of life unto my rejoicing in the day of Christ that I have not run in vain neither have labored in vain.
- 17 Yea and though I be offered up, upon the offering and sacrifice of your faith, I rejoice and rejoice with you all.
- 18 For the same cause also rejoice ye, and rejoice ye with me.
- 19 I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know in what case ye stand.
- 20 For I have no man that is so likeminded, to me, which with so pure affection, careth for your matters.
- 21 For all others seek their own, and not that which is Jesus Christ's.
- 22 Ye know the proof of him, how that, as a son with the father, so with me bestowed he his labour, upon the gospel.
- 23 Him I hope to send as soon as I know how it will go with me.
- 24 I trust in the Lord I also myself shall come shortly.
- 25 I supposed it necessary to send brother Epaphroditus, unto you my companion in labour, and fellow soldier, your messenger, and my minister, at my needs.
- 26 For he longed after you, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard say, that he had been sick.
- 27 And no doubt he was sick, and that nigh unto death. but God had mercy on him; not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have had sorrow upon sorrow.
- 28 I sent him therefore the more urgently that when ye should see him, ye might rejoice again, and I might be the less sorrowful.
- 29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness; and make much of such,
- 30 Because that for the work of Christ he went so far that he was nigh unto death, and regarded not his life, to fulfill that service which was lacking on your part toward me.

CHAPTER 3

OREOVER my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. It grieveth me not to write write one thinge often to you.

Philippians 3:2

I am apprehended for christ

For to you it is a sure thing.

- 2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of dissension.
- 3 For we are circumcision, which worship God in the Spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus and have no confidence in the flesh.
- 4 Though I have whereof I might rejoice in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh: I much more:
- 5 Circumcised the eighth day. of the kindred of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew born of the Hebrews; as concerning the law a Pharisee
- 6 And as concerning ferventness, I persecuted the congregation; and as touching the righteousness which is in the law, I was unrebukeable.
- 7 But the things that were advantage unto me, I counted loss for Christ's sake.
- 8 Yea I think all things but loss for that excellent knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have counted all things loss, and do judge them but dung, that I might win Christ
- 9 And might be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which springeth of the faith which is in Christ, the righteousness which cometh of God through faith:
- 10 In knowing him, and the virtue of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his passions that I might be conformable unto his death;
- 11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection from death
- 12 Not as though I had all ready attained to it either were already perfect: but I follow after, that I may apprehend that wherein I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.
- 13 Brethren I count not myself that I have gotten it: but one thing I say, I forget that which is behind and stretch myself unto that which is before,
- 14 And reach unto the mark appointed to obtain the reward of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

Keep your hearts and minds in Christ

Philippians 4:8

- 15 Let us. therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus wise minded: and if ye be otherwise minded I pray God open even this unto you.
- 16 Nevertheless, in that where unto we are come, let us proceed by one rule, that we may be of one accord.
- 17 Brethren be followers of me and look on them which walk even so as ye have us for an example.
- 18 For many walk, (of whom I have told you often, and now tell you weeping;) that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ:
- 19 Whose end is damnation, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is to their shame, which are worldly minded.
- 20 But our conversation is in heaven: from whence we look for the Saviour, even the Lord Jesus Christ:
- 21 Which shall change our vile bodies, that they may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able to subdue all things unto himself.

CHAPTER 4

- HEREFORE, my brethren dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so continue in the Lord, the beloved.
- 2 I pray Euodias and beseech Sintyche that they be of one accord in the Lord.
- 3 Yea and I beseech thee faithful yokefellow, help the women which labored with me in the gospel, and with Clement also, and with my other labourfellows, whose names are in the book of life.
- 4 Rejoice in the Lord alway, and again I say rejoice.
- 5 Let your softness be known unto all men. The Lord is even at hand.
- 6 Be not careful: but in all things shew your petition unto God in prayer and supplication with giving of thanks.
- 7 And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus.
- 8 Furthermore, brethren whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just,

Philippians 4: 9

All things through Christ

whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things pertain to love, whatsoever things are of honest report; If there be any virtuous thing, If there be any 70 laudable thing, think on these things

- 9 Those same, have ye in your mind, which ye have both learned, and received, heard, and also seen in me, those things do: and the God of peace shall be with you.
- 10 I rejoice in the Lord greatly, that now at the last ye are revived again to care for me, in that wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity.
- 11 I speak not because of necessities: for I have learned in whatsoever estate I am. therewith to be content.
- 12 I can both cast myself down, I can also exceed: everywhere and in all things I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry: to have plenty, and to suffer need.
- 13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.
- 14 Notwithstanding ye have well done, that ye bare part with me in my tribulation.
- 15 Ye Philippians know that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia no congregation bare part with me, as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.
- 16 For when I was in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my needs:
- 17 Not that I desire gifts: but I desire abundant fruit on your part.
- 18 I received all and have plenty. I was even filled after that I had received of Epaphroditus that which came from you, an odor that smelleth sweet, a sacrifice accepted, and pleasant to God.
- 19 My God shall fulfill all your needs through his glorious riches in Jesus Christ.
- 20 Unto God and our Father be praise for ever more. Amen.
- 21 Salute all the saints in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are

⁷⁰ laudable- that is praiseworthy

The brethren which are with me

Philippians 4:23

with me greet you.

22 All the saints salute you: and most of all they which are of the Emperor's household.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.

A-men'

Colossians 1:1

The grace of God in truth

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE COLOSSIANS

- PAUL an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and brother, Timotheus,
- 2 To the saints which are at Colosse and brethren that believe in Christ. Grace be with you, and peace, from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 3 We give thanks to God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, always praying for you,
- 4 Since we heard of your faith which ye have in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye bear to all saints,
- 5 For the hope's sake which is laid up in store for you in heaven, of which hope ye have heard before by the true word of the gospel;
- 6 Which is come unto you even as it is in to all the world and is fruitful as it is among you from the first day in the which ye heard of it and had experience in the grace of God in the truth
- 7 As ye learned of Epaphras our dear fellowservant, which is for you a faithful minister of Christ;
- 8 Which also declared unto us your love which ye have in the spirit.
- 9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard of it, have not ceased praying for you, and desiring that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding:
- 10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord in all things that please, being fruitful in all good works, and increasing in the knowledge of God;
- 11 Strengthed with all might, through his glorious power unto all patience and long suffering with joyfulness
- 12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of saints in light:
- 13 Which hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:

In him should all fullness dwell

Colossians 1:26

- 14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, that is to say the forgiveness of sins:
- 15 Which is the image of the invisible God, first begotten of all creatures:
- 16 For by him were all things created, things that are in heaven, and things that are in earth, things visible and things invisible, whether they be majesty, or lordship, or rule or power: All things are created by him and in him
- 17 And he is before all things, and in him all things have their being.
- 18 And he is the head of the body, that is to wit of the congregation: he is the beginning and first begotten of the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.
- 19 For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell:
- 20 And by him to reconcile all things unto himself, and, to set at peace by him through the blood of his cross both things in heaven, and things in earth.
- 21 And you, (which were in times past strangers and enemies because your minds were set in evil works) hath he now reconciled
- 22 In the body of his flesh through death, to make you holy unblameable and without fault in his own sight:
- 23 If ye continue grounded and established, in the faith and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, whereof ye have heard, how that it is preached among all creatures, which are under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister:
- 24 Now joy I in my sufferings which I suffer for you, and fulfill that which is behind of the passions of Christ in my flesh for his bodies sake, which is the congregation
- 25 Where of I am made a minister, according to the ordinance of God which ordinance was given me unto you-ward, to fulfill the word of God;
- 26 That mystery hidden since the world began and since the

Colossians 1:27 In him dwelleth all fullness of the Godhead

beginning of generations, but now is opened to his saints:

- 27 To whom God would make known the glorious riches of this mystery among the Gentiles, which riches is Christ in you, the hope of glory
- 28 Whom we preach warning all men, and teaching all men in all wisdom; to make all men perfect in Christ Jesus:
- 29 Wherein I also labour, and strive even as farforth as his working worketh in me mightily.

CHAPTER 2

- Let would ye knew what fighting I have for your sakes, and for them of Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my person in the flesh;
- 2 That their hearts might be comforted, and knit together in love, and in all riches of full understanding for to know the mystery of God, the Father, and of Christ
- 3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.
- 4 This I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.
- 5 For though I be absent in the flesh yet am I present with you in the spirit, joining and beholding the order, and that ye keep, your steadfast faith in Christ.
- 6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord even so walk ye in him,
- 7 Rooted and built in him, and steadfast in the faith, as ye have learned: and therein be plenteous in giving thanks.
- 8 Beware lest any man come and spoil you through philosophy and deceitful vanity through the traditions of men and ordinances after the world and not after Christ.
- 9 For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.
- 10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all rule and power:
- 11 In whom also ye are circumcised with circumcision made without hands, by putting off the sinful body of the flesh through the circumcision that is in Christ:
- 12 In that ye are buried with him through baptism in whom ye

Are you led with traditions

Colossians 2:23

are also risen again through faith that is wrought by the operation of God, which raised him from death.

- 13 And you, which were dead in sin through the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened with him, and hath forgiven us all our trespasses;
- 14 And hath put out the handwriting that was against us, contained in the law written and that hath he taken out of the way, and hath fastened it to his cross
- 15 And hath spoiled rule and powers, and hath made a shew of them openly, and hath triumphed over them, in his own person.
- 16 Let no man therefore trouble your consciences about meat, and drink, or in respect of an holyday as the holyday of the new moon, or of the sabbath days:
- 17 Which are nothing but shadows of things to come; but the body is in Christ.
- 18 Let no man make you shoot at a wrong mark, which after his own imagination walketh in the humbleness and holiness of angels, things which he never saw: causeless puffed up, with his fleshly mind
- 19 And holdeth not the head whereof all the body by joints and couples receiveth nourishment, and is knit together, and increaseth with the increasing that cometh of God.
- 20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from ordinances of the world, why, as though ye yet lived in the world, are ye led with traditions, of them that say?
- 21 Touch not; taste not; handle not,
- 22 Which all perish with the using of them; and are after the commandments and 71 doctrines of men
- 23 which things have the similitude of wisdom in chosen holiness and humbleness and in that, they spare not the body; and do the flesh no worship unto his need.

⁷¹ Doctrines plural is always of men, devils, faslse etc,

Colossians 3:1

Put on the new man

CHAPTER 3

I F ye be then risen again with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God

- 2 Set your affeccion on things that are above, and not on things which are on the earth
- 3 For ye are dead and your life is hid with Christ in God.
- 4 When Christ which is our life shall shew himself, then shall ye also appear with him in glory?
- 5 Mortify therefore your members which are on the earth; fornication, uncleanness, unnatural lust, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is worshipping of idols:
- 6 For which things sakes the wrath of God cometh on the children of unbelief,
- 7 In which things ye walked once, When ye lived in them.
- 8 But now put ye also away from you all these anger, wrath, fierceness, maliciousness, cursed speaking, filthy speaking out of your mouths.
- 9 Lie not one to another, that the old man with his works be put off;
- 10 And put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that made him:
- 11 Where is neither Gentile nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian or Scythian, bond or free: but Christ is all in all things.
- 12 Now therefore as elect of God, holy and beloved, put on tender mercy, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering;
- 13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel to another, even as Christ forgave you, even so do ye.
- 14 Above all these things put on love, which is the bond of perfectness.
- 15 And the peace of God rule in your hearts, also to the peace ye are called in one body; and see that ye be thankful.

There is no respect of persons

Colossians 4:4

- 16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you plenteously in all wisdom; teach and exhort your own selves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, ye which have grace in your hearts sing with them, to the Lord.
- 17 And all things (whatsoever ye do in word or deed) do in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father by him.
- 18 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is comely in the Lord.
- 19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter unto them.
- 20 Children, obey your fathers and mothers, in all things: for that is well pleasing unto the Lord.
- 21 Fathers $\overline{}^{72}$ rate not your children, lest they be of a desperate mind.
- 22 Servants, be obedient in all things: unto your bodily masters; not with eye-service, as menpleasers; but in singleness of heart, fearing God.
- 23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as though ye did it to the Lord, and not unto men; forasmuch as ye,
- 24 Know that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.
- 25 But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong that he hath done: for there is no respect of persons.

CHAPTER 4

Y E masters do unto your servants that which is just and equal, seeing ye know that ye also have a master in heaven.

- 2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving,
- 3 praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance that we may speak the mystery of Christ, wherefore I am in bonds:
- 4 That I may utter it, as it becometh me to speak.

7

⁷² rate not-that i treat them equally, not one better than the others

Colossians 4:5

Take heed to the office

- 5 Walk wisely to them that are without, and redeem the time.
- 6 Let your speech be always well favored and be powdered with salt, that ye may know how to answer every man.
- 7 The dear brother Tichicus, which is a faithful minister, and fellowservant in the Lord, shall tell you of all my business.
- 8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know how ye do, and might comfort your hearts
- 9 With one Onesimus, a faithful and a beloved brother, which is one of you. They shall shew you of all things which are done here.
- 10 Aristarchus my fellow prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus, Barnabas's sister's son: touching whom ye received commandments: if he come unto you receive him:
- 11 And Jesus, which is called Justus, which are workfellows unto the kingdom of God, which were unto me consolation.
- 12 Epaphras, the servant of Christ, which is one of you, saluteth you, and always laboureth fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and full in all that is the will of God.
- 13 I bear him record, that he hath a fervent mind toward you, and toward them of Laodicea, and them of Herapolis.
- 14 Dear Luke, the Physician, and Demas, greeteth you.
- 15 Salute the brethren which are of Laodicea, and salute Nymphas, and the congregation which is in his house.
- 16 And when the epistle is read of you, make that it be read in the congregation of the Laodiceans also and ye likewise read the epistle of Laodicea.
- 17 And say to Archippus, take heed to the office that thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.
- 18 Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. A-men'.

Faith and labor of love

1Thessalonians 1:10

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS

AUL, Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the congregation of the Thessalonians in God the Father and in the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

- 2 We give God thanks always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,
- 3 Without ceasing and call to remembrance your work in the faith, and labour in love, and perseverance in the hope of our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God our Father;
- 4 Because we know brethren beloved, that ye are elected; of God,
- 5 For our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and also in the Holy Ghost, and in much certainty; as ye know after what manner we behaved our selves among you for your sakes.
- 6 And ye became followers of us, and of the lord and received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost.
- 7 So that ye were an example to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia.
- 8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not in Macedonia and in Achaia, only: but your faith also which ye have unto God spread herself abroad; in all quarters so greatly that it needeth not us to speak anything at all.
- 9 For they themselves shew of you what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from images for to serve the living and true God:
- 10 And for to look for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from death, I mean Jesus, which delivereth us from wrath to come.

1 Thessalonians 2:1

You would walk worthy

CHAPTER 2

P OR ye yourselves, brethren, know of our entrance in unto you how that it was not in vain:

- 2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, at Philippi, (as ye well know) then were we bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much striving.
- 3 Our exhortation was not to bring you to error, nor yet to uncleanness neither was it with guile:
- 4 But as we were allowed of God that the gospel should be committed unto us: even so we speak not as though we intended to please men, but God, which trieth our hearts.
- 5 Neither was our conversation at any time with flattering words, as ye well know, nor a cloke of covetousness; God is record:
- 6 Neither sought we praise of men, neither of you, nor yet of any others, when we might have been chargeable, as the apostles of Christ
- 7 But we were tender among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:
- 8 So was our affection toward you, our good will was to have dealt unto you, not the gospel of God only: but also our own souls, because ye were dear unto us.
- 9 Ye remember, brethren, our labour and travail: for we labored day and night, because we would not be grievous unto any of you, and preached unto you the gospel of God.
- 10 Ye are witnesses and so is God, how holily and justly and unblamebly we behaved our selves among you that believe:
- 11 As ye know how that we exhorted and comforted and besought everyone of you, as a father his children,
- 12 That ye would walk worthy of God, which hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.
- 13 For this cause, thank we God without ceasing, because that when ye received of us the word, wherewith God was preached ye received it not as the word of man: but even as it was indeed

Satan withstood us

1Thessalonians 3:4

the word of God which worketh in you that believe.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the congregations of God which in Jewry are in Christ Jesus: for ye have suffered like things of your kinsmen, as we ourselves have suffered of the Jews:

15 Which as they killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, even so have they persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

16 And forbid us to preach unto the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fulfilL their sins all way: for the wrath of God is come on them even to the utmost.

17 For as much brethren as we are kept from you for a season, as concerning the bodily presence, but not in the heart, we enforced the more to see you personally with great desire.

18 And therefore we would have come unto you, I Paul once and again: but Satan withstood us.

19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are not ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming? 20 yes ye are our glory and joy.

CHAPTER 3

WHEREFORE since we could no longer forbear, it pleased us to remain at Athens alone:

- 2 And sent Timotheus our brother, and minister of God, and our labour-fellow in the gospel of Christ, to establish you and to comfort you over your faith:
- 3 That no man should be moved in these afflictions: for ye yourselves know, that we are even appointed thereunto.
- 4 For verily, when I was with you, I told you before that we should suffer ⁷³tribulation; even as it came to pass; and as ye know.

_

⁷³ The Thessalonians were perplexed, they thought the persecution and tribulation they were going though meant that the resurrection was passed, and the rapture had occurred and that they had been left behind, and were in the midst of the dreaded tribulation. Paul corrects them with the truth of

1 Thessalonians 3:5

With all his Saints

- 5 For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent that I might have knowledge of your faith, lest haply the tempter had tempted you, and that our labour had been bestowed in vain.
- 6 But now lately when Timotheus came from you unto us, and declared to us your faith, and your love, and how that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring to see us as we desire to see you:
- 7 Therefore, brethren, we had consolation in you in all our adversity, and necessity through your faith:
- 8 For now are we alive, if ye stand steadfast in the Lord.
- 9 For what thanks can we recompense to God again for you over all the joy that we joy for your sakes before our God
- 10 While we pray night and day exceedingly that we might see you presently, and might fulfill that which is lacking in your faith.
- 11 God himself, our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, guide our journey unto you:
- 12 And the Lord increase you and make you flow over in love one toward another, and toward all men, even as we do toward you:
- 13 To make your hearts stable and unblamebly in holiness before God, our Father at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

CHAPTER 4

FURTHERMORE we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you in the Lord Jesus. that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk and to please God, that ye increase more and more.

- 2 Ye remember what commandments we gave you in our Lord Jesus Christ.
- 3 For this is the will of God even that ye should be holy and that ye should abstain from fornication

how the Rapture will happen and to comfort each other with these words. They also believed those who had died in the time before the Lords coming were left without hope of resurrection.

As a thief in the night

1Thessalonians 4:16

- 4 That everyone of you should know how to keep his vessel in holiness and honour:
- 5 And not in the lust of concupiscence, as do the heathen which know not God:
- 6 That no man go too far and defraud his brother in bargaining: because the Lord is avenger of all such, things as we told you before, and testified.
- 7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness: but unto holiness.
- 8 He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, which hath sent his Holy Spirit among you.
- 9 But as touching brotherly love ye need not that I write unto you: for ye are taught of God to love one another.
- 10 Yea and that thing verily ye do unto all the brethren, which are throughout all Macedonia. We beseech you brethren that ye increase more and more;
- 11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to meddle with your own business, and to work with your own hands, as we commanded you:
- 12 That ye may behave your selves honestly toward them that are without, and that nothing be lacking unto you.
- 13 I would not brethren, have you to be ignorant, concerning them which are fallen asleep, that ye sorrow not, as others which have no hope.
- 14 For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again: even so them also which sleep by Jesus will God bring again with him.
- 15 And this say we unto you in the word of the Lord, that we which live and are remaining in the coming of the Lord shall not come 74 ere they which sleep.
- 16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, and the voice of the archangel and trump of God, And the dead in Christ shall arise first:

_

⁷⁴ Ere- that is before

1 Thessalonians 4:17

Faithful is he which called you

17 Then shall we which live, and remain shall be caught up with them also in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so shall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore comfort yourselves one another with these words
CHAPTER 5

F the times and seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you:

- 2 For ye yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord shall come even as a thief in the night.
- 3 When they shall say, peace and no danger, then sudden destruction cometh on them, as the travailing of a woman with child; and they shall not escape.
- 4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should come on you as it were a thief.
- 5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day. We are not of the night neither of darkness.
- 6 Therefore let us not sleep, as do others: but let us watch and be sober.
- 7 For they that sleep sleep in the night; and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.
- 8 But let us which are of the day, be sober, armed with the breastplate of faith and love; and with hope of salvation, as an helmet.
- 9 For God hath not appointed us unto wrath, but to obtain salvation by the means of our Lord Jesus Christ,
- 10 Which died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.
- 11 Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and edify one another, even as ye do.
- 12 We beseech you, brethren, that ye know them which labour among you, and have the oversight of you in the Lord
- 13 And give you exhortation that ye have them the more in love for their works sake. and be at peace with them.
- 14 We desire you, brethren, warn them that are unruly,

Which will also do it

1 Thessalonians 5: 28

comfort the feebleminded, forbear the weak, have continual patience, toward all men.

- 15 See that none recompense evil for evil unto any man: but ever follow that which is good both among yourselves and to all men.
- 16 Rejoice ever.
- 17 Pray continually.
- 18 In all things give thanks. for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus toward you.
- 19 Quench not the Spirit
- 20 Despise not prophesying.
- 21 Examine all things; and keep that which is good.
- 22 Abstain from all suspicious things.
- 23 The very God of peace sanctify you throughout.[and I pray God] that your whole spirit soul and body be kept faultless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ
- 24 Faithful is he which called you, which will also do it.
- 25 Brethren, pray for us.
- 26 Greet all the brethren with an Holy kiss.
- 27 I charge you in the Lord that this epistle be read unto all the Holy brethren.
- 28 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with you. A-men'.

2 Thessalonians 1:1

Them that obey not unto the gospel

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS

PAUL, Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the congregation of the Thessalonians which are in God our Father and in the Lord Jesus Christ:

- 2 Grace be with you and peace from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ:
- 3 We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and everyone of you swimmeth in love toward each other, between your selves;
- 4 So that we ourselves rejoice of you in the congregations of God over your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye suffer:
- 5 Which is a token of the righteous judgment of God that ye are counted worthy of the kingdom of God for which ye also suffer:
- 6 It is verily a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you;
- 7 And to you which are troubled, rest with us when the Lord Jesus shall shew himself from heaven with his mighty angels,
- 8 In flaming fire rendering vengeance unto them that know not God, and to them that obey not unto the gospel of our lord Jesus Christ:
- 9 Which shall be punished with everlasting damnation from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;
- 10 When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be made marvelous in all them that believe: because our testimony that we had unto you was believed even the same day that we preached it.
- 11 Wherefore we pray always for you, that our God make you worthy of the calling, and fulfill all enjoyment of goodness, and

That sinful man must be opened

2 Thessalonians 2:12

the work of faith with power:

12 that the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him through the grace of our God and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER 2

E beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and in that we shall assemble unto him,

- 2 That ye be not suddenly moved from your mind, and be not troubled, neither by spirit, neither by words nor yet by letter which should seem to come from us, as though the day of Christ were at hand.
- 3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for the Lord cometh not, except there come a departing first, and that, that sinful man be opened, the son of perdition;
- 4 which is an adversary and is exalted above all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he shall sit as God, in the temple of God, and shew himself as God.
- 5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things?
- 6 And now ye know what withholdeth: even that he might be uttered at his time.
- 7 For the mystery of that iniquity doth he already work, which only looketh until it be taken out of the way.
- 8 And then shall that wicked be uttered, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the appearance of his coming:
- 9 Even him, whose coming is by the working of Satan with all lying power, signs and wonders:
- 10 And in all deceivableness of unrighteousness, among them that perish; because they received not the (love) of the truth, that they might have been saved.
- 11 And therefore God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe lies: but had pleasure in unrighteousness.
- 12 That all they might be damned which believed not the truth

2 Thessalonians 2:13

All men have not faith

- 13 But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, for because that God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctifying of the Spirit and through believing the truth:
- 14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to obtain the glory that cometh of our lord Jesus Christ.
- 15 Therefore brethren stand fast and keep the ordinances which ye have learned, whether it were by our preaching, or by epistle
- 16 Our Lord Jesus Christ himself and God our Father which hath loved us and hath given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace
- 17 Comfort your hearts and establish you in all doctrine and good doing.

CHAPTER 3

F URTHERMORE that the word of God have free passage and be glorified as it is with you:

- 2 And that we may be delivered from unreasonable and evil men: for all men have not faith:
- 3 But the Lord is faithful, which shall establish you, and keep you from evil.
- 4 We have confidence through the Lord to you-ward, that ye both do and will do that which we commanded you.
- 5 And the Lord guide your hearts, unto the love of God and patience of Christ.
- 6 We require you, brethren in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ that ye withdraw your selves from every brother that walketh inordinately, and not after the instruction, which ye received of us.
- 7 Ye yourselves know how ye ought to follow us: For we behaved not ourselves inordinately among you;
- 8 Neither took we bread of any man for naught but wrought with labour and travail night and day, because we would not be grievous to any of you:

Warn him as a brother

2 Thessalonians 3:18

- 9 Not that we had not authority: but to make ourselves an example unto you to follow us.
- 10 For when we were with you, we warned you of this that if there were any which would not work, that the same should not eat.
- 11 We have heard say no doubt that there are some which walk among you inordinately, and working not at all, but are busy bodies.
- 12 Them that are such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that they work with quietness and eat their own bread.
- 13 Brethren, be not weary in well doing.
- 14 If any man obey not our sayings, send us word of him by a letter: and have no company with him, that he may be shamed.
- 15 And count him not as an enemy, but warn him as a brother.
- 16 The very Lord of peace give you peace always by all means. The Lord be with you all.
- 17 The salutation of I, Paul, with mine own hand, this is the token in all epistles: so I write.
- 18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. A-men.

1 Timothy 1:1

This is a true saying

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO TIMOTHY

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ which is our hope; 2 Unto Timothy, his natural son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord.

- 3 As I besought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I departed into Macedonia, even so do, that thou command some that they teach no other doctrine:
- 4 Neither give heed to fables and genealogies which are endless, and breed doubts, more than Godly edifying which is by faith:
- 5 For the end of the commandment is love that cometh of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:
- 6 From which things some have erred and have turned unto vain jangling;
- 7 Because they would be doctors of the law; and yet understand not what they speak, neither whereof they affirm.
- 8 We know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully;
- 9 Understanding this how that the law is not given unto a righteous man, but unto the unrighteous and disobedient, to the ungodly and to sinners, to unholy and unclean, to murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, to manslayers,
- 10 And whoremongers, to them that defile themselves with mankind, to menstealers: to liars and to perjured people and if there be any other thing that is contrary to wholesome doctrine:
- 11 According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God. Which gospel is committed unto me.
- 12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, which hath made me strong: for he counted me true, and put me in office;
- 13 When before I was a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and a tyrant, But I obtained mercy because I did it ignorantly through unbelief.
- 14 Neverthelater the grace of our Lord was more abundant

Fight a good fight

1 Timothy 2:7

with faith and love, which is in Christ Jesus.

- 15 This is a true saying and by all means worthy to be received that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.
- 16 Notwithstanding for this cause was mercy given unto me, that Jesus Christ should first shew on me all long patience, for an example to them which shall in time to come believe on him unto eternal life.
- 17 So then unto God, King, everlasting, immortal, invisible, and wise only be honour and praise forever and ever. Amen.
- 18 This commandment commit I unto thee, son Timothy, according to the prophesies which in time past were prophesied of thee, that thou by them shouldest fight a good fight;
- 19 Having faith and good conscience; which some have put away from them and as concerning faith have made shipwreck.
- 20 Of whose number is Hymenaeus and Alexander which I have delivered unto Satan that they might be taught not to blaspheme

CHAPTER 2

exhort therefore, that above all things, prayers, supplications, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men:

- 2 For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may live a quiet and a peaceable life in all Godliness and honesty.
- 3 For that is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour;
- 4 Which will have all men saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.
- 5 For there is one God, and one (mediator) between God and men, which is the man Christ Jesus.
- 6 Which gave himself a ransom for all, that it should be testified at his time.
- 7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle: I tell

Timothy 2:8

A husband of one wife

the truth in Christ and lie not being the teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity.

- 8 I will therfore that the men pray every where lifting up pure hands without wrath or doubting.
- 9 Likewise also the women that they array themselves in comely apparel, with shamefacedness and discrete behavior; not with broided hair, or gold or pearls or costly array:
- 10 but with such as becometh women that profess the worshiping of God through good works.
- 11 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection.
- 12 I suffer not a woman to teach, neither to have authority over a Man but to be in silence.
- 13 For Adam was first formed, and then Eve.
- 14 Also Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived and was in transgression..
- 15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved through childbearing if so they continue in faith love and holiness with discretion.

CHAPTER 3

THIS is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work.

- 2 Yea, and a bishop must be faultless, the husband of one wife, sober, discrete, honestly appareled, ⁷⁵harbourous, apt to teach;
- 3 Not a drinker, not a fighter not given to filthy lucre: but gentle, abhorring fighting, abhorring covetousness,
- 4 And one that ruleth his own house honestly having children under obedience, with all honesty.
- 5 For if a man cannot rule his own house, how shall he care for the congregation of God?
- 6 He may not be a young scholar, lest he swell and fall into the judgment of the evil speaker.
- 7 He must also be well reported of among them which are without, lest he fall into rebuke and snare of the evil speaker.
- 8 Likewise must the deacons be honest, not double-tongued not

⁷⁵ Harbourous, that is hospitable

To behave thyself in the house of God

1Timothy4:6

given unto much drinking, nor greedy unto filthy lucre:

- 9 But having the mystery of the faith in pure conscience.
- 10 And let them first be proved and then let them minister, if they be found faultless.
- 11 Even so must their wives be honest not evil speakers: but sober, and faithful in all things.
- 12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife and such as rule their children well and their own households.
- 13 For they that minister well get themselves good degree, and great liberty in the faith, which is in Christ Jesus.
- 14 These things write I unto thee, trusting to come shortly unto thee,
- 15 But and if I tarry long, that then thou mayest yet have knowledge how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the congregation of the living God, the pillar and ground of truth.
- 16 And without nay, great is that mystery of godliness: God was shewed in the flesh, was justified in the Spirit, was seen of angels, was preached unto the Gentiles, was believed on in earth and received up in glory.

CHAPTER 4

THE Spirit speaketh expressly that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, and shall give heed unto spirits of error and devilish ⁷⁶doctrines of them;

- 2 Which speak falsely through hypocrisy and have their consciences marked with an hot iron;
- 3 Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth?
- 4 For all the creatures of God are good, and nothing to be refused if it be received with thanksgiving.
- 5 For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.
- 6 If thou shalt put the brethren in remembrance of these

 $^{^{76}\,}$ Beware of doctrines (plural) for they are always of men devils and evil speakers

1 Timothy 4:7

Words of the faith and good doctrine

things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, which hast been nourished up in the words of the faith and 77 good doctrine which doctrine thou hast continually followed.

- 7 But cast away profane and old wives fables. exercise thy self unto godliness.
- 8 For bodily exercise profiteth little: But godliness is good unto all things, as a thing which hath promises of the life that now is, and of the life to come.
- 9 This is a sure saying and worthy of all parties to be received.
- 10 For therefore we labour and suffer rebuke, because we believe in the living God, which is the Saviour of all men: but specially of those that believe.
- 11 Such things command and teach.
- 12 Let no man despise thy youth; but be unto them that believe, an example in word, in conversation, in love, in spirit, in faith, and in pureness.
- 13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, and to doctrine.
- 14 Despise not the gift that is in thee which was given thee through prophecy and with laying on of the hands of an elder.
- 15 These things exercise, and give thyself unto them, that it may be seen how thou profitest in all things.
- 16 Take heed unto thyself, and unto learning; and continue therein: for if thou shalt so do, thou shalt 78 save thy self and them that hear thee.

CHAPTER 5

REBUKE not an elder, but entreat him as a father; and the younger men as brethren;

2 The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all pureness.

-

⁷⁷ Good doctrine is always singular

⁷⁸ Save lives for service not spirits

Turned back and are gone after Satan

1Timothy 5:16

- 3 Honour widows which are true widows.
- 4 If any widows have children or nephews let them learn first to rule their own houses godly and to recopmpense their elders. for that is good and acceptable before God.
- 5 She that is a very widow and friendless, putteth her trust in God, and continueth in supplication and prayer night and day.
- 6 But she that liveth in pleasure is dead even yet alive.
- 7 And these things command, that they may be without fault
- 8 If there be any that provideth not for his own, and namely, for them of his household, the same denieth the faith, and is worse than an infidel.
- 9 Let no widow be chosen under threescore years old, and such a one as the wife of one man,
- 10 And well reported of in good works; if she have nourished children, if she have been liberal to strangers, if she have washed the saints feet, if she have ministered unto them which were in adversity, if she were continually given unto all manner good works.
- 11 The younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton to the dishonor of Christ then will they marry;
- 12 Having damnation, because they have broke their first faith.
- 13 And also they learn to go from house to house idle, yea not only idle, but also trifling and busybodies, speaking things which are not comely.
- 14 I Will therefore that the younger women marry, and bear children, and guide the house, and give none occasion
- 15 For many of them are already turned back and are gone, after Satan.
- 16 And if any man or woman that believeth have widows let them minister unto them and let not the congregation be charged; that it may have sufficient for them that are widows indeed.

1 Timothy 5:17

The doctrine of godliness

- 17 The elders that rule well are worthy of double honour, most specially they which labour in the word and in teaching.
- 18 For the scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. And the laborer is worthy of his reward.
- 19 Against an elder receive no accusation: but under two or three witnesses.
- 20 Them that sin rebuke openly, that others may fear.
- 21 I testify before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without hasty judgment and do nothing partially.
- 22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.
- 23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often diseases.
- 24 Some men's sin are open beforehand, and go before unto judgment: some men's sins follow after.
- 25 Likewise also good works are manifest beforehand, and they that are otherwise cannot be hid.

CHAPTER 6

- ET as many servants as are under the yoke count their masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not evil spoken of.
- 2 See that they which have believing masters, let them not despise, because they are brethren; but rather do them service for as much as they are faithful and beloved, and partakers of the benefit.
- 3 These things teach and exhort. If any man teach otherwise and is not content with the wholesome words, of our Lord Jesus Christ, and with the doctrine of godliness
- 4 He is puffed up and knoweth nothing, but wasted his brains, about questions and strife of words, whereof spring envy, strife, railings, evil surmising,

King of kings, Lord of lords

1 Timothy 6:17

- 5 And vain disputations of men, with corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, which think that lucre is godliness, from such separate thyself.
- 6 But godliness is great riches, if a man be content, with that he hath.
- 7 For we brought nothing into the world, and it is a plain case that we can carry nothing out.
- 8 When we have food and raiment let us be therewith content.
- 9 They that will be rich fall into temptation and snares, and into many foolish and noisome lusts, which drown men in perdition and destruction.
- 10 For covetousness of lucre, is the root of all evil: which while some lusted after, they erred from the faith and tangled themselves with many sorrows.
- 11 But thou, which art the man of God, flee such things; follow righteousness, godliness, love, patience, and meekness.
- 12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hand on eternal life, where unto thou art called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses
- 13 I give thee charge in the sight of God which quickeneth all things and before Jesus Christ which under Pontius Pilate witnessed a good witnessing
- 14 That thou keep the commandment and be without spot, and unrebukeable until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ
- 15 Which appearing (when the time is come) he shall shew him, that is blessed and mighty only king of kings and Lord of Lords,
- 16 Which only hath immortality, and dwelleth in light that no man can attain; whom never man hath seen, nor can see: unto whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.
- 17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not exceeding wise, and that they trust not in the uncertain riches, but in the living God, which giveth us abundantly all things to enjoy.

1 Timothy 6:18

Save that which is given to thee to keep

- 18 And that they do good and be rich in good works and ready to give and to distribute
- 19 Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may obtain eternal life.
- 20 O Timothy save that which is given thee to keep, and avoid profane vanities of voices and opposition of science falsely so called:
- 21 Which since while some professed they have erred as concerning the faith. Grace be with thee.

A-men'

I know whom I have believed

2 Timothy 1:12

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO TIMOTHY

- PAUL an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God to preach the promise of life which life is in Christ Jesus.
- 2 To Timothy his beloved son. Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the father and from Christ Jesus our Lord.
- 3 I thank God whom I serve from mine elders with pure conscience, that without ceasing I make mention of thee in my prayers night and day;
- 4 Desiring to see thee, being mindful of thy tears: so that I am filled with joy;
- 5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois and in thy mother Eunice: and am assured that it dwelleth in thee also.
- 6 Wherefore I warn thee that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.
- 7 For God hath not given to us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of soberness of mind.
- 8 Be not ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, neither be ashamed of me which am bound, for his sake: but suffer adversity with the gospel also through the power of God;
- 9 Which hath saved us, and called us, with an holy calling, not according to our deeds but according to his own purpose and grace, which grace was given us through Christ Jesus before the world was,
- 10 but is now openly declared by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, which hath put away death and hath brought life and immortality unto light through the gospel
- 11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and apostle, and a teacher, of the Gentiles:
- 12 For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am sure that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto his keeping against that day.

2 Timothy 1:13

Deliver to faithful men

- 13 See thou have the example of the wholesome words, which thou heardest of me, in faith and love which is in Jesus Christ.
- 14 That good thing which was committed to thy keeping, keep in the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.
- 15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me; Of which sort are Phygellus and Hermogenes.
- 16 The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus, for he oft refreshed, me and was not ashamed of my chain:
- 17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.
- 18 The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy with the Lord at that day: And in how many things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

CHAPTER 2

- THOU therefore my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Legis Christ Jesus.
- 2 And what things thou hast heard of me among many bearing witness, the same deliver to faithful men, which are able to teach others also.
- 3 Thou therefore suffer affliction, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.
- 4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with worldly business; and that because he would please him that hath chosen him to be a soldier.
- 5 And though a man strives for mastery, yet is he not crowned, except he strive lawfully.
- 6 The husbandman that laboreth must first receive of the fruits.
- 7 Consider what I say; and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.
- 8 Remember that Jesus Christ being of the seed of David was raised again from death according to my gospel:
- 9 Wherein I suffer trouble, as an evildoer, even unto bonds; But the word of God was not bound.

The Lord knoweth them that are his

2 Timothy 2:23

- 10 Therefore I suffer all things for the elects sake that they might also obtain that salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.
- 11 It is a true saying if we be dead with him, we also shall live with him:
- 12 If we be patient, we shall also reign with him: If we deny him he also shall deny us:
- 13 If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: He cannot deny himself.
- 14 Of these things put them in remembrance, and testify before the Lord that they strive not about words, which is to no profit, but to pervert the hearers.
- 15 Study to shew you⁷⁹ laudable unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, dividing the word of truth justly.
- 16 But shun profane and vain babblings: for they shall increase unto greater ungodliness
- 17 And their words shall fret, even as doeth a canker: of whose number is Hymenaeus and Philetus;
- 18 Which as concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and do destroy the faith of divers persons.
- 19 But the sure ground of God remaineth and hath this seal: the lord knoweth them that are his and let every man that calleth on the name of Christ depart from iniquity.
- 20 Notwithstanding in a great house are not only vessels of gold and of silver: but also of wood and of earth some for honour and some unto dishonor.
- 21 But if a man purge himself from such fellows, he shall be a vessel sanctified unto honour, meet for the Lord and prepared unto all good works.
- 22 Lusts of youth avoid, and follow righteousness, faith, love, and peace, with them that call on the Lord with pure heart.
- 23 Foolish and unlearned questions put from thee

-

⁷⁹ Hear Laudable denotes approved

2 Timoty 2:24

Perilous times shall come

remembering, that they do, but gender strife.

- 24 But the servant of the Lord must not strive: but must be peaceable unto all men, and apt to teach, and one that can suffer,
- 25 The evil in meekness and can inform them that resist, if that God at any time will give them repentance for to know the truth;
- 26 That they may come to themselves again out of the snare of the devil, which are now taken of him at his will.

CHAPTER 3

THIS understand that in the last days shall come perilous times.

- 2 For the men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, cursed speakers, disobedient to father and mother, unthankful, unholy,
- 3 Unkind, trucebreakers, stubborn, false accusers, rioters, fierce, despisers of them which are good
- 4 Traitors, heady high minded, greed, lovers of pleasures, more than the lovers of God
- 5 Having a similitude of Godly living, but have denied the power thereof, from such abhor.
- 6 Of this sort are they which enter into houses, and bring into bondage women laden with sins, which women are led of divers lusts,
- 7 Ever learning and never able to come unto the knowledge of the truth.
- 8 As Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, even so do these resist the truth, they are men of corrupt minds, and lewd as concerning the faith:
- 9 But they shall prevail no longer. for their madness shall be uttered unto all men as theirs was.
- 10 But thou hast seen the experience of my doctrine, fashion of living, purpose, faith, long suffering, love, patience,
- 11 Persecutions, and afflictions which happened unto me at Antioch at Iconium and at Lystra: which persecutions I

Prepaired unto all good works

2 Timothy 4:8

suffered patiently. and from them all the Lord delivered me.

- 12 Yea, and all that will live Godly in Christ Jesus, must suffer persecutions.
- 13 But the evil men and deceivers shall wax worse and worse, while they deceive and are deceived themselves.
- 14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, which also were committed unto thee, seeing thou knowest of whom thou hast learned them
- 15 And for as much also as thou hast from a child known the holy scripture, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through the faith which is in Christ Jesus.
- 16 For all scripture is given by inspiration of God is profitable to teach, to improve, to amend, and to instruct in righteousness
- 17 That the man of God may be perfect, and prepared unto all good works.

CHAPTER 4

- Lestify therefore before God, and before the Lord Jesus Christ, which shall judge quick and dead at his appearing in his kingdom
- 2 Preach the word be fervent be it in season, or out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort, with all long suffering and doctrine.
- 3 For the time will come when they will not suffer wholesome doctrine: but after their own lusts shall they get and heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears
- 4 And shall turn their ears from the truth, and shall be given unto fables.
- 5 But watch thou in all things, and suffer adversity, and do the work of an evangelist, fulfill thine office unto the utmost.
- 6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departing is at hand.
- 7 I have fought a good fight, and have fulfilled my course, and have kept the faith.
- 8 From henceforth is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, that righteous judge shall give me at that day:

2 Timothy 4:9

The Lord assisted me

not to me only, but unto all them that love his coming.

- 9 Make speed to come unto me at once:
- 10 For Demas hath left me, and hath loved this present world, and is departed into Thessalonica; Crescens is gone to Galatia, and Titus unto Dalmatia.
- 11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee for he is necessary unto me for to minister.
- 12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.
- 13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest bring with thee, and the books, but specially the parchments.
- 14 Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil: the Lord reward him according to his deeds:
- 15 Of whom be thou ware also; for he withstood our preaching sore.
- 16 At my first answer no man assisted me, but all forsook me: I pray God that it may not be laid to their charges:
- 17 Notwithstanding the Lord assisted me, and strengthed me; that by me the preaching should be fulfilled to the utmost, and that all the Gentiles should hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.
- 18 And the Lord shall deliver me from all evil doing, and shall keep me unto his heavenly kingdom. to whom be praise forever and ever. Amen.
- 19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onsiphorus,
- 20 Erastus abode at Corinth: Trophimus I left at Miletum sick.
- 21 Make speed to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.
- 22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. A-men'

Teachers of honest things

Titus 1:12

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO TITUS

PAUL the servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to preach the faith of God's elect, and the knowledge of that truth which is after godliness;

- 2 Upon the hope of eternal life, which life God, that ⁸⁰cannot lie hath promised, before the world began:
- 3 But hath opened his word at the time appointed through preaching, which preaching is committed unto me by the commandment of God our Saviour;
- 4 To Titus, his natural son in the common faith: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and from the lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.
- 5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest perform that which was lacking, and shouldest ordain elders in every city, as I appointed thee.
- 6 If any be faultless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children, which are not slandered of riot neither are disobedient.
- 7 For a bishop must be faultless, as it becometh the minister of God: not stubborn, not angry, no drunkard, no fighter, not given to filthy lucre:
- 8 But harbourous, that loveth goodness, being sober minded, righteous, holy, temperate,
- 9 And such as cleaveth unto the true word of doctrine, that he may be able to exhort with wholesome learning and to improve them that say against it.
- 10 For there are many disobedient and talkers of vanity and deceivers of minds, namely they of the circumcision:
- 11 Whose mouths must be stopped, which pervert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, because of filthy lucre.
- 12 One being of themselves, which was a poet of their own,

 $^{^{\}rm 80}$ It is utterly impossible for God to lie

Titus 1:13

Looking for that blessed hope

said, The Cretians are always liars, evil beasts, and slow bellies.

- 13 This witness is true. Wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith;
- 14 And not taking heed to Jews fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth.
- 15 Unto the pure are all things pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even the very minds and consciences of them are defiled.
- 16 They confess that they know God: but with the deeds they deny, him and are abominable, and disobedient, and unto all good works discommendable.

CHAPTER 2

But speak thou that which becometh wholesome learning.
That the elder men be sober, honest, discrete, sound in the faith, in love, and in patience.

- 3 And the elder women likewise, that they be in such raiment as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not given to much drinking, but teachers of honest things
- 4 To make the young women sober minded, to love their husbands, to love their children,
- 5 To be discrete, chaste, housewifely, good, and obedient unto their own husbands, that the word of God be not evil spoken of.
- 6 Young men likewise exhort that they be sober minded.
- 7 Above all things shew thyself an example of good works: with uncorrupt doctrine, with honesty, and with the wholesome,
- 8 Word, which cannot be rebuked: that he which withstandeth may be ashamed having nothing in you that he may speak with dispraise.
- 9 Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them in all things, 81 not answering again;

⁸¹ Not backtalking

Heirs through hope of eternal life

Titus 3:7

- $10~{
 m Not}~^{82}{
 m purloining},~{
 m but}~{
 m shewing}~{
 m all}~{
 m good}~{
 m faithfulness};~{
 m that}~{
 m they}~{
 m may}~{
 m do}~{
 m worship}~{
 m to}~{
 m the}~{
 m doctrine}~{
 m of}~{
 m our}~{
 m Saviour}~{
 m God}~{
 m in}~{
 m all}~{
 m things}.$
- 11 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared unto all men,
- 12 Teaching us. That, we should deny ungodliness and worldly lusts, and that we should live sober-minded, righteously, and godly in this present world.
- 13 looking for that blessed hope, and glorious appearing of the mighty God, and of our Saviour Jesus Christ;
- 14 Which gave himself for us, to redeem us. from all unrighteousness, and to purify us a peculiar people, unto himself fervently given, unto good works.
- 15 These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. See that no man despise thee.

CHAPTER 3

WARN them, that they submit themselves to rule and power, to obey the officers, that they be ready unto all good works

- 2 That they speak evil of no man, that they be no fighters, but soft, shewing all meekness unto all men.
- 3 For we ourselves also were in times past unwise, disobedient, deceived in danger to lusts, and to divers manners of voluptuousness, living in maliciousness, and envy full of hate, hating one another.
- 4 But after that the kindness and love of our Saviour God toward man appeared,
- 5 Not of the deeds of righteousness which we have done, but of his mercy he saved us, by the fountain of the new birth, and with the renewing of the Holy Ghost;
- 6 Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour;
- 7 That we once justified by his grace, should be heirs through

⁸² Not Purloining Not Stealing

Titus 3:8

That nothing be lacking

hope of eternal life

- 8 This is a true saying, Of these things I would thou shouldest certify, that they which believe God might be diligent to go forward in good works. These things are good and profitable unto men.
- 9 Avoid foolish questions and genealogies, and brawling, and strife about the law, for they are unprofitable and superfluous.
- 10 A man that is given to heresies after the first and the second admonition avoid;
- 11 Remembering that he that is such is perverted, and sinneth, even damned by his own judgment.
- 12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus be diligent to come to me unto Nicopolis: For I have determined there to winter.
- 13 Bring Zenas the lawyer and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be lacking unto them.
- 14 And let ours also learn to excel in good works as far as need requireth that they be not unfruitful.
- 15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace be with you all.

A-men'

Whom I begat in my bonds

Philemon vs 16

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO PHILEMON

AUL the prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy. our brother, unto Philemon the beloved, and our helper,

- 2 And to the beloved Apphia, and to Archippus our fellow soldier, and to the congregation in thy house:
- 3 Grace be with you, and peace, from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 4 I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers
- 5 When I hear of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints;
- 6 So that the fellowship that thou hast in the faith is fruitful through knowledge of all good things which are in you by Jesus Christ.
- 7 And we have great joy and consolation over thy love, for by thee, (brother) the saints hearts are comforted.
- 8 Wherefore though I be bold in Christ to enjoin thee that which becometh thee,
- 9 Yet for loves sake I rather beseech thee, though I be as I am, even Paul aged, and now in bonds for Jesus Christ's sake.
- 10 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I begat in my bonds:
- 11 Which in time passed was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable both to thee and also to me:
- 12 Whom I have sent home again: Thou therefore receive him, that is to say mine own bowels:
- 13 Whom I would fain have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds of the gospel:
- 14 Nevertheless without thy mind would I do nothing; that, that good which springeth of thee should not be as it were of necessity, but willingly.
- 15 Haply he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him forever;
- 16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant I mean a brother

Philemon vs 17

I will recompense it

beloved, specially to me, but how much more unto thee both in the flesh and also in the Lord?

- 17 If thou count me a fellow, receive him as myself.
- 18 If he have hurt thee or oweth thee ought, that lay to my charge;
- 19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will recompense it: So that I do not say to thee how that thou owest unto me even thine own self.
- 20 Even so, brother, let me enjoy thee in the Lord: Comfort my bowels in the Lord.
- 21 Trusting in thine obedience I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt do more than I say.
- 22 Moreover prepare me lodging: for I trust through the help of your prayers I shall be given unto you.
- 23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow prisoner in Christ Jesus;
- 24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my helpers.
- 25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirits. A-men'

By whom also he made the world

Hebrews 1:14

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL? TO THE HEBREWS

OD in time past diversely and in many ways spake unto the fathers by the prophets,

- 2 But in these last days he hath spoken unto us. by his Son whom he hath made heir of all things: by whom also he made the world.
- 3 Which Son being the brightness of his glory, and very image of his substance, bearing up all things with the word of his power, hath in his own person purged our sins, and is seated on the right hand of the majesty on high
- 4 And is more excellent than the angels, in as much as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than have they.
- 5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son this day have begat I thee? And again, I will be his Father and he shall be my Son.
- 6 And again when he bringeth in the first begotten Son into the world, he saith, and all the angels of God shall worship him.
- 7 And of the angels he saith: He maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers flames of fire.
- 8 But unto the Son he saith: Thy throne O God shall be forever and ever: the scepter of thy kingdom is a right scepter.
- 9 Thou hast loved righteousness and hated iniquity. Wherefore God which is thy God hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.
- 10 And, thou, Lord, in the beginning hast Laid the foundations of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thy hands.
- 11 They shall perish but thou shalt endure. They all shall wax old as doth a garment:
- 12 And as a vesture shalt thou change them and they shall be changed: but thou art always and thy years shall not fail.
- 13 Unto which of the angels said he at any time? Sit on my right hand till I make thine enemies thy footstool.
- 14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent to minister for their sakes, which shall be heirs of salvation?

Hebrews 2:1

How shall we escape

CHAPTER 2

HEREFORE we ought to give the more heed to the things we have heard, lest we perish.

- 2 For if the word which was spoken by angels was steadfast, so that every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense to reward:
- 3 How shall we escape if we despise so great salvation; which at the first began to be preached of the Lord himself, and afterward was confirmed unto us by them that heard him:
- 4 God bearing witness, thereto both with signs and wonders, also and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost according to his own will.
- 5 He hath not unto the angels put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak.
- 6 But one in a certain place witnessed, saying, what is man, that thou art mindful of him?
- 7 After thou for a season madest made him lower than the angels; thou crownedst him with honour and glory and hast set him above the works of thy hands.
- 8 Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. In that he put all things under him he left nothing that is not put under him.
- 9 Nevertheless we see not yet all things subdued but we see Jesus, who was made less than the angels, for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste of death for all men.
- 10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, after that he had brought many sons unto glory, that he should make the Lord of their salvation perfect through suffering.
- 11 For he that sanctified and they which are sanctified are all of one: for which causes he is not ashamed to call them brethren.
- 12 Saying: I will declare thy name unto my brethren and in the midst of the congregation will I praise thee.

Hath rule over his own house

Hebrews 3:8

- 13 And again: I will put my trust in him. And again, behold here am I, and the children which God hath given me.
- 14 For as much then as the children were partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part with them; to put down through death him that had lordship over death that is to say, the devil
- 15 And that he might deliver them, which through fear of death were all their lifetime in danger of bondage.
- 16 For he in no place taketh on him the angels: but the seed of Abraham taketh he on him.
- 17 Wherefore in all things it became him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be merciful, and a faithful high priest in things concerning God, to make reconciliation, for to purge the peoples sins.
- 18 For in that he himself suffered and was tried, he is able to succor them that are tempted.

CHAPTER 3

- WHEREFORE holy brethren, partakers of the celestial calling, consider the ambassador and high priest of our profession, Christ Jesus;
- 2 Who was faithful to him that appointed him, even as was Moses was in all his house.
- 3 And this man was counted worthy of more glory then Moses: Inasmuch as he which hath prepared the house hath most honour in the house.
- 4 Every house is builded of some man: but he that ordained all things is God.
- 5 And Moses verily was faithful in all his house as a minister to bear witness of those things which should be spoken afterward;
- 6 But Christ as a Son hath rule over his own house; whose
- house are we, so that we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of that hope unto the end.
- 7 Wherefore as the Holy Ghost saith: today if ye shall hear his voice,
- 8 Harden not your hearts after the rebellion in the day of

Hebrews 3:9

Harden not your hearts

temptaion in the wilderness

- 9 Where your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years.
- 10 Wherefore I was grieved with the generation, and said. They do always err in their hearts: they verily have not known my ways
- 11 So I swear in my wrath that they should not enter into my rest.
- 12 Take heed, brethren, that there be in any of you an evil heart in unbelief that he should depart from the living God:
- 13 But exhort one another daily, while is it called today; lest any of you wax hardhearted through the deceitfulness of sin
- 14 We are partakers of Christ, if we keep sure unto the end, the first confidence
- 15 So long as it is said: today if ye hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as when ye rebelled.
- 16 For some, when they heard, rebelled: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt under Moses.
- 17 But with whom was he displeased forty years? was he not displeased with them that sinned: whose carcasses were overthrown in the desert?
- 18 To whom swear he that they should not enter into his rest, but unto them that believed not?
- 19 And we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

CHAPTER 4

- ET us fear therefore lest any of us forsaking the promise of entering into his rest, should seem to come behind.
- 2 For unto us was it declared as well as unto them. but it profited not them that they heard the word because they which heard it coupled it not with faith.
- 3 But we which have believed do enter into his rest, as contrariwise he said to the other, I have sworn in my wrath they shall not enter into my rest. And that spake he verily long after that the works were made, and the foundation of the world laid.

Sharper than any two edged sword

Hebrews 5:1

- 4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day, on this wise: And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.
- 5 And in this place again: they shall not come into my rest.
- 6 Seeing therefore it followeth that some must enter thereunto and they to whom it was first preached entered not therein for unbelief.
- 7 Again, he appointed in David, a certain present day, after so long a time; saying as it is rehearsed: this day if ye hear his voice be not hardhearted.
- 8 For if Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day.
- 9 There remaineth therefore yet a rest to the people of God.
- 10 For he that is entered into his rest, doth cease from his own works, as God did from his.
- 11 Let us study therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example into unbelief.
- 12 For the word of God is quick, and mighty in operation, and sharper than any two edged sword: and piercing through even unto the dividing asunder of the soul and the spirit, and of the joints and the marrow: and judgeth the thoughts and the intents of the heart:
- 13 Neither is there any creature invisible in the sight of it: for all things are naked and bare unto the eyes of him of whom we speak.
- 14 Seeing then that we have a great high priest, which is entered into heaven, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold our profession.
- 15 For we have not an high priest which cannot have compassion on our infirmities, but was in all points tempted like as we are: but yet without sin.
- 16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may receive mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

CHAPTER 5

P OR every high priest that is taken from among men is ordained for men, in things pertaining to God, to offer

Hebrews 5:2

Thou art my Son

gifts and sacrifices for sin:

- 2 Which can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way; because that he himself also is compassed with infirmity.
- 3 For the which infirmities sake he is bound, to offer for his own sins, as well for the peoples.
- 4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.
- 5 Even so likewise Christ glorified not himself to be made the high priest: but he that said unto him: thou art my son this day begat I thee
- 6 As he also in another place speaketh: Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedech.
- 7 Which in days of his flesh did offer up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death: and was also was heared because of his godliness
- 8 And though he were God's Son, yet learned he obedience by those things which he suffered;
- 9 And was made perfect, and the cause of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;
- 10 And is called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec.
- 11 Whereof we have many things to say, which are hard to be uttered, because ye are dull of hearing.
- 12 For when as concerning the time ye ought to be teachers, yet have ye need again that we teach you the first principles of the word of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat,
- 13 For every man that is fed with milk is inexpert in the word
- 14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are full age, which of righteousness: for he is but a babe.

through custom have their senses exercised to judge both good and evil also.

He sware by himself

Hebrews 6:15

CHAPTER 6

WHEREFORE let us leave the doctrine pertaining to the beginning of a Christian man, and let us go unto perfection; and now no more lay the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

- 2 Of the doctrine of baptism, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection from death, and of eternal judgment.
- 3 And so will we do, if God permits.
- 4 For it is not possible that they which were once lighted, and have tasted of the good word of God, and were become partakers of the Holy Ghost,
- 5 And have tasted of the good word of God, and of the power of the world to come:
- 6 If they fall, should be renewed again unto repentance: for as much as they have (as concerning themselves) crucified the Son of God afresh, making a mockery of him.
- 7 For that earth which drinketh in the rain which cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them that dress it, receiveth blessing of God.
- 8 But that ground, which beareth thorns and briars is reproved, and is nigh unto cursing: whose end is to be burned.
- 9 Nevertheless, dear friends, we trust to see better of you, and things which accompany salvation, though we thus speak.
- 10 For God is not unrighteous that he should forget your work and labour that procedeth of love, which love shewed in his name, which have ministered unto the saints and yet minister.
- 11 Yea and we desire that everyone of you shew the same diligence to the establishing of hope, even unto the end:
- 12 That ye faint not, but be followers of them which through faith and patience inherit the promises.
- 13 For when God made promises to Abraham because he had no greater thing to swear by he swore by himself
- 14 Saying: Surely I will bless thee and multiply thee indeed.
- 15 And so after that he had tarried a long time he enjoyed the promise.

Hebrews 6:16

It was impossible that God should lie

16 Men verily swear by him that is greater than themselves and an oath to confirm the thing is among them an end of all strife.

17 So God willing very abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promisese the stableness of his counsel he added an oath

18 That by two immutable things (in which it was impossible that God should lie) we might have perfect consolation which have fled for to hold fast the hope that is set before us

19 Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul both sure and steadfast which hope also entereth in into those things which are within the veil

20 Whither the fore runner is for us entered in I mean Jesus that is made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedech.

CHAPTER 7

HIS Melchisedec, king of Salem (which being priest of the most high God met Abraham as he returned again from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:

- 2 To whom also Abraham gave tithes of all things) first is by interpretation king of righteousness: after that he is king of Salem that is to say king of peace
- 3 Without father without mother without kin and hath neither beginning of his time nether yet end of his life: but is likened unto the Son of God and continueth a priest forever.
- 4 Consider what a man this was unto whom the patriarch Abraham gave tithes of the spoils.
- ⁵ And verily those children of levi which receive the office of the priests have a commandment to take according to the law tithes of the people that is to say of their brethren yea though they sprung out of the loins of Abraham.
- 6 But he whose kindred is not counted among them received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.
- 7 And no man denieth, but that which is less, receiveth blessing of that which is greater.

Here men that die receive tithes

Hebrews 7:22

- 8 And here men that die receive tithes; But there he receiveth tithes, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.
- 9 And to say the truth Levy himself, also which receiveth tithes paid tithes, in Abraham.
- 10 For he was yet in the loins of his father Abraham when Melchisedec met him.
- 11 If therefore now perfection came by the priesthood of the Levites, (for under that priesthood the people received the law) what further need was it that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not after the order of Aaron?
- 12 Now no doubt if the priesthood be translated, then of necessities, must the law also be translated.
- 13 For he of whom these things are spoken pertaineth unto another tribe, of which never man served at the altar.
- 14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang of the tribe of Juda, of which tribe spake Moses nothing concerning priesthood.
- 15 And it is yet a more evident thing if after the similitude of Melchisedec there arise another priest
- 16 Which is not made after the law of the carnal commandment: but after the power of an endless life
- 17 (For he testifieth, thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec)
- 18 Then the commandment that went afore is disannulled because of her weakness and unprofitableness thereof
- 19 For the law made nothing perfect, but was an introduction of a better hope, by which hope we draw nigh unto God.
- 20 And for this cause it is a better hope, that it was not promised without an oath.
- 21 Those priests were made without an oath: but this priest with an oath by him that said unto him, The Lord swear and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec:
- 22 And for that cause was Jesus a surety of a better testament.

Hebrews 7:23

Hath an everlasting priesthood

- 23 And among them many were made priests because they were not suffered to endure by the reason of death.
- 24 But this man, because he endureth ever, hath an everlasting priesthood. .
- 25 Wherfore he is able also ever to save them that come unto God by him seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for us.
- 26 Such an high priest it became us, to have which is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than heavens;
- 27 Which needeth not daily, (as yonder high priests) to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the peoples: sins for that did he at once for all when he offered up himself.
- 28 For the law maketh men priests which have infirmities; but the word of the oath, that came since the law, maketh the Son priest, which is perfect for ever more.

CHAPTER 8

- F the things which we have spoken this is the pith: that we have such an high priest, that is set on the right hand of the seat of majesty in heaven;
- 2 And is a minister of holy things and of the very tabernacle which God pitched and not men
- 3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer.
- 4 For he were not a priest if he were on the earth where are priests that according to the law:
- 5 Offer gifts which priests serve unto example and shadow of heavenly things, even as the answer of God was given unto Moses when he was about to finish the tabernacle: Take, heed,
- (said he) that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.
- 6 Now hath he obtained a more excellent office, in as much as he is the mediator of a better testament, which was made upon

The holiest of all

Hebrews 9:4

better promises.

- 7 For if that first testament had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second.
- 8 For in rebuking them he saith: Behold the days will come, (saith the Lord) and I will finish upon the house of Israel and upon the house of Juda:
- 9 A new testament: not like the testament that I made with their fathers at that time when I took them by the hands to lead them out of the land of Egypt; for they continued not in my testament, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.
- 10 For this is the testament that I will make with the house of Israel: After those days saith the Lord: ⁸³I will put my laws in Their mind, and in their hearts I will write them and I will be their God, and they shall be my people:
- 11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbor, and every man his brother saying, know the Lord: for they shall know me, from the least to the most of them:
- 12 For I will be merciful over their unrighteousness, and on their sins and on their iniquities, will I remember no more.
- 13 In that he saith a new testament, he hath abrogated the old, Now that which is disannulled and waxed old is ready to to vanish away.

CHAPTER 9

HAT first Tabernacle verily had ordinances and servings of God, and worldly holiness.

- 2 For there was a fore-tabernacle made, wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread; which is called holy.
- 3 But within the second veil was there a tabernacle which is called the Holiest of all;
- 4 Which had the golden censer and the ark of the testament overlaid roundabout with gold, wherein was the golden pot

⁸³ This after Jacobs trouble, All Israel shall be saved

Hebrews 9:5

Was not yet opened

- with manna, and Aarons rod that budded and the tables of the 5 Over the ark were the cherubims of glory, shadowing the eat of grace, of which things we will not now speak particularly.
- 6 When these things were thus ordained the priests went always into the first tabernacle and executed the service of God.
- 7 But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, and not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the ignorance of the people.
- 8 Wherewith the Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way of holy things was not yet opened, while as yet the first tabernacle was standing.
- 9 Which was a similitude for the time then present, and in which were offered gifts and sacrifices, that could not make themt hat minister perfect as pertaining to the conscience
- 10 With only meats and drinks, and divers washings and justifying of the flesh, which were ordained until the time of reformation.
- 11 But Christ being an high priest of good things to come, ame by a greater and a more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands: that is to say, not of this manner building
- 12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves: but by his own blood he entered once for all into the holy place and found eternal redemption.
- 13 For if the blood of oxen and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer, when it was sprinkled, purified the unclean as touching the purifying of the flesh:
- 14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, (which through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God,) purge your consciences from dead works for to serve the living God?
- 15 And for this cause is he the mediator of the new testament, that thorough death, which for the redemption of those transgressions that were in the first testament) they which were called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

Appointed unto men once to die

Hebrews 9:28

- 16 For wheresoever a testament is, there must also be the death of him that maketh the testament.
- 17 For the testament taketh authority when men are dead: for it is of no value as long as he that made it is alive.
- 18 For which cause, also neither that first testament, was ordained, without blood.
- 19 For when all the commandments of Moses were read, unto all the people, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water and purple wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people,
- 20 Saying: this is the blood of the testament which God hath appointed unto you.
- 21 Moreover he sprinkled the tabernacle, with blood also and all the ministering vessels.
- 22 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without effusion of blood is no remission.
- 23 It is then needed that the similitudes of heavenly things be purified with such things; but the heavenly things themselves are purified with better sacrifices than are these.
- 24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places that are made with hands, which are but similitudes of true things; but is entered into very heaven itself, for to appear now in the sight of God for us:
- 25 Not to offer himself often as, the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with strange blood.
- 26 For then must he have often suffered since the world began: but now in the end of the world hath he appeared once to put sin to flight by the offering up of himself.
- 27 And as it is appointed unto men that they shall once die, and then cometh the judgment.
- 28 Even so Christ was once offered to take away the sins of many, and unto them that look for him shall he appear again without sin unto salvation.

Hebrews 10:1

A body hast thou ordained me

CHAPTER 10

POR the law which hath but the shadow of good things to come, and not the things, in their own fashion can never with the sacrifices which they offer year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect

- 2 For would not then those sacrifices have ceased to have been offered? Because that the offerers once purged should have had no more consciences of sins.
- 3 Nevertheless in those sacrifices is there mention made of sins every year.
- 4 For it is impossible that the blood of oxen and of goats should take away sins.
- 5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not have, but a ⁸⁴body hast thou ordained me.
- 6 In sacrifices and sin offerings thou hast no pleasure.
- 7 Then said I, Lo, I come in the chiefest of the book it is written of me, that I should do thy will O God.
- 8 Above when he had said sacrifice and offering and burnt sacrifices and sin offerings thou wouldest not have, neither hast allowed; (which yet are offered by the law;)
- 9 And then said I, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first to establish the latter.
- 10 By the which will we are sanctified by the suffering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.
- 11 And every priest is ready, daily ministering and oftentimes offereth one manner of offering, which can never take away sins.
- 12 But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat him down on the right hand of God;
- 13 And from henceforth tarrieth till his foes be made his

 $^{^{84}}$ A body ordained to be sacrificed for his people

Prepaired for us through the veil

Hebrews 10:28

footstool.

- 14 For with one offering hath he made perfect, forever, them that are sanctified.
- 15 And the Holy Ghost also beareth us record, of this even when he told before,
- 16 This is the testament that I will make unto them after those days, saith the Lord. I will put my laws in their hearts, and in their minds I will write them;
- 17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.
- 18 And where remission of these things is, there is no more offering for sin.
- 19 Seeing, brethren, that by the means of the blood of Jesus, we may be bold to enter into that holy place
- 20 By the new and living way which he hath prepared for us, through the veil, that is to say by his flesh.
- 21 And seeing also that we have an high priest which is ruler over the house of God;
- 22 Let us draw nigh with a true heart in a full faith sprinkled in our hearts from an evil conscience and washed our bodies in pure water
- 23 And let us keep the profession of our hope without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;)
- 24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works:
- 25 And let us not forsake the fellowship that we have among ourselves as the manner of some is: but let us exhort one another and that so much the more because ye see that the day draweth nigh.
- 26 For if we sin willingly after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,
- 27 But a fearful looking for judgment and violent fire, which shall devour the adversaries
- 28 He that despiseth Moses law died without mercy under two

Ye have need of patience

Or three witnesses:

Hebrews 11:39

- 29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be counted worthy, which treadeth underfoot the Son of God, and counteth the blood of the testament, as an unholy thing wherewith he was sanctified, and doeth dishonor to the Spirit of grace?
- 30 For we know him that hath said vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense saith the Lord, and again: the Lord shall judge his people.
- 31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.
- 32 Call to remembrance the days that are past, in the which, after ye had received light, ye endured a great fight in adversities:
- 33 Partly, while all men gazed at you and wondered for the shame and tribulation, that was done unto, you and partly while ye became companions of them which so passed their time.
- 34 For ye suffered also with my bonds, and took as worth the spoiling of your goods, and that with gladness, knowing in your selves how that ye had in heaven a better and an enduring substance.
- 35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward
- 36 For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.
- 37 For yet a very little while, and he that shall come, will come, and will not tarry.
- 38 But the just shall live by faith: and if any withdraw himself my soul shall have no pleasure in him.
- 39 We are not of them which withdraw ourselves unto damnation: but pertain to fai,th to the winning of the soul.

Faith of old testament saints

Hebrews 11:12

CHAPTER 11

AITH is a sure confidence of things which are hoped for, and a certainty of things — 1... and a certainty of things which are not seen.

- 2 By it the elders were well reported of.
- 3 Through faith we understand that the world was ordained by the word of God: and that things which are seen were made of things which are not seen.
- 4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more plenteous sacrifice than Cain: by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: by which also he being dead yet speaketh.
- 5 By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death neither was he found: for God had taken him away. before he was taken away, he was reported of, that he had pleased God,
- 6 But without faith it is impossible to please him. for he that cometh to God must believe that God is, and that he is a rewarder of them that seek him.
- 7 By faith Noah honored God, after that he was warned of things which were not seen, and prepared the ark, to the saving of his household through the which ark he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which cometh by faith.
- 8 By faith Abraham when he was called to go out into a place which he should afterward receive to inheritance obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he should go.
- 9 By faith he removed into the land that was promised him, as into a strange country and dwelt in tabernacles: and so did Isaac and Jacob heirs with him of the same promise.
- 10 For he looked for a city having a foundation, whose builder and maker is God.
- 11 Through faith Sara also received strength to be with child and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful which had promised.
- 12 And therfore sprange therof one (and of one which was as

Hebrews 11:13

That they seek a country

good as dead) so many in multitude, as the stars of the sky and as the sand of the sea shore which is innumerable.

- 13 And these all died in faith, and received not the promises: but saw them afar off, and believed them, and saluted them: and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.
- 14 They that say such things declare that they seek a country.
- 15 Also, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they had leisure to have returned again.
- 16 But now they desire a better, that is to say a heavenly. wherefore God is not ashamed of them even to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city.
- 17 In faith Abraham offered up Isaac: when he was tempted, and he offered him being his only begotten son, which had received the promises,
- 18 Of whom it was said, in Isaac shall thy seed be called:
- 19 For he considered that God was able to raise up again from death. from whence received he him for an example.
- 20 In faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.
- 21 By faith Jacob when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph, and bowed himself, toward the top of his scepter.
- 22 By faith Joseph when he died, remembered the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment of his bones.
- 23 By faith Moses when he was born, was hid three months of his father and mother, because they saw he was a proper child; neither feared they the kings commandment.
- 24 By faith Moses, when he was great, refused to be called the Son of Pharaohs daughter
- 25 And chose rather to suffer adversity with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season

A better Resurrection

Hebrews 11:37

- 26 And esteemed the rebuke of Christ greater riches than the treasure of Egypt: for he had a respect unto the reward.
- 27 By faith he forsook Egypt, and feared not the fierceness of King. for he endured, even as he had seen him which is invisible.
- 28 Through faith he ordained the Passover lamb and the effusion of blood, lest he that destroyed the first born should touch them.
- 29 By faith they passed through the red sea as by dry land: which when the Egyptians had assayed to do they were drowned.
- 30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days.
- 31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with the unbelievers, when she had received the spies to lodging peaceably.
- 32 And what shall I more say? The time would be to short for me to tell of Gideon, of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae: of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets:
- 33 Which through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained the promises, stopped the mouths of lions,
- 34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, of weak were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.
- 35 And the women received their dead raised to life again: others were racked, and would not be delivered; that they might receive a better resurrection:
- 36 Other tasted of mocking, and scourgings morover of bonds and imprisonment:
- 37 Were stoned, were hewn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword, wandered about in sheepskins in goatskins; being in need, tribulation, and vexation

Hebrews 11:38

The author and finisher of our faith

- 38, Which the world was not worthy of: they wandered in wilderness, in mountains, in dens and caves of the earth.
- 39 And these all, through faith obtained good report, and received not the promise, God providing a better thing for us, that they without us, should not be made perfect.

CHAPTER 12

- HEREFORE let us also (seeing that we are compassed with so great a multitude of witnesses) lay away all that presseth down, and the sin that hangeth on, and let us run with patience, unto the battle that is set before us,
- 2 Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; which for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, and despised the shame, and is set down on the right hand of the throne of God.
- 3 Consider therefore how that he endured such speaking against himself, of sinners lest ye should be wearied and faint in your minds.
- 4 For ye have not yet resisted unto blood-shedding, striving against sin.
- 5 And you have forgotten the consolation which speaketh unto you as unto children: My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord, neither faint when thou art rebuked of him,
- 6 For whom the Lord loveth, him he chasteneth, yea and he scourgeth every son that he receiveth.
- 7 If ye endure chastening, God offereth himself unto you as unto sons; what son is that whom the father chasteneth not?
- 8 If ye be not under correction (whereof all are partakers) then are ye bastards, and not sons.
- 9 Moreover seeing we had fathers of our flesh which corrected us and we gave them reverence: should we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spiritual gifts, that we might live?
- 10 And they verily for a few days nurtured us after their own pleasure: but he learneth us unto that which is profitable, that we might receive of his holiness.

Congregation of the first born

Hebrew 12:23

- 11 No manner chastising for the present time seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it bringeth the quiet fruit of righteousness unto them which are therein excercised
- 12 Stretch forth therefore again the hands which were let down and the weak knees;
- 13 And see that ye have straight paths for your feet lest any lameness turn ye out of the way: yea let it rather be healed.
- 14 Embrace peace with all men, and holiness: without the which no man shall see the Lord.
- 15 And look to that no man be destitute of the grace of God, and that no root of bitterness spring up and trouble, and thereby many be defiled:
- 16 And that there be no fornicator or unclean person, as Esau, which for one breakfast sold his birthright.
- 17 Ye know how that afterward when he would have inherited the blessing, he was put by, and he found no means to come thereby again: no though he desired it with tears.
- 18 For ye are not come unto the mount that can be touched, and unto burning fire, nor yet to mist and darkness and tempest of weather
- 19 Neither unto the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words: which voice they that heard it wished away, that the communication should not anymore be spoken to them.
- 20 For they were not able to abide that which was spoken, If a beast had touched the mountain, it must have been stoned, or thrust through with a dart:
- 21 Even so terrible was the sight, which appeared. Moses said, I fear and quake.
- 22 But ye are come unto the mount Sion and to the city of the living God the celestial Jerusalem: and to an innumerable sight of angels
- 23 And unto the congregation of the first born sons which are written in heaven and to God the judge of all and to the spirits of just and perfect men

Hebrews 12:24

Let wedlock be had in honour

- 24 And to Jesus the mediator of the new testament, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better than the blood of Abel
- 25 See that ye despise not him that speaketh, For if they escaped not which refused him that spake on earth, much more shall we not escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven:
- 26 Whose voice then shook the earth: and now declareth saying: yet once more will I shake not the earth only, but also heaven.
- 27 No doubt the same that he saith, yet once more, signifieth the removing away of those things which are shaken, as of things which have ended their course: that the things which are not shaken may remain.
- 28 Wherfore if we receive a kingdom which is not moved we have grace, whereby we may serve God and please him with reverence and godly fear:
- 29 For our God is a consuming fire.

CHAPTER 13

- ET brotherly love continue.

 2 Be not forgetful to lodge strangers: for thereby have divers received angels into their houses unawares.
- 3 Remember them that are in bonds, even as though ye were bound with them, be mindful of them which are in adversity, as ye which are yet in your bodies.
- 4 Let wedlock be had in honor in all points and let the chamber be undefiled: for whorekeepers and adulterers God will judge.
- 5 Let your conversation be without covetousness and be content with that ye have already. for he verily said: I will not fail thee nor forsake thee:
- 6 That we may boldly say: the Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man doeth unto me.
- 7 Remember them which have the oversight of you, which

Suffer rebuke with him

Hebrews 13:20

have declared unto you the word of God: the end of whose conversation see that ye look upon, and follow their faith

- 8 Jesus Christ yesterday and today and the same continueth forever.
- 9 Be not carried about with divers and strange learning. For it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace and not with meats, which have not profited them that have had their pastime in them.
- 10 We have an altar whereof they may not eat which serve in the tabernacle.
- 11 For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the holy place by the high priest to purge sin are burnt without the tents.
- 12 Therefore Jesus to sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate.
- 13 Let us go forth therefore out of the tents and suffer rebuke with him.
- 14 For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come.
- 15 For by him offer we the sacrifice of praise always to God: that is to say the fruit of those lips which confess his name.
- 16 To do good and to distribute: forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.
- 17 Obey them that have the oversight of you, and submit yourselves to them, for they watch for your souls even as they that must give account: that they may do it with joy, and not with grief. for that is an unprofitable thing for you.
- 18 Pray for us: we have confidence because we have a good conscience, in all things and desire to live honestly.
- 19 I desire you therefore somewhat the more abundantly that ye so do, that I may be restored to you quickly.
- 20 The God of peace, that brought again from death our Lord

Hebrews 13:21

The great shepherd of the sheep

Jesus, the great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting testament,

- 21 Make you perfect in all good works to do his will, working in you that which is pleasant in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom be praise for ever, while the world endureth Amen.
- 22 I beseech you brethren suffer the words of exhortation: for we have written unto you in few words:
- 23 Know ye that brother Timothy, whom we have sent from us, with whom, (if he come shortly) I will see you.
- 24 Salute them that have the oversight of you, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you.
- 25 Grace be with you all. A-men

Unstable in all his ways

James 1:13

THE EPISTLE OF JAMES

- AMES the servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, sendeth greeting, to the twelve tribes which are scattered here and there.
- 2 My brethren, count it exceeding joy when ye fall into divers temptations;
- 3 For as much as ye know, how that the trying of your faith bringeth patience.
- 4 And let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and sound, lacking nothing.
- 5 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, which giveth to all men indifferently, and casteth no man in the teeth: and it shall be given him.
- 6 But let him ask in faith, and waver not. For he that doubteth is like the waves of the sea tossed of the wind and carried with violence.
- 7 Neither let that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord.
- 8 A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.
- 9 Let the brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted:
- 10 And the rich, in that he is made low: for even as the flower of the grass shall he vanish away.
- 11 The sun riseth with heat, and the grass is withered, and his flower falleth away, and the beauty of the fashion of it perisheth: even so shall the rich man perish, with his abundance.
- 12 Happy is the man that endureth in temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.
- 13 Let no man say when he is tempted, that he is tempted of

James 1:14

The perfect law of liberty

God: for God tempteth not unto evil, neither tempteth he any man:

- 14 But every man is tempted when he is drawn away and enticed, of his own concupiscence.
- 15 Then when lust hath conceived, she bringeth forth sin and sin: when it is finished, bringeth forth death.
- 16 Err not, my dear brethren.
- 17 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of light with whom is no variableness neither is he changed unto darkness
- 18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of life, that we should be the first fruits of his creatures.
- 19 Wherefore, dear brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, and slow to wrath:
- 20 For the wrath of man worketh not that which is righteous before God.
- 21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness all superfluity of maliciousness, and receive with meekness the word that is engrafted in you, which is able to save your souls.
- 22 And see that ye be doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your ownselves with sophistry
- 23 For if any hear the word, and do it not, he is like unto a man that beholdeth his bodily face in a glass:
- 24 For as soon as he hath looked on himself, he goeth his way, and forgetteth immediately what his fashion was.
- 25 But whose looketh in the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, (if he be not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work) the same shall be happy in his deed.
- 26 If any man among you seem devout and refrain not his tongue but deceive his own heart this man's devotion is in vain

Fulfill the royal law

James 2:12

27 Pure devotion and undefiled before God the Father is this, to visit the friendless and widows in their adversity, and to keep himself unspotted of the world.

CHAPTER 2

B RETHREN, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, in respect of persons.

- 2 If there come into your company a man with a golden ring, and in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment;
- 3 And ye have a respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him. Sit thou here in a good place; and say unto the poor, stand thou there, or sit thou here under my footstool:
- 4 Are ye not partial in yourselves, and have judged after evil thoughts?
- 5 Hearken, my dear beloved brethren. Hath not God chosen the poor of this world which are rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he promised to them that love him?
- 6 But ye have despised the poor. Are not the rich, they which oppresses you, and they which draw you before judges?
- 7 Do not they speak evil of that good name after which ye be named?
- 8 If ye fulfill the royal law according to the scripture, which saith. thou shalt love thine neighbor as thyself, ye do well.
- 9 But if ye regard one person more than another, ye commit sin, and are rebuked of the law as transgressors.
- 10 Whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet fail in one point, he is guilty in all.
- 11 For he that said, Thou shalt not commit adultery, said also: thou shalt not kill. Though thou do none adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art a transgressor of the law.
- 12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the

James 2:13

And the tongue is a fire

law of liberty.

- 13 For there shall be merciless judgment to him, that sheweth no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment:
- 14 What availeth it, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, when he hath no deeds? can faith save him?
- 15 If a brother or a sister be naked or destitute of daily food
- 16 And one of you say unto them: Depart in peace, God send you warmness and food; not withstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what helpeth it them?
- 17 Even so faith, if it have not deeds is dead in itself.
- 18 Yea and a man might say, Thou hast faith, and I havedeeds: shew me thy faith without thy deeds: and I will shew thee my faith by my deeds.
- 19 Believest thou that there is one God? thou doest well The devils also believe and tremble.
- 20 Wilt thou understand, O thou vain man that faith without deeds is dead?
- 21 Was not Abraham our father justified through deeds, when he offered Isaac his son upon the altar?
- 22 Thou seest how that faith wrought with his works, and through the deeds was the faith made perfect?
- 23 And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the friend of God.
- 24 Ye see then how that of deeds a man is justified, and not of faith only.
- 25 Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot, justified through works, when she received the messengers, and sent them out another way?
- 26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, even so faith without deeds is dead also.

Meekness coupled with wisdom

James 3:14

CHAPTER 3

Y brethren, be not every man a master, remembering how that we shall receive the more damnation:

- 2 For in many things we sin all. If a man sin not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able to tame all the body.
- 3 Behold, we put bits into the horses mouths, that they should obey us; and we turn about all the body.
- 4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the volition of the governor willeth.
- 5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold, how great a thing a little fire kindeleth.
- 6 And the tongue is fire, and a world of wickedness: so is the tongue set among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth a fire all that we have of nature; and is itself set a fire even of hell.
- 7 All the beasts of nature, and of birds, and of serpents, and things of the sea, are tamed and made meek of mankind.
- 8 But the tongue can no man tame; that is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison.
- 9 Therewith bless we God, the Father and therewith curses we men, which are made after the similitude of God.
- 10 Out of one mouth procedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren these things ought not so to be.
- 11 Doth a fountain send forth at one place sweet water and bitter Also?
- 12 Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? or a vine bear figs?
- 13 So can no fountain give both salt water and fresh also. If any man be wise and endued with learning among you let him shew the works of his good conversation in meekness that is coupled with wisdom.
- 14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts rejoice not, neither be liars against the truth.

James 4:15

God resisteth the proud

- 15 This wisdom descended not from above, but is earthy, and natural, and devilish.
- 16 For where envying and strife is, there is unstableness and all manner of evil works.
- 17 But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits without judging and without simulation:
- 18 yea and the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that maintain peace.

CHAPTER 4

- ROM whence cometh wars and fighting among you? Come they not hence, [even] of your Lusts that rein in your members?
- 2 Ye lust, and have not: Ye envy, and have indignation and cannot obtain: Ye fight and war and yet ye have not, because ye ask not.
- 3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, even to consume it upon your Lusts.
- 4 Ye adulterers and women that break matrimony; know ye not that the friendship with the world is enmity of God whosoever will be a friend of the world is made the enemy of God
- 5 Either do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in you lusteth to envy:
- 6 But giveth more grace. Wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble
- 7 Submit your selves to God. and resist the devil, and he will flee from you.
- 8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. cleanse your hands ye sinners, and purge your hearts, ye wavering minded.
- 9 Suffer afflictions, sorrow, ye and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness.
- 10 Cast down your selves before the Lord, and he shall lift you up.
- 11 Backbite not one another, brethren, He that backbiteth his

The Lord of Sabaoth

James 5:6

brother, and he that Judgeth his brother backbiteth the law: and judgeth the law: but and if thou judge the law, thou art not an observer of the law, but a judge.

- 12 There is one lawgiver, which is able to save and to destroy, who art thou that Judgest another man?
- 13 Go to now ye that say: today and tomorrow let us go into such a city and buy and sell and ⁸⁵win,
- 14 And ye cannot tell what shall happen tomorrow, For what thing is your life? It is even a vapor that appeareth for a little time, and then vanished away:
- 15 For that ye ought to say, if the Lord will, and if we live, let us do this, or that.
- 16 But now ye rejoice in your boastings: all such rejoicing is evil.
- 17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doth it not to him it is sin.

CHAPTER 5

G to now ye rich men Weep and howl on your wretchedness that shall come upon you.

- 2 Your riches are corrupted, your garments are moth eaten.
- 3 Your gold and your silver are cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together in your last days:
- 4 Behold the hire of the laborers which have reaped down your Fields, (which hire is of you kept back by fraud) cryeth: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.
- 5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and in wantonness; Ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.
- 6 Ye have condemned and have killed the just; and he hath not

-

 $^{^{\}rm 85}$ win –As a miner wins gold from the earth

James 5: 7 Let your yea be yea and your nay be nay

resisted you.

- 7 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience thereupon, until he receive (the early and the latter rain.)
- 8 Be ye also patient therefore, and settle your hearts: for the coming of the Lord
- 9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be damned: behold, the judge standeth before the door.
- 10 Take (my brethren) the prophets for an example of suffering adversity and of long patience, which spake in the name of the Lord.
- 11 Behold we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have known what end the Lord made, for the Lord is very pitiful and merciful.
- 12 But above all things my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by earth neither by any other oath. Let your yea be yea and your nay, nay; lest ye fall into hypocrisy.
- 13 If any of you be evil vexed, let him pray. If any of you be merry let him sing psalms.
- 14 If any be defeated among you, let him call for the elders of the congregation; and let them pray over him, and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord:
- 15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick. and the Lord shall raise him up; and and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him,
- 16 Knowledge your faults one to another, and pray one for another, efectual and fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.
- 17 Elijah was a man mortal even as we are, and he prayed in his prayer that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months.
- 18 And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the

Shall save a soul from death

James 5:20

earth brought forth her fruit.

- 19 Brethren if any of you err from the truth, and another convert him;
- 20 Let the same know, that he which converteth the sinner from going astray out of his way shall save a soul from death and shall hide a multitude of sins.

1 Peter 1:1

Preserved in heaven for you

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF SAINT PETER

ETER an Apostle of Jesus Christ to them that dwell here and there as strangers throughout Pontus, Galatia Cappadocia Asia and Bithynia

- 2 Elect by the foreknowledge of God the Father, through the sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ. Grace be with you and peace, be multiplied.
- 3 Blessed be God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which through his abundant mercy begat us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from death,
- 4 To enjoy an inheritance immortal and undefiled and that putrifieth not, reserved in heaven for you,
- 5 Which are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation, which salvation is prepared already to be shewed in the last time,
- 6 In the which time ye shall rejoice, though now for a season, if need require, ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations:
- 7 That your faith once tried, being much more precious than gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto laud, honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ:
- 8 Whom ye have not seen, and yet love him, in whom, even now though ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory:
- 9 Receiving the end of your faith the salvation of your souls.
- 10 Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched, which prophesied of the grace that should come unto you:
- 11 searching when or at what time the Spirit of Christ which was in them, should signify. which Spirit testified before, the passions that should come unto Christ and the glory that

A amb undefiled and without spot

1 Peter 1:24

should follow after:

- 12 unto which Prophets it was declared, that not unto themselves, but unto us, they should minister the things which are now shewed unto you of them, which by the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven, have preached unto you the things which the angels desire to behold.
- 13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your minds, be sober, and trust perfectly on the grace that is brought unto you, by the declaring of Jesus Christ;
- 14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selves unto your old lusts of ignorance:
- 15 But as he which called you is holy, even so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;
- 16 Because it is written. Be ye holy; for I am holy.
- 17 And if so be that ye call on the Father, which without respect of persons judgeth according to every mans work, see that ye pass the time of your pilgrimage here in fear:
- 18 For as ye know, how that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation which ye received by the traditions of the fathers,
- 19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb undefiled, and without spot,
- 20 Which was ordained before the world was made: but was declared in the last times for your sakes
- 21 Which by his means, have believed on God, that raised him from death, and glorified him, that your faith and hope might be in God.
- 22 And for as much as ye have purified your souls through the Spirit in obeying the truth for to love brotherly without feigning, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently:
- 23 For ye are born anew, not of mortal seed, but of immortal by the word of God which liveth and lasteth forever.
- 24 For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man is as the

1 Peter 2:25

To us which believe he is precious

flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower falleth away:

25 But the word of the Lord endureth forever. And this is the word, which by the gospel was preached among you.

CHAPTER 2

W HEREFORE lay aside all maliciousness, and all guile, and dissimulation, and envy, and all backbiting:

- 2 And as new born babes, desire that reasonable milk of the word, which is without corruption that ye may grow therein.
- 3 If so be that ye have tasted how pleasant the Lord is.
- 4 To whom ye come, as unto a living stone, disallowed of men but chosen of God and precious,
- 5 And ye as living stones are made a spiritual house and an holy priesthood, for to offer up spiritual sacrifice acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.
- 6 Wherefore it is contained in the scripture: behold I put in Sion an head corner stone, elect, and precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be ashamed.
- 7 Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which believe not the stone which the builders refused the same is made the head stone in the corner,
- 8 And a stone to stumble at, and a rock to offend them which stumble at the word, and believe not, that whereon they were set.
- 9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, and a peculiar people; that ye should shew the virtues of him that called you out of darkness into his marvelous light:
- 10 Which in time past were not a people, yet are now the people of God: which were not under mercy but now have obtained mercy.
- 11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which fight against the soul;
- 12 And see that ye have honest conversation among the Gentiles: that they which backbite you as evil doers may see

Hidden man of the heart

1 Peter 2:24

your good works, and praise God in the day of visitation.

- 13 Submit yourselves unto all manner ordinance of man for the
- Lords sake: whether it be unto the king as unto the chief head:
- 14 Or unto rulers, as unto them that are sent of him for the punishment of evil doers: but for the ⁸⁶laud of them that do well.
- 15 For so is the will of God, that ye put to silence the ignorance of the foolish men:
- 16 As free, and not as using your liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but even as the servants of God.
- 17 Honour all men. Love brotherly fellowship. Fear God and honour the king.
- 18 Servants obey your masters with all fear not only if they be good and courteous: but also though they be froward.
- 19 For it is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, and suffering wrongfully.
- 20 For what praise is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye take it patiently? but if, when ye do well ye suffer wrong and take it patiently then is there thanks with God.
- 21 For hereunto verily were ye called: for Christ also suffered for us leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps:
- 22 Which did no sin, neither was there guile found in his mouth:
- 23 Which when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not: but committed the cause to him that judgeth righteously
- 24 Which his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we should be delivered from sin, and should live in righteousness. by whose stripes ye were healed.

_

⁸⁶ laud that is praise

Peter 2:25

Be ready always to give an answer

25 For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the shepherd and bishop of your souls.

CHAPTER 3

IKEWISE let the wives be in subjection to their husbands that even they which believe not the word may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives:

- 2 While they behold your pure conversation coupled with fear.
- 3 Whose apparel is not with broided hair, and hanging on of gold, neither in putting on of of gorgeous apparel?
- 4 But let the hidden man of the heart be incorrupt with a meek and a quiet spirit, which spirit is before God a thing, that is much set by.
- 5 For after this manner in the old time did the holy women which trusted in God, attire themselves, and were obedient, to their husbands:
- 6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham and called him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well and be not afraid of every shadow.
- 7 Likewise ye men dwell with them according to knowledge giving honour unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel, and as unto them that are heirs also of the grace of life; that your prayers be not ⁸⁷let.
- 8 In conclusion be ye all of one mind, one suffer with another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous:
- 9 Not rendering evil for evil, neither rebuke for rebuke: but contrariwise blessing, remembering that ye are thereunto called, even that ye should be heirs of blessing.
- 10 If any man long after life, and loveth to see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil and his lips that they speak not guile:

_

⁸⁷ Let That is hindered

Judge the living and the dead

1 Peter 3:21

- 11 Let him 88 eschew evil and do good: let him seek peace. and 89 ensue it
- 12 For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord beholdeth them that do evil.
- 13 Moreover who is it that will harm you, if ye follow that which is good?
- 14 Notwithstanding happy are ye if ye suffer for righteousness sake. Yea, and fear not, though they seem terrible, unto you neither be troubled:
- 15 But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: [be] ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you and that with meekness and fear:
- 16 Having a good conscience that when they backbite you as evildoers they may be ashamed, for they have falsely accused your good conversation in Christ.
- 17 It is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well doing than for evil doing.
- 18 Forasmuch as Christ hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, and was killed as pertaining to the flesh: but was quickened in the Spirit:
- 19 In which Spirit he also went and preached unto the spirits that were in prison,
- 20 Which were in time past disobedient when the long suffering of God abode exceeding patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was a preparing wherein few (that is to say eight souls) were saved by water
- 21 Which signifiesh baptism that now saveth us, not the putting away of the filth of the flesh but in that a good conscience consenteth to God, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ

Q

⁸⁸ eschew That is to avoid

⁸⁹ ensue that is to pursue

1 Peter 3:22

Judgment must began at the house of God

22 Which is our right hand and is gone into heaven, angels, power, and might subdued unto him

CHAPTER 4

ORASMUCH as Christ has suffered for us in the flesh, arm your selves likewise with the same mind: for he which suffereth in the flesh hath ceased from sin:

- 2 That he henceforward should live that time as remaineth in the flesh: not after the lusts of men, but after the will of God.
- 3 For it is sufficient for us that we have spent the time that is past of the life after the will of the Gentiles walking in wantonness, lusts, drunkenness, in eating drinking and in abominable idolatry.
- 4 And it seemeth to them a strange thing that we run not also with them unto the same excess of riot, and therefore speak they evil of you:
- 5 Which shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.
- 6 For unto this purpose verily was the gospel preached unto the 90 [dead] that they should be condemned of men in the flesh, but should live before God in the Spirit.
- 7 The end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore discrete, and sober, that ye may be apt to prayers.
- 8 But above all things have fervent love among yourselves: for love covereth the multitude of sins.
- 9 Be harbourous one to another and that without grudging.
- 10 As every man hath received the gift, minister the same one to another, as good ministers of the manifold grace of God.
- 11 If any man speak, let him talk as though he spake the words of God; If any man minister, let him do it as of the ability

⁹⁰ Dead – Spiritually see John 5:25

Let him not be ashamed

1 Peter 45:2

which God ministereth unto him.

That God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion forever and while the world standeth. Amen.

- 12 Dearly, beloved, be not troubled in this ⁹¹heat, which now is come among you, to try you as though some strange thing had happened unto you:
- 13 But rejoice inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's passions that, when his glory appeareth, ye may be merry and glad.
- 14 If ye be railed upon for the name of Christ, happy are ye: for the spirit of glory and the Spirit of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of: but on your part he is glorified.
- 15 See that none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or an evildoer, or as a busybody in other men's matters.
- 16 If any man suffer as a Christian let him not be ashamed: but let him glorify God on his behalf.
- 17 For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God. if it first begins at us what shall the end be of them which believe not the gospel of God?
- 18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved: where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?
- 19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to him with well doing as unto a faithful creator

CHAPTER 5

THE elders which are among you I exhort, which am also an elder and a witness, of the afflictions of Christ and also a partaker, of the glory that shall be opened:

2 See that ye feed Christ's flock, which is among you taking the oversight of them not as though ye were compelled thereto but

-

⁹¹ Trial or trouble

1 Peter 5:3

When the chief Shepherd shall appear

willingly: not for the desire of filthy lucre but of a good mind.

- 3 Not as though ye were lords over their heritage: but that ye be examples to the flock.
- 4 And when the chief shepherd shall appear ye shall receive an incorruptible crown of glory.
- 5 Likewise ye younger submit your selves unto the elder. Submit your selves every man one to another knit yourselves together in lowliness of mind. for God resisteth the proud and giveth grace to the humble.
- 6 Submit yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God that he may exalt you when the time is come.
- 7 Cast all your care to him: for he careth for you
- 8 Be sober and watch for your adversary the devil as a roaring lion walketh about seeking whom he may devour:
- 9 Whom resist steadfast in the faith remembering that ye do but fulfil the same afflictions which are appointed to your brethren that are in the world.
- 10 The God of all grace which called you unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus shall his own self after ye have suffered a little affliction make you perfect: shall settle, strengthen, and establish you.
- 11 To him be glory and dominion forever and while the world endureth Amen.
- 12 By Silvanus a faithful brother unto you [as I suppose] have I written briefly exhorting and testifying how that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.
- 13 The companions of your election that are at Babylon saluteth you and Marcus my son
- 14 Greet ye one another with the kiss of love. Peace be with you all which are in Christ Jesus A-men

Like precious faith

2 Peter 1:12

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF SAINT PETER

Simon Peter a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them which have obtained like precious faith with us in the righteousness that cometh of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ:

- 2 Grace with you and peace be multiplied in the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,
- 3 According as his godly power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us by virtue and glory:
- 4 By the means where of are given unto us most great and excellent promises: that by these ye should be partakers of the godly nature, in that ye flee the corruption of worldly lust.
- 5 And hereunto, give all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge;
- 6 And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; to patience godliness;
- 7 In godliness brotherly kindness; to brotherly kindness love.
- 8 For if these things be in you, and are plenteous, they will make you that ye neither shall be idle nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.
- 9 But he that lacketh these things is blind, and gropeth for the way with his hand, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.
- 10 Wherefore, brethren, give the more diligence to make your calling and election sure. for if ye do such things ye shall never err:
- 11 Yea, and by this means an entering in shall be ministered unto you abundantly in to the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.
- 12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of such things, though that ye know them your selves, and be also established in the present truth.

2 Peter 1:13

P eter's departure is at hand

- 13 Notwithstanding I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in remembrance.
- 14 For as much as I am sure how that the time is at hand, that I must put off my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.
- 15 I will endeavor therefore that on every side, ye might have after my departing, wherewith to stir up the remembrance of these things.
- 16 For we followed not deceivable fables, when we opened unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but with our eyes, we saw his majesty:
- 17 Even then verily when he received of God the Father honour and glory, and when there came such a voice to him from excellent glory: This is my dear beloved Son, in whom I have delight.
- 18 This voice when it came from heaven we heard, being with him in the holy mount.
- 19 We have also a right sure word of prophesy, whereunto as unto a light that shineth in a dark place ye do well if ye take heed, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts:
- 20 So that ye first know this. that no prophesy in the scripture hath any private interpretation.
- 21 For the scripture came never by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost

CHAPTER 2

- HERE were false prophets among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, which privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought, them and bring upon themselves swift damnation.
- 2 And many shall follow their damnable ways; by which the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.
- 3 And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment is not far off, and their damnation sleepeth not.
- 4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them

They are cursed children

2 Peter 2:16

down into hell, and delivered them in chains of darkness, to be kept unto judgment.

- 5 Neither spared the old world, but saved Noah the preacher of righteousness, and brought in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;
- 6 Overthrew them and damned them and made of them an example unto all that after should live ungodly;
- 7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the unclean conversation of the wicked:
- 8 For he being righteous and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds.
- 9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the Godly out of temptations, and how to reserve the unjust unto the Day of Judgment to be punished:
- 10 Namely them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise the rulers. Presumptuous [are they and stubborn], and fear not to speak evil of them that are in authority.
- 11 When the angels, which are greater both in power and might, receive not of the Lord railing judgment against them.
- 12 But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of that they know not; and shall perish through their own destruction
- 13 And receive the reward of unrighteousness; they count it pleasure to live deliciously for a season. Spots they are and filthiness, living at pleasure and in deceivable ways feasting with you:
- 14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease to sin; beguiling unstable souls: hearts they have exercised with covetousness; they are cursed children
- 15 And have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, which loved the reward of unrighteousness;
- 16 But was rebuked of his iniquity. The tame, and dumb, beast

2 Peter 2:17

Walk after their own lusts

speaking with man's voice forbade the foolishness of the prophet.

- 17 These are wells without water, and clouds carried about of a tempest, to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.
- 18 For when they have spoken the swelling words of vanity, they beguile with wantonness, through the lusts of the flesh, them that were clean escaped: but now are wrapped in errors.
- 19 They promise them liberty and are themselves the bond servants of corruption: for of whomsoever a man is overcome unto the same is he in bondage
- 20 For if they after they have escaped from the filthiness of the the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are yet tangled again therein and overcome: then is the latter end worse with them than the beginning.
- 21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness than after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment given unto them.
- 22 It is happened unto them according to the true proverb: The dog is turned to his vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

CHAPTER 3

HIS is the second epistle, beloved, that I now write unto you: wherewith I stir up and warn your pure minds to call to remembrance:

- 2 The words, which were told before of the holy prophets, and also the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour:
- 3 This first understand that there shall come in the last days mockers which will walk after their own lusts
- 4 And say, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers died, all things continue in the same estate wherein they were at the beginning.
- 5 This they know not [and that willingly] how that heavens a

But grow in grace

2 Peter 3:15

great while ago were, and the earth that was in the water appeared up out of the water by the word of God:

- 6 By which things the world that then was, perished overflowed with the water,
- 7 But the heavens verily and earth which are now, are kept by the same word in store, and reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.
- 8 Dearly, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, how that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.
- 9 The Lord is not slack to fulfill his promise, as some men count slackness; but is patient to usward and would have no man lost, but would receive ⁹²all men to repentance.
- 10 Nevertheless the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in the which day the heavens shall perish with terrible noise, and the elements shall melt with heat, and the earth with the works that are therein shall be burned up.
- 11 If all these things shall perish, what manner persons ought ve to be in holy conversation and godliness:
- 12 Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, in which the heavens shall perish with fire and the elements shall be consumed with heat?
- 13 Nevertheless we, according to his promise look for a new heaven and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.
- 14 Wherefore, dearly, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things be diligent that ve may be found of him in peace, without spot and undefiled
- 15 And suppose that the long suffering of the Lord is salvation even as our dearly, beloved, brother Paul, according to the wisdom given unto him wrote to you;

 $^{^{92}}$ Peter writes the second Epistle to the same people as he did the first, The Elect He is not willing that any of the Us-ward, the Elect to whom he was writing, to perish.

2 Peter 3:16

Seeing ye know it beforehand

16 Yea, almost in every epistle, speaking of such things; things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable pervert as they do other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

17 Ye therefore beloved seeing ye know it beforehand, beware lest ye be also, plucked away with the error of the wicked, and fall from your own steadfastness

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To whom be glory both now and forever. A-men'

That your joy may be full

1 John 2:2

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF SAINT JOHN

HAT which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon and our hands have handled of the word of life

- 2 For the life appeared, and we have seen it, and bear witness and shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and appeared unto us.
- 3 That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you that ye may have fellowship with us: and that our fellowship may be with the Father, and his Son Jesus Christ.
- 4 And this write we unto you, that your joy may be full.
- 5 And this is the tiding which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.
- 6 If we say that we have fellowship with him and yet walk in darkness we lie and do not the truth:
- 7 But and if we walk in the light even as he is in light then have we fellowship with him, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.
- 8 If we say that we have no sin we deceive ourselves and truth is not in us.
- 9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.
- 10 If we say we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

CHAPTER 2

Y Little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. If any man sin, yet, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ which is righteous

2 And it is he that obtained grace for our sins not for our sins only: but also for the sins of all the world.

1 John 2:3

The true light now shineth

- 3 And hereby we know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.
- 4 He that saith, I know him and keepeth not his commandments is a liar and, the ⁹³verity is not in him.
- 5 Whosoever keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: and thereby know we, that we are in him.
- 6 He that saith he abideth in him ought to walk, even as he walked.
- 7 Brethren, I write no new commandment unto you, but that old commandment which ye heard from the beginning.
- 8 The old commandment is the word which ye heard from the beginning. Again a new commandment I write unto you, a thing that is true in him, and also in you: for the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth.
- 9 He that saith how that he is in the light, and yet hateth his brother is in darkness, even until this time.
- 10 He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of evil in him.
- 11 He that hateth his brother is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and cannot tell whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.
- 12 Babes I write unto you, how that, your sins are forgiven you for his name's sake.
- 13 I write unto you, fathers how that ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you young men, how that ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, how that ye have known the Father.
- 14 I write unto you, fathers how that ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men how that ye are strong: and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome that wicked.

-

⁹³ Verity that is truth

They went out from us

1.John 2:28

- 15 See that ye love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world the love of the Father is not in him.
- 16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of goods is not of the Father, but of the world.
- 17 And the world vanisheth away, and the lust thereof: but he that fulfilleth the will of God abideth ever.
- 18 Little children, it is the last time and as ye have heard how that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists come already; whereby we know that it is the last time.
- 19 They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but that fortuned that it might appear that they were not, of us. 20 And ye have an unction of the Holy Ghost and ye know all things.
- 21 I have not written unto you as though ye did not know the truth, but as though ye knew, it and know also that no lie cometh of truth.
- 22 Who is a liar: but he that denieth that Jesus is Christ? The same is antichrist that denieth the Father and the Son.
- 23 Whosoever denieth the Son the same hath not the Father.
- 24 Let that therefore abide in you, that same which ye heard from the beginning. If that which ye heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.
- 25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternal life.
- 26 This have I written unto you concerning them that deceive you.
- 27 And the anointing which ye have received of him dwelleth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the anointing teacheth you all things, and is true, and is no lie, and as it taught you, even so abide therein.
- 28 And now little children abide in him; that when he shall

1 John 2:29

Because we love the bretrhen

appear we may be bold, and not be made ashamed of him at his coming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, know also that he which followeth righteousness is born of him.

CHAPTER 3

BEHOLD what love the Father hath shewed on us, that we should be called the sons of God. For this cause the world knoweth you not, because it knoweth him not.

- 2 Dearly, beloved, now are we the sons of God: and yet it doth not appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.
- 3 And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.
- 4 Whosoever committeth sin committeth also unrighteousness: for sin is unrighteousness.
- 5 And ye know that he appeared to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.
- 6 As many as abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither hath known him.
- 7 Babes let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous.
- 8 He that committeth sin is of the devil: for the devil sinneth since the beginning. for this purpose appeared the Son of God to loose the works of the devil.
- 9 Whosoever is born of God sinneth not: for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.
- 10 In this are the children of God known, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.
- 11 For this is the tidings that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another:
- 12 Not as Cain, which was of the wicked one and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works works were evil, and his brother's good.
- 13 Marvel not, my brethren, though the world hate you.

This is that spirit of antichrist

1 John 4:2

- 14 We know that we are translated from death unto life because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death.
- 15 Whosoever hateth his brother is a manslayer: And ye know that no manslayer hath eternal life abiding in him.
- 16 Hereby perceive we love: that he gave his life for us: and therefore ought we also to give our lives for the brethren.
- 17 Whosoever hath this world's goods, and seeth his brother have need: and shutteth up his compassion from him how dwelleth the love of God in him?
- 18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but with deed and in verity:
- 19 For thereby we know that we are of the ⁹⁴verity and can assure our hearts before him.
- 20 But if our heart condemned us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things.
- 21 Beloved if our hearts condemn us not then have we trust toward God:
- 22 And whatsoever we ask, we shall receive of him: because we keep his commandments and do those things which are pleasing in his sight.
- 23 And this is his commandment, that we believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another as he gave us commandment.
- 24 And he that keepeth his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him: and thereby we know that there abideth in us, of the Spirit which he hath given us.

CHAPTER 4

EA beloved, believe not every spirit: but prove the spirits: whether they are of God or not for many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby shall ye know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that

-

⁹⁴ verity, that is the truth

1 John 4:3

Perfect love casteth out all fear

confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God:

- 3 And every spirit which confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, of whom ye have heard how that he should come; and even now already is he in the world.
- 4 Ye are of God little children, and have overcome them: for greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world:
- 5 They are of the world: and therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.
- 6 We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us: he that is not of God heareth not us. hereby know we the spirit of verity, and the spirit of error.
- 7 Beloved, let us love one another: for love cometh of God; and everyone that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God.
- 8 He that loveth not knoweth not God: for God is love.
- 9 In this appeared the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.
- 10 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to make propitiation for our sins.
- 11 Beloved if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.
- 12 No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfect in us.
- 13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.
- 14 And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.
- 15 Whosoever confesseth that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.
- 16 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.
- 17 Herein is the love perfect in us, that we should have trust in the day of judgment: for as he is, even so are we in this world.

The world is altogether set on wickedness

1 John 5:11

- 18 There is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out all fear; for fear hath painfulness. He that feareth is not perfect in love.
- 19 We love him, for he first loved us.
- 20 If a man say, I love God, and yet hate his brother, he is a liar: for how can he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, love God whom he hath not seen?
- 21 And this commandment have we of him, that he who loveth God should love his brother also.

CHAPTER 5

WHOSOEVER believeth that Jesus is Christ is born of God: and everyone that loveth him which begat loveth him also which was begotten of him.

- 2 In this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.
- 3 This is the love of God that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous
- 4 For all that is born of God overcometh the world. and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.
- 5 Who is it that overcometh the world, but he which believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?
- 6 This is he that came by water and blood, Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.
- 7 For there are three which bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.
- 8 For there are three that bear record in earth, the spirit, and water, and blood: and these three are one.
- 9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which he testified of his Son.
- 10 He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believed not the record that God gave of his Son
- 11 And this is that record, how that God hath given unto us

1 John 5:12

We know that he heareth us

eternal life; and this life. is in his Son.

- 12 He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son Hath not life.
- 13 These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know how that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.
- 14 And this is the trust that we have in him, that if we ask anything according to his will he heareth us:
- 15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we shall have the petitions that we desired of him.
- 16 If any man see his brother sin a sin that is not unto death, let him ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death for which I do not say that a man should pray for it.
- 17 All unrighteousness is sin and there is sin not unto death.
- 18 We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.
- 19 We know that we are of God and that the world is altogether set on wickedness.
- 20 We know that the Son of God is come and hath given us a mind to know him which is true, and we are in him that is true, through his Son Jesus Christ. This same is very God, and eternal life.
- 21 Little children, keep yourselves from images. A-men'

Which I love in the truth

2 John vs. 13

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF SAINT JOHN

THE elder to the elect lady and her children, which I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all that have known the truth;

- 2 For the truths sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be in us forever.
- 3 Grace be with you, mercy and peace, from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.
- 4 I rejoiced greatly that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment of the Father.
- 5 And now beseech I thee, lady not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that same which we had from the beginning, that we should love one another.
- 6 And this is love that we should walk after his commandments. This commandment That as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.
- 7 For many deceivers are entered into the world, which confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.
- 8 Look on yourselves, that we lose not that we have wrought, but that we may have a full reward.
- 9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that endureth in the doctrine of Christ, hath both the Father and the Son.
- 10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive not into thy house, neither bid him God speed.
- 11 For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds.
- 12 I had many things to write unto you, nevertheless I would not write with paper and ink: but I trust to come unto you, and speak with you mouth, to mouth that our joy may be full.
- 13 The sons of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen'

3 John vs. 13

Even as thy soul prospereth

THE THIRD EPISTLE OF SAINT JOHN

THE Elder unto the beloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth.

- 2 Beloved, I wish in all things that thou prosper, and fairest well, even as thy soul prospereth.
- 3 I rejoiced greatly, when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, how thou walketh in truth.
- 4 I have no greater joy than to hear how that my Sons walk in verity.
- 5 Beloved, doest thou faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers;
- 6 Which bare witness of thy love before all the congregation: which brethren if thou bringest forward on their journey as it becometh God, thou shalt do well:
- 7 Because that for his names sake they went forth, and took nothing of the Gentiles.
- 8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we also might be helpers to the truth.
- 9 I wrote unto the congregation: but Diotrephes, which loveth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not.
- 10 Wherefore, if I come, I will declare his deeds which he doeth, prating on us with malicious words: neither is therewith content. Not only he himself receiveth not the brethren: but also he forbiddeth them that would, and thrusteth them out of the congregation.
- 11 Beloved follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth well is of God: but he that doeth evil seeth not God.
- 12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth: yea and we ourselves also bear record; and ye know that our record is true.
- 13 I have many things to write: but will not with ink and pen write more unto thee

We shall speak mouth to mouth

3 John Vs 14

14 For I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak mouth to mouth. Peace be to thee our friends salute thee. Greet the lovers by name A-men'

Jude vs. 1

The Lord rebuke thee

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT JUDE

- JUDE the servant of Jesus Christ, the brother of James. To them which are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called.
- 2 Mercy unto you, and peace, and love be multiplied.
- 3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the ⁹⁵common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, to exhort you that ye should continually labour in the faith which was once given unto the saints.
- 4 For there are certain craftily crept in, of which it was written afore time unto such judgment, they are ungodly, and turn the grace of our God unto wantonness, and deny the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.
- 5 My mind is therefore to put you in remembrance, forasmuch as ye once knew this, how that the Lord, after that he had delivered the people out of Egypt, afterward destroyed them which believed not.
- 6 The angels also which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day:
- 7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities about them (which in like manner defiled themselves with fornication, and followed strange flesh) are set forth for an example, and suffer the vengeance of eternal fire.
- 8 Likewise these dreamers defile the flesh, despise rulers, and speak evil of them that are in authority.
- 9 Yet Michael the archangel, when he strove against the devil and disputed about the body of Moses, durst not give railing sentence, but said, the Lord rebuke thee.
- 10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not: and what things they know naturally, as beasts which are without reason, in those things they corrupt themselves.

_

⁹⁵ The same the world over

To give judgmernt against all men

Jude vs.24

- 11 Woe be unto them! for they have followed the way of Cain and are utterly given to the error of Balaam for lucers' sake and perished in the treason of Core.
- 12 These are spots within your feast of kindness, feasting together with you, without fear feeding themselves. Clouds they are without water carried about of winds; and trees without fruit at gathering time twice dead and plucked up by the roots.
- 13 They are the raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; they are wandering stars, to whom is reserved the mist of darkness for ever
- 14 Enoch the seventh from Adam prophesied before of such saying: Behold the Lord shall come with ten thousands of his saints
- 15 To give judgment against all men, and to rebuke all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and all their cruel speaking which ungodly sinners spoken against him.
- 16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; whose mouth speak proud things, they have men in great reverence because of advantage.
- 17 But ye beloved, remember the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ;
- 18 How that they told you that there should be beguilers in the last time, which should walk after their own ungodly lusts.
- 19 These are makers of sects, fleshly having no spirit.
- 20 But ye dearly, beloved, edify yourselves on your most holy faith praying in the Holy Ghost
- 21 And keep your selves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.
- 22 And have compassion, on some separating them:
- 23 And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; and hate the filthy vesture of the flesh.
- 24 Unto him that is able to keep you that ye fall not and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with joy,

Jude vs .25

Which only is wise

25 That is to say to God our Saviour, which only is wise be glory, and majesty, dominion and power now and forever A-men

He is Alpha and Omega

Revelation 1:10

THE REVELATION AS GIVEN TO SAINT JOHN

HE Revelation of Jesus Christ which God gave unto him for to shew unto his servants thinges which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and shewed by his angel unto his servant John

- 2, Which bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ and of all things that he saw.
- 3 Happy is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of the prophecy, and keep those things that are written therein. for the time is at hand.
- 4 John to the seven congregations in Asia: Grace be unto you and peace from him which is and which was and which is to come and from the seven. spirits that are present before his throne;
- 5 And from Jesus Christ, which is a faithful witness and first begotten of the dead: and Lord over the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from sins in his own blood
- 6 And made us ⁹⁶kings and Priests unto God his Father be glory and dominion for ever more. Amen.
- 7 Behold he cometh with clouds; and all eyes shall see him: and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail Even so, Amen.
- 8 I am Alpha and Omega the beginning and the ending saith the Lord almighty which is and which was and which is to come.
- 9 I John your brother and companion In tribulation and in the kingdom and patience which is in Jesus Christ was in the isle of Patmos, for the word of God and for the witnessing of Jesus Christ.
- 10 I was in the Spirit on the Lords day, and heard behind me a

_

⁹⁶ These are yet on earh

Revelation 1:11

Messages to congregations

great voice, as it had been of a trumpet,

- 11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: That thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the congregations which are in Asia, unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and Laodicea.
- 12 And I turned back to see the voice that spake to me. And when I was turned: I saw seven golden candlesticks;
- 13 And in the midst of the candlesticks one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a linen garment, down to the ground, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.
- 14 His head and his hairs were white as wool and white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire;
- 15 And his feet like unto brass, as though they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters.
- 16 And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two edged sword: and his face shone even as the sun shineth in his strength.
- 17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet even as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me: fear not;
- 18 I am the first and the last: behold I am alive for ever more, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.
- 19 Write therefore the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be fulfilled hereafter;
- 20 And the mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand and the seven. golden candlesticks. The seven stares are the messengers of the seven congregations: and the seven. candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven congregations.

CHAPTER 2

NTO the messenger of the congregation of Ephesus write; These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, and walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks.

2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience and how

To Smyrna, and Pergamos

Revelation 2:13

thou canst not forbear them which are evil: and examinest them which say they are apostles, and are not: and hast found them liars:

- 3 And didst wash thyself. And hast patience: and for my names sake hast labored, and hast not fainted.
- 4 Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, for thou hast left thy first love.
- 5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee shortly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.
- 6 But this thou hast, because thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitanes, which deeds I also hate.
- 7 Let him that hath ears, hear what the Spirit saith unto the congregations; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life which is in the midst of the paradise of God.
- 8 And unto the angel of the congregation of Smyrna write: These things saith he that is first and the last, which was dead and is alive.
- 9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, but thou art rich: And I know the blasphemy of them which call themselves Jews, and are not: but are the congregation of Satan.
- 10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold the Devil shall cast some of you into prison, to tempt you, and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be faithful unto the death, and I will give thee a crown of life.
- 11 Let him that hath ears hear what the Spirit saith to the congregations: He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.
- 12 And to the messenger of the congregation in Pergamos write: This saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges;
- 13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou keepest my name and hast not denied

Revelation 2:14

Hold fast till I come

my faith, And in my days Antipas was my faithful witness, of which was slain among you where Satan dwelleth.

- 14 But I have a few things against thee, that thou hast there they that maintain the doctrine of Balaam, which taught Balac to put occasion of sin before the children of Israel, that they should eat of meat dedicated unto idols, and to commit fornication.
- 15 Even so hast thou them that maintain the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.
- 16 But be converted, or else I will come unto thee shortly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth
- 17 Let him that hath ears hear, what the Spirit saith unto the congregations: To him that overcometh will I give to eat manna that is hidden, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receive thit.
- 18 And unto the messenger of the congregation of Thyatira write: This saith the Son of God, which hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, whose feet are like brass;
- 19 I know thy works, and thy love, service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy deeds; which are more at the last than at the first.
- 20 Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which called herself a prophetess, to teach and to deceive my servants to make them commit fornication, and to eat meats offered up unto idols.
- 21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not.
- 22 Behold I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her into great adversity, except they turn from their deeds.
- 23 And I will kill her children with death. and all the congregations shall know that I am he that searches the reins and hearts: and I will give unto everyone of you according unto your works.

To Philadelpha

Revelation 3:7

- 24 Unto you I say, and unto others of them of Thyatira, as many as have not this learning, and which have not known the deepness of Satan as they say, I will put upon you none other burden:
- 25 But that which ye have already hold fast till I come
- 26 And whosoever overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over nations:
- 27 And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and as the vessels of a potter shall he break them to shivers: even as I received of my Father.
- 28 And I will give him the morning star.
- 29 Let him that hath ears, hear what the Spirit saith to the congregations.

CHAPTER 3

A ND write unto the messenger of the congregation of Sardis. This saith he that hath the Spirit of God and the seven stars. I know thy works thou hast a name that thou livest and thou art dead.

- 2 Be awake and strengthen the things which remain that are ready to die. for I have not found thy works perfect before God.
- 3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If thou shalt not watch I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.
- 4 Thou hast a few names in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.
- 5 He that overcometh shall be clothed in white array, and I will not put out his name out of the book of life and I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.
- 6 Let him that hath ears, hear what the Spirit saith unto the congregations.
- 7 And write unto the tidings bringer of the congregation of

Revelation 3:8

To Laodicea

Philadelphia: this saith he that is holy, he that is true, which hath the key of David, which openeth, and no man shutteth and no man openeth.

- 8 I know thy works. behold I have set before thee an open door and no man can shut it, for thou hast a little strength and hast kept my sayings: and hast not denied my name.
- 9 Behold I make them of the congregation of Satan which call themselves Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them that they shall come and worship before thy feet, and shall know that I love thee.
- 10 Because thou hast kept the words of my patience, therefore I will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which will come upon all the world to tempt them that dwell upon the earth.
- 11 Behold I come shortly. hold that which thou hast, that no man take away thy crown
- 12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out. And I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem; which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.
- 13 Let him that hath an ear, hear what the Spirit saith unto the congregations.
- 14And unto the messenger of the congregation which is in Laodicea write: This saith [Amen] the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God.
- 15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot, I would thou were cold or hot.
- 16 So then because thou art between both, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth.
- 17 Because thou sayest, thou art rich and increased with goods, and hast need of nothing; and knowest not how thou art wretched, and miserable, poor, blind, and naked.
- 18 I council thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire that thou mayest be rich and white raiment that thou mayest be clothed,

Come up hither

Revelation 4:6

that thy filthy nakedness do not appear: and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve that thou mayest see.

- 19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: Be fervent therefore and repent.
- 20 ⁹⁷Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in unto him and will sup with him, and he with me.
- 21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.
- 22 Let him that hath ears, hear what the Spirit saith unto the congregations.

CHAPTER 4

A FTER this I looked, and behold a door was open in heaven: and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be fulfilled 98 hereafter

- $\boldsymbol{2}$ And immediately I was in the spirit: and behold a seat was put in heaven and one sat on the seat.
- 3 And he that sat was to look upon like unto a jasper stone and a sardine stone, and there was a rainbow about the seat. in sight like to an emerald.
- 4 And about the seat were four and twenty seats. And upon the seats four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and had on their heads crowns of gold.
- 5 And out of the seat proceeded lightnings, and thunderings, and voices: and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the seat, which are the seven Spirits of God.
- 6 And before the seat there was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and roundabout the seat, were

.

⁹⁷ He is knocking at the door of a congregation, not the depraved heart of a sinner

⁹⁸ Hereafter- The congregation age is ended at this time

Revelation 4:7

Who is worthy to open the book

four beasts full of eyes before and behind.

- 7 And the first beast was like a lion, the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.
- 8 And the four beasts had each one of them six. wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: And they had no rest not day or night saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.
- 9 And when those beasts gave glory and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne and worshipped him which liveth forever and ever:
- 10 The four and twenty elders fell down before him that sat on the throne, and worshiped him, that liveth forever and cast their crowns before the throne saying:
- 11 Thou art worthy, Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things and for thy will's sake, they are, and were created.

CHAPTER 5

A ND I saw in the right hand of him that sat in the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven. seals.

- 2 And I saw a strong angel which cried with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?
- 3 And no man in heaven nor in earth neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.
- 4 And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look therein.
- 5 And one of the elders saith unto me, weep not: behold a lion being of the tribe of Juda the root of David hath obtained to open the book, and to loose the seven seals therof.
- 6 And I beheld and lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as though he had been killed which had seven horns, and seven eyes, which are the spirits of God sent into all the world.

The Lamb opens the book

Revelation 6:2

- 7 And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.
- 8 And when he had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having harps, and golden vials full of odors, which are the prayers of saints.
- ⁹⁹And they sung a new song, saying, thou art worthy to take the book and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast killed and hast redeemed us by thy blood out of all kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;
- 10 And hast made us unto our God ¹⁰⁰kings and priests, and we shall reign on the earth.
- 11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels about the throne and about the beasts and the elders: and I heard thousands of thousands
- 12 Saying with a loud voice: Worthy is the Lamb that was killed to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour and glory and blessing.
- 13 And all creatures which are in heaven and on the earth, and under the earth, and in the sea, and all that are in them, heard saying: blessing, honour, glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne and unto the Lamb forever more.
- 14 And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four and twenty elders fell upon their faces and worshipped him that liveth for ever more

CHAPTER 6

AND I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard one of the four beasts say, as it were the noise of thunder, come and see

² And I saw and behold there was a white horse and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and for to overcome.

⁹⁹ Verses 9&10 picture the Raptured saint around God's throne in heaven All the saints of the congregation age are now in heaven

Revelation 6:3

Antichrist appears on five horses

- 3 And when he opened the second seal. I heard the second beast say, come and see.
- 4 And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.
- 5 And when he opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, come and see. And I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.
- 6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, a measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny: and oil and wine see thou hurt not.
- 7 And when he opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, come and see.
- 8 And I looked and behold a green horse and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed after him. and power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword and with hunger and with death that cometh of vermin of the earth.
- 9 And when he opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were killed for the word of God, and for the testimony which they had,
- 10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long tarriest thou Lord holy and true, to judge and to avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?
- 11 And long white garments were given unto everyone of them; And it was said unto them, that they should rest for a little season, until the number of their fellow servants and brethren, and of them that should be killed as they were, were fulfilled.
- 12 And I beheld when he opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun was as black as sack cloth made of hair, and the moon waxed even as blood:
- 13 And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth from her, her figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

Jewish tribulation preachers are sealed

Revelation 7:7

- 14 And heaven vanished away as a scroll when it is rolled together; and all mountains and isles were moved out of their places.
- 15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman and every free man hid themselves in dens and in rocks of the hills.
- 16 And said to the hills and rocks: fall on us, and hide us from the presence of him that sitteth on the seat, and from the wrath of the Lamb:
- 17 For the great day of his wrath is come; and who can endure it.

CHAPTER 7

And after that I saw four angels stand on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the winds should not blow on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree.

- 2 And I saw another angel ascending from the ¹⁰¹rising of the sun, which had the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, [to whom power was given to hurt the earth and the sea]
- 3 Saying: Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.
- 4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed and there were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel.
- 5 Of the tribe of Juda were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.
- 6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nepthalim were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manassas were sealed twelve thousand.
- 7 Of the tribe of Simeom were sealed twelve thousand. Of the

.

¹⁰¹ Rising of the sun The East

Revelation 7:8

Which came out of great tribulation

tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.

- 8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.
- 9 After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number) of all nations, and ¹⁰²people, and tongues, stood before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed with long white garments, and palms in their hands
- 10 And cried with a loud voice saying, Salvation be ascribed to him that sitteth upon the seat, of our God and unto the Lamb,
- 11 And all the Angels stood in the compass of the seat, and of the elders and of the four beasts and fell before the seat on their faces, and worshiped God,
- 12 Saying, Amen, Blessing, and glory, wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for evermore Amen.
- 13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, what are these which are arrayed in long white garments and whence came they?
- 14 And I said unto him, Lord thou wottest. And he said unto me, these are they which came out of great tribulation, and made their garments large and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.
- 15 Therefore are they in the presence of the seat of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth in the seat will dwell among them.
- 16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst anymore; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.
- 17 For the Lamb which is in the midst of the seat shall feed them, and shall lead them unto fountains of living waters and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

_

 $^{^{102}}$ Jews from every Nation and tongue and kindred as in Acts 2:5-11

To fountains of living water

Revelation 8:12

CHAPTER 8

A ND when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour.

- 2 And I saw the seven angels standing before God; and to them were given seven trumpets.
- 3 And another angel came and stood before the altar, having a golden censer; and much odors, was given unto him that he should offer of the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne.
- 4 And the smoke of the odors, which came of the prayers of all saints, ascended up before God out of the angels hand.
- 5 And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth and voices were made, and thunderings, and lightnings and earthquake.
- 6 And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to blow.
- 7 The first angel blew and there was made hail and fire which were mingled with blood and they were cast into earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.
- 8 And the second angel blew, and as it were a great mountain: burning with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea turned to blood:
- 9 And the third part of the creatures which had life, died and the third part of ships were destroyed.
- 10 And the third angel blew, and there fell a great star from heaven burning as it were a lamp, and it fell into the third part of the rivers, and into fountains of waters;
- 11 And the name of the star is called wormwood: And the third part was turned to wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.
- 12 And the fourth angel blew, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon and the third part of stars; so that the third part of them was darkened, and the day was smitten that the third part of it, should not shine, and

Revelation 8:13

Death shall flee from them

likewise the night.

13 And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice: Woe, woe, to the inhabiters of the earth because of the voices to come of the trumpets of the three angels, which were yet to blow.

CHAPTER 9

And I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit.

- 2 And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace: and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit.
- 3 And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power.
- 4 And it should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.
- 5 And to them was commanded that they should not kill them, but that they should be vexed five months: and their pain was as the pain that cometh of a scorpion, when he hath stung a man.
- 6 And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.
- 7 And the similitude of the locusts was like unto horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it were crowns like unto gold, and their faces were as it had been the faces of men.
- 8 And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions.
- 9 And they had habergeons as it were habergeons of iron. And the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots when many horses run together to battle.
- 10 And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings

Third part of men were killed

Revelation 9:21

in their tails. and their power was to hurt men five months.

- 11 And they had a king over them which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue Apollyon.
- 12 One woe is past and behold two woes come after this.
- 13 And the sixth angel blew, and I heard a voice from the four corners of the golden altar which is before God,
- 14 Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpets, Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.
- 15 And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared for an hour, for a day, for a month, and for a year for to slay the third part of men.
- 16 And the number of horsemen of war were twenty times ten thousand: And I heard the number of them.
- 17 And thus I saw the horses in a vision, and them that sat on them having fiery habergeons the colour of a jacinth, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths went forth fire and smoke and brimstone,
- 18 And of these four was the third part of men killed: that is to say of fire, smoke, and brimstone, which proceeded out of the mouths of them:
- 19 For their power was in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they did hurt.
- 20 And the remnant of the men, which were not killed by these plagues repented not of the deeds of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and images of gold, and silver. and brass, and stone, and of wood, which neither can see nor can hear neither go about.
- 21 Also they repented not of their murders, and of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

Revelation 10:1

There should be time no longer

CHAPTER 10

A ND I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven cothed with a cloud: and the rainbow upon his head and and his face as it were the sun, and his feet as it were pillars of fire;

- 2 And he had in his hand a little book open: and he put his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth,
- 3 And cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: And when he had cried, seven thunders spake their voices.
- 4 And when the seven thunders had spoken their voices, I was about to write. And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, seal up those things which the seven thunders spake, and write them not.
- 5 And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven,
- 6 And sware by him that liveth for ever more, which created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which therein are, that there should be time no longer:
- 7 but in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to blow: even the mystery of God shall be finished as he preached by his servants the prophets.
- 8 And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea and upon the earth.
- 9 And I went unto the angel, and said to him, give me the little book. And he said unto me, take it and eat it up, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth as sweet as honey.
- 10 and I took the little book out of his hand, and ate it up, and it was in my mouth as sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.
- 11 And he said unto me, thou must prophesy again among the peoples, and nations, and tongues, and to many kings.

Two witnesses appear

Revelation 11:11

CHAPTER 11

Angel stood, saying, unto me: Rise and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and, them that worship therein.

- 2 And the court which is within the temple cast out, and measure it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two months.
- 3 And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sack cloth.
- 4 These are two olive trees and two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth
- 5 And if any man will hurt them, fire shall proceed out of their mouth, and consume their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, this wise must be killed.
- 6 These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophesying: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all manner plagues, as often as they will.
- 7 And when they have finished their testimony, the beast that came out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.
- 8 And their dead bodies shall lie in the streets of the great city which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where our Lord was crucified.
- 9 And they of the people and kindreds and tongues and they of the nations shall see their bodies three days and an half, and shall not suffer their bodies to be put in graves.
- 10 And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and be glad and shall send gifts one to another for these two prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth.
- 11 And after three days and an half the spirit of life from God

Revelation 11:12

The ark is seen in heaveen

entered into them. and they stood up upon their feet; and great fear came upon them which saw them.

- 12 And they heard a great voice from heaven saying unto them. come up hither. And they ascended up into heaven in a cloud; and their enemies saw them.
- 13 And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain names of men, seven thousand. and the remnant were feared and gave glory to God of heaven.
- 14 The second woe is past and behold the third woe will come anon
- 15 And the seventh angel blew; and there were made great voices in heaven, saying: the kingdoms of this world are our Lords, and his Christ; and he shall reign for ever more.
- 16 And the four and twenty elders, which sit before God on their thrones, fell upon their faces, and worshiped God
- 17 Saying, we give thee thanks, Lord God almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; for thou hast received thy great might and hast reigned.
- 18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets and saints and to them that fear thy name, small and great and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.
- 19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament; and there followed lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and earthquake, and great hail.

CHAPTER 12

AND there appeared a great wonder in heaven; A woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet and upon her head a crown of twelve stars.

2 And she was with child and cried, travailing in birth, and pained ready to be delivered.

Is cast down which accused them

Revelation 12:13

- 3 And there appeared another wonder in heaven for behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.
- 4 And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it were born.
- 5 And she brought forth a man child which should rule all nations with a rod of iron and her Son was taken up unto God and to his throne
- 6 And the woman fled into the wilderness where she had a place prepared of God that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days.
- 7 And there was great battle in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels
- 8 And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven.
- 9 And the great dragon that old serpent called the Devil and Satan was cast out, which deceaveth all the world: and he was cast into the earth, and his angels were cast out also.
- 10 And I heard a loud voice saying: in heaven, Now is made salvation and strength, and the kingdom of our God and the power of his Christ: for he is cast down which accused them before God day and night.
- 11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony, and they loved not their lives unto the death.
- 12 Therefore rejoice ye heavens and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabiters of the earth and of the sea: for the devil is come down unto you, which hath great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.
- 13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.

Revelation 12:14

Whose names are not written

- 14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle that she might fly into the wilderness into her place where she is nourished for a time, times, and half a time, from the presence of the serpent.
- 15 And the dragon cast out of his mouth water after the woman, as it had been a river because she should have been caught of the flood.
- 16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the river which the dragon cast out of his mouth.
- 17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went and made war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Him and of Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER 13

- A ND I stood on the sand of the sea, and I saw a beast rise out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.
- 2 And the beast which I saw was like a cat of the mountain, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion, the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.
- 3 and I saw one of his heads as it was wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered at the heast
- 4 And they worshiped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshiped the beast, saying, who is like unto the beast? who is able to war with him?
- 5 And there was a mouth given unto him that spake great things and blasphemies, and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months
- 6 And he opened his mouth unto blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

Six hundred three score and six

Revelation 13:18

- 7 And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them, and power was given him over all kindred tongues and nations:
- 8 And all that dwell upon the earth worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb which was slain from the beginning of the world.
- 9 If any man have an ear, let him hear.
- 10 He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with a sword. must be killed with a sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.
- 11 And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth and he had two horns like a Lamb and he spake, as did the dragon.
- 12 And he did all that the first beast could do in his presence, and he caused the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.
- 13 And he did great wonders, so that he made fire come down from heaven in the sight of men,
- 14 And deceived them that dwelt on the earth by the means of those signs which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwelt on the earth, that they should make an image unto the beast, which had the wound of a sword and did live.
- 15 And he had power to give a spirit unto the image of the beast, and that the image of the beast should speak, and should cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed.
- 16 And he made all, both small and great, rich and poor. free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads.
- 17 And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.
- 18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath wit count the number of the beast. For it is the number of a man and his number is six hundred threescore and six.

Revelation 14:1

Was found no guile

CHAPTER 14

AND I looked, and lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.

- 2 And I heard a voice from heaven as the sound of many waters and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:
- 3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.
- 4 These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from men, being the first fruits unto God and to the Lamb.
- 5 And in their mouths was found no guile: for they are without spot before the throne of God.
- 6 And I saw an angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that sit and dwell on the earth, and to all nations, kindreds, and tongues, and people,
- 7 Saying with a loud voice: Fear God, and give honour to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and fountains of waters.
- 8 And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen that great city, for she made all nations drink of the wine of her fornication.
- 9 And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice: If any man worship the beast and his image and receive his mark in his forehead or on his hand
- 10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured in the cup of his wrath; and he shall be punished in fire and brimstone before the holy angels, and before the Lamb.
- 11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up evermore:

The corn of the earth is ripe

Revelation 15:2

and they have no rest day nor night which worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the print of his name.

- 12 Here is the patience of saints. here are they that keep the commandments and the faith of Jesus
- 13 And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which hereafter die in the Lord even so saith the Spirit: that they may rest from their labours; and their works shall follow them.
- 14 And I looked and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sitting like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.
- 15 And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle and reap: for the time is come to reap; for the corn of the earth is ripe.
- 16 And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.
- 17 And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, having also a sharp sickle.
- 18 And another angel came out from the altar which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, and said: thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the earth for her grapes are ripe.
- 19 And the angel thrust in his sickle on the earth, and cut down the grapes of the vineyard of the earth: and cast them into the great winepress of the wrath of God
- 20 And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

CHAPTER 15

A ND I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is fulfilled the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a glassy sea mingled with fire and them that had that gotten victory of the beast, and of his image, and

Revelation 15:3

Wrath poured upon the earth

of his mark, and of the number of his name, stood on the glassy sea, having the harps of God

- 3 And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvelous are thy works, Lord God Almighty, just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints.
- 4 Who shall not fear thee O Lord and glorify thy name? for [thou only] art holy and all nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgments are made manifest.
- 5 And after that I looked and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of testimony in heaven was opened,
- 6 And the seven angels came out of the temple, which had the seven plagues, clothed in pure and bright linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles.
- 7 And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels seven golden vials full of the smoke of the glory of God and of his power
- 8 And the temple was full of the smoke of the glory of God, and of his power and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

CHAPTER 16

AND I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, go your ways, pour out your vials of the wrath upon the earth.

- 2 And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and a grievous sore upon the men
- 3 And the second angel shed out his vial upon the sea and it turned as it were into the blood of a dead man: and every living thing died in the sea
- 4 And the third angel shed out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters and they turned to blood.
- 5 And I heard an angel say: Lord which art and wast thou art righteous and holy because thou hast given such judgments

Seven angele pour out vials of wrath

Revelation 16:18

- 6 for they shed out the blood of saints and prophets and therefore hast thou given them blood to drink: for they are worthy.
- 7 And I heard another out of the alter say: even so Lord God almighty true and righteous are thy judgments.
- 8 And the fourth angel poured out his vial on the sun and power was given unto him to vex men with heat of fire.
- 9 And the men raged in great heat and spake evil of the name of God which had power over those plagues and they repented not to give him glory.
- 10 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast and his kingdom waxed dark and they gnawed their tongues for sorrow
- 11 and blasphemed the God of heaven for sorrow and pain of their sores and repented not of their deeds.
- 12 And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates and the water dried up that the ways of the kings of the east should be prepared.
- 13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon and out of the mouth of the beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet.
- 14 For they are the spirits of devils working miracles to go out unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world to gather them to the battle of that great day of God almighty.
- 15 Behold I come as a thief. Happy is he that watcheth and keepeth his garments lest he be found naked and men see his filthiness.
- 16 And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.
- 17 And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air. and there came a voice out of heaven from the throne saying, it is done.
- 18 And there followed voices, thunderings, and lightings and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were

Revelation 16:19

Jugement of the great whore

upon the earth so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

- 20 Every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.
- 21 And there fell upon the men a great hail out of heaven, as it had been talents: and the men blasphemed God because of the plague

CHAPTER 17

AND there came one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying, unto me: come I will shew thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters:

- 2 With whom kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth are drunken with the wine of her fornication.
- 3 And he carried me a way in the spirit into the wilderness:And I saw a woman sit upon a rose coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy which had ten heads and seven horns
- 4 And the woman was arrayed in purple and rose-colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, and had a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication:
- 5 And in her forehead was a name written MYSTERY BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF WHOREDOM AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.
- 6 And I saw the wife drunk with the blood of saints and with the blood of the witnesses of Jesus: And when I saw her I wondered with great marvel.
- 7 And the angel said unto me: wherefore marvelest thou? I will

I set being a queen

Revelation 17:18

shew thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that beareth her, which hath seven heads and ten horns.

8 The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and shall go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names are not

written in the book of life from the beginning of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not.

- 9 And here is a mind that hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sitteth:
- 10 They are also seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; when he cometh, he must continue a short space.
- 11 And the beast that was, and is not, is even the eighth, and is one of the seven, and shall go into destruction
- 12 And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings which have received no kingdom as yet but shall receive power as kings at one hour with the beast.
- 13 These have one mind and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.
- 14 These shall fight with the Lamb and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords and King of kings: and they that are on his side are called, and chosen, and faithful.
- 15 And he said unto me: the waters which thou sawest where the whore sitteth are people and folk and nations and tongues.
- 16 And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast are they that shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.
- 17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to do with one consent, for to give their kingdom unto the beast until the words of God be fulfilled.

18 and the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

Revelation 18:1

Great riches are come to naught

CHAPTER 18

And after that I saw another angel come from heaven, having great power and the earth was lighted with his brightness.

- 2 And he cried mightily with a strong, voice saying, Great Babylon is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of all fowl spirits, and a cage of all unclean and hateful birds
- 3 For all nations have drunken of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. And the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and her merchants are waxed rich of the abundance of her pleasures.
- 4 And I heard another voice from heaven say: come away fron her my people that ye be not be partakers in her sins that ye ye receive not of her plagues
- 5 For her sins are gone up to heaven, and God hath remembered her wickedness
- 6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and give her double according to her works. and pour in double to her in the same cup which she filled unto you.
- 7 And as much as she glorified herself, and lived wantonly, pour ye in so much for her: of punishment and sorrow for she said in her heart: I sit being a queen, and am no widow and shall see no sorrow.
- 8 Therefore shall her plagues come at one day, death and sorrow, and hunger, and she shall be burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God which judgeth her.
- 9 And the kings of the earth, shall beweep her and wail over her which have committed fornication with her and have lived wantonly with her when they shall see the smoke of her burning,
- 10 And shall stand a far off for fear of her punishment saying: Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city for in one hour her judgment is come

His name is called the word of God

Revelation 18:22

- 11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and wail in themselves, for no man will buy their ware any more:
- 12 The ware of gold, and silver, and precious stones, neither of pearls and fine linen and purple and scarlet and all thine wood and all manner vessels of ivory and all manner vessels of most precious wood and of brass and of iron
- 13 And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men.
- 14 And the apples that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and had in price are departed from thee and thou shalt find them no more.
- 15 The merchants of these things, which were waxed rich by her, shall stand a far off from her for fear of the punishment, of her weeping and wailing,
- 16 And saying: Alas, alas that great city, that was clothed in raynes, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls:
- 17 For at one hour so great riches is come to naught. And every ship governor, and all they that occupied ships, and shipmen, which work in the sea stood a far off,
- 18 And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, what city is like unto this great city?
- 19 And they cast dust on their heads and cried weeping and wailing, and said, Alas, alas that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by the reason of her costliness for in one hour is she made desolate.
- 20 Rejoice over her thou heaven and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath given your judgment on her.
- 21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone and cast it into the sea saying, with such violence shall that great city Babylon be cast down and shall be found no more.
- 22 And the voice of harpers and musicians and of pipers and trumpeters' shall be heard no more in thee: and no craftsman

Revelation 18:23

The supper of the great God

of whatsoever craft he be shall be found any more in thee. and the sound of a mill shall be heard no more in thee

23 And the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth, and with thine enchantment were deceived all nations.

24 and in her was found the blood of the prophets, and of the saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

CHAPTER 19

A ND after that I heard the voice of much people in heaven saying, Alleluia. Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, be ascribed to the Lord our God

- 2 For true and righteous are his judgments: for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants of her hand.
- 3 And again they said: Alleluia: and her smoke rose up for evermore.
- 4 And the four and twenty elders and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne saying, Amen; Alleluia;
- 5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, praise our Lord God all ye that are his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.
- 6 And I heard the voice of much people even as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of strong thunderings saying: Alleluia for God omnipotent reigneth.
- 7 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.
- 8 And to her was granted that she should be arrayed with pure and goodly raynes for the fine raynes is the righteousness of saints.
- 9 And he said unto me, write, Happy are they, which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he said unto me:

King of Kings Lord of Lords

Revelation 19:20

these are the true sayings of God.

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, see thou do it not, for I am thy fellow servant, and one of thy brethren and of them that have the testimony of Jesus.

worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophesy.

- 11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was faithful and true, and in righteousness did judge and make battle.
- 12 His eyes were as a flame of fire: and on his head were many crowns: and he had a name written that no man knew but himself.
- 13 And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood and his name is called the word of God.
- 14 And the warriors that were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed with fine rayne, white and clean:
- 15 And out of his mouth went out a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the heathen. And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.
- 16 And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.
- 17 And I saw an angel stand in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God;
- 18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and of high captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all free men, and bond men, and of small and great.
- 19 And I saw the beast and the kings of the earth and their warriors gathered together to make battle against him that sat on the horse and against his soldiers.
- 20 And the beast was taken, and with him that false prophet

Revelation 19:21

Come see the bride, the Lamb's wife

that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast into a lake of fire burning with brimstone:

21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fouls were filled with their flesh.

CHAPTER 20

A ND I saw an angel come down from heaven having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand

- 2 And he took the dragon that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan and he bound him a thousand years:
- 3 And cast him into the bottomless pit and he bound him, and set a seal on him, that he should deceive the people no more, till the thousand years were fulfilled:and after that he must be loosed for a little season.
- 4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: And I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had taken his mark upon their foreheads, or on their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years:
- 5 But the other of the dead men lived not again until the thousand, years were finished. This is that first resurrection.
- 6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection. for on such shall the second death have no power, for they shall be the priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.
- 7 And when the thousand years are expired Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,
- 8 And shall go out to deceive the people which are in the four quarters of the earth Gog and Magog to gather them together to battle whose number is as the sand of the sea:
- 9 And they went up on the plain of the earth, and compassed

Having the brightness of God

Revelation 21:4

the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: And fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them.

- 10 And the Devil that deceived them was cast into a lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever more
- 11 And I saw a great white throne and him that sat on it, from whose face fled away both the earth and heaven and their place was no more found.
- 12 And I saw the dead, both great, and small stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged of those things which were written in the books, according to their deeds:
- 13 And the sea gave up her dead which were in her: and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to his deeds.
- 14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is that second death.
- 15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAPTER 21

A ND I saw a new heaven and a new earth for the first heaven and the first earth were vanished away; and there was no more sea.

- 2 And I John saw that holy city, new Jerusalem, come down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride garnished for her husband.
- 3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, behold the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.
- 4 And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there

Revelation 21:5

Was the wood of life

shall be no more death neither sorrow nor crying neither shall there be any more pain for the old things are passed away.

- 5 And he that sat upon the seat said behold I make all things new. And he said unto me: write for these words are true and faithful.
- 6 And he said unto me: it is done. I am Alpha and Omega the beginning and the end. I will give to him that is athirst of the well of the water of life freely.
- 7 He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.
- 8 But the fearful and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.
- 9 And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, saying: come hither I will shew thee the bride, the lambs wife.
- 10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God
- 11 Having the brightness of God: and her shining was like unto a stone most precious even jasper clear as crystal.
- 12 And had walls great and high and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of Israel
- 13 On the east part three gates; and on the north side three gates; and towards the south three gates; and from the west three gates;
- 14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the Lamb's twelve apostles.
- 15 And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, withal and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof

The Lamb was the light of it

Revelation 21:26

- 16 And the city was built four square, and the length was as large as the breadth: of it and he measured the city with the reed twelve thousand furlongs and the length and the breadth and the height of it were equal.
- 17 And he measured the wall thereof. an hundred and forty and four cubits, the measure that the angel had was after the measure that man useth.
- 18 And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass
- 19 And the foundations of the wall of the city was garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second sapphire; the third a chalcedony; the fourth an emerald;
- 20 The fifth sardonyx; the sixth sardius; the seventh chrysolite; the eighth beryl; the ninth a topaz; the tenth a chrysoprasus; the eleventh a jacinth; the twelfth an amethyst.
- 21 The twelve gates were twelve pearls; every gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as though shining glass.
- 22 And there was no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it
- 23 And the city hath no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to lighten it: for the brightness of God did light it: and the Lamb was the light of it.
- 24 And the people which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth shall bring their glory unto it.
- 25 And the gates of it are not shut by day: for there shall be no night there.
- 26 And there shall enter into it none unclean thing: neither whatsoever worketh abomination: or maketh lies: but they only which are written in the lambs book of life.

Revelation 22:1

I am thy fellow servant

CHAPTER 22

And the shewed me a pure river of water of life clear as crystal: proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.

- 2 In the midst of the street of it and of either side of the river was the wood of life: which bare twelve manner of fruits: and gave fruit every month: and the leaves of the wood served to heal the people. withal
- 3 And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and the Lamb shall be in it: and his servants shall serve him:
- 4 And they shall see his face and his name shall be in their foreheads.
- 5 And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun: for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for evermore.
- 6 And he said unto me: these sayings are faithful and true: And the Lord God of saints and prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be fulfilled.
- 7 Behold, I come shortly. Happy is he that keepeth the saying of the prophesy of this book.
- 8 I am John which saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things.
- 9 And he said unto me: see thou do it not, for I am thy fellowservant and the fellowservant of thy brethren the prophets
- 10 And he said unto me: seal not the sayings of prophesy of this book. For the time is at hand.
- 11 He that doeth evil; let him do evil still: and he which is filthy; let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous; let him be more righteous: and he that is holy; let him be more holy.

Even so come Lord Jesus

Revelation 22:20

- 12 And behold I come shortly and my reward with me to give every man according as his deeds shall be
- 13 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.
- 14 Blessed are they that do his commandments, that their power may be in the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city
- 15 For without shall be dogs, and enchanters, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth or maketh lies
- 16 I Jesus sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the congregations. I am the root and the generation of David, and the bright and morning star.
- 17 And the Spirit and the bride say, come. And let him that heareth say, also come. And let him that is athirst come. And let whosoever will, take of the water of life freely.
- 18 I testify to every man that heareth the words of the words of prophecy of this book: God shall add unto him plagues that are written in this book
- 19 And if any man shall ¹⁰³minish of the words of the book of this prophesy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from, those things which are written in this book.
- 20 He which testifyeth these things saith: be it, I come quickly, Amen Even so come Lord Jesus.

 103 This did King James, and those whom he demanded , who did willingly minish our beloved KJV Bible

THE CONCORDANCE of The Tyndale New testment

ABIDE ABIDETH	
there a till ye go thence	Matt 10:1
constrayned him saying: a with us for today I must a at thy house b in me and and I in you	Luke 24:29
	Luke 19:5
	John 25:4
b in my love	John 15:10
Now a faith, hope	1 Cor 13:13
I will a awhile: or else winter	1 Cor 16:6
ABLE	
able of these stones to raise	Matt 3:9
Believe ye that I am a	Matt.9:28
be not a to kill the soul	Matt 10:28
a to separate us	Rom 8:39
He is a to keep	2 Tim1:12
who shall be a to endure	Rev 6:17
ABOMINATION	
the a that betokens	Matt 24:15
he a that betokens desolation	Mark 13:14
who shall be a to endure	Rev 6:17
full of a and filthiness	Rev 17:4
worketh A or maketh	Rev 21:26
ABSTAIN	
a themselves from filthiness	Acts 15:20
cannot abstain, let them marry	1 Cor 7:9
ye should a from fornication	1 Thess 4:3
a from all suspicious	1 Thess 5:22
commanding to a from meats	1 Tim 4:3
a from fleshly lusts	1 Pet 2:11

ABUNDANT ABUNDANTLY	
a of rain descended	Matt 7:25
a of the heart	Matt 12:34
and he shall have a	Matt 13:12
cast in of their a	
ABUNDANT ABUNDANTLY CONT.	
cast in of their aMark 12:44	
For of the a of the heart	Luke 6:45
in the a of things	Luke 12:15
have it more a	John 10:10
And they wept all	Acts 20:27
a wisdom knowledge of God	Rom 12:33
a of the revelation	
exceeding a above	
And they wept all a	
a wisdom knowledge of God	
a of the revelation	
exceeding a above	
ABOVE	
exceeding a above	
The disciple is not a his Lord	
or yet the servant a his Lord	
He from heaven is a all	
1Except given thee from a	
and a all names that are named	
the brightness of the sun	Acts 26:13
to be tempted a your strength	1 Cor 10:13
will not rejoice a measure	
Christ a fourteen years ago	Cor 12:2
a all things of the congregation	
A all, take to you the shield of faith	_
gave him a name a all names	-
but a a servant	
not from above but is earthy	

ACCEPT ACCEPTED	
a all things have fervent love	1 Peter 4:8
preach the a year of the Lord	
that are accepted before him	
no prophet is a	
and worketh righteousness, is a	
ACCEPT ACCEPTED CONT.	
A that which is pleasing	Eph 5:10
cast in of their aMark 12:44	
a things most excellent	Phil 1:10
holy, and acceptable unto God	. Rom 12:1
a, behold, now is the a time	.2 Cor 6:2
and perfect will of God	. Rom 12:2
Holy, a unto God	.Rom 12:1
may be a of the saints	
or that is good and a	
offer up spiritual sacrifice a	
ACCOUNT	
they shall give a at the day	Matt12:36
take a of his servants	
a of thy stewardship	Luke 16:2
shall give a I	
that must give a	.Heb 13:17
Which shall give a to him	
ACCUSE ACCUSED	
Because they might a him	Matt 12:10
then he was a of the chief priests	
That I will <i>a</i>	
let them a one another	
wherefore they a him	
whereof we <i>a</i> him	
That falsely <i>a</i> 2	
not false a	

ACCORDING	
<i>a</i> to the time	Matt 3:16
a to your faith	
reward every man a to his deeds	Matt 16:27
a as he had ever done	Mark 15:8
a as Moses commanded for	Luke 5:14
neither did a to his will	Luke 12:47
ACCORDING CONT.	
reward every man a to his deeds	Rom 2:6
a with the mouth is made unto	Rom 10:10
ACKNOWLEDGE	
will I a also before my Father	
a your faults one to another	James 5:16
ADMONISH	
able also to a	
Lord and a you	
a him as a brother	2 Thess 3:15
ADMONITION	
the Spirit of a	Rom 8:15
Written for our a	a1 Cor 10:11
a of the Lord	Eph 6:4
after the first and the second a	_
ADOPTION	
The Spirit of <i>a</i>	Rom 8:15
waiting for the a	
To whom pertaineth the a	Rom 9:4
ADORNED	
a for her husband	Rev 21:2

ADVANTAGE VANTAGE	
I might have required with v	Luke 19:23
or what a circumcision	Rom 3:1
is to me life and death is to me a	Phil 1:21
that were a unto me, I counted loss	Phil 3:7
men in great reverence because of a	Jude :20
ADVERSARY	
agree with thine a	Matt 5:25
thou goest with thine a	Luke 12:13
Avenge me of mine a	Luke 18:3
ADVERSITY	
there are many a	1Cor 16:9
your a the devil	1 Pet 5:8
out of all his a	Acts 7:10
which were in a	Tim 5:10
And chose rather to suffer a	
widows in their a	.James 1:27
ADVOCATE	
An a with the Father	1 John 2:1
AFAR	
Peter followed him a off	Matt 26:58
beholding him a off	
you which were a off	-
seen them a off	Heb 11:13
AFFECTION	
Be of like a	
Inward a more abundant toward you	
Set your a on things	
with so pure <i>a</i>	Phil 2:20

AFFECTION CONT.

So was our a toward you	1Thess 1:8
AGREE	
A with thine adversary quickly	Matt 5:25
two of you shall a	Matt 18:19
he a with the laborers for a penny	Matt 20:2
their witness a not together	Mark 14:56
the new a not with the old	Luke 5:27
why have ye a together t	Acts 5:9
And to him they <i>a</i>	Acts 5:40
When they a not among themselves	Acts 28:24
that it be a unto the faith	Rom 12:6
AIR	
birds of the a come	Matt 13:32
fowls of the a came and devouredMark 4:4	
The Lord in the <i>a</i>	Thess 4:17
but speak in the a	1 Cor 14:9
ALIVE	
dead, and is a again	Luke 15:24
But a unto God	Rom. 6:11
we which are a	I Thess. 4:15
I am a for evermore	Rev. 1:18
ALMIGHTY	
there are many a	1 Cor 16:9
saith the Lord a	2 Cor 6:18
Is to come the <i>a</i>	Rev. 1:8
holy Lord God a	Rev. 4:8
O Lord God a .	Rev. 11:17

ALMS	
there are many a	1Cor 16:9
Take heed to you're a	Matt.6:1
therefore give thou thine a	
give a that of	Luke 11:41
gave much a	Acts 10:2
ALWAYS	
there are many a	1Cor 16:9
I am with you a	Matt.28: 20
Me ye shall not have a	Mark 14:7
The poor ye shall a have	John 12:8
Rejoice in the Lord a	Phil 4:4
AMBASSADOR	
there are many a	1Cor 16:9
Send an <i>a</i>	Luke 14:32
ambassador and high priest	Heb 3:1
AMEN	
and the glory, forever. A	Matt 6:13
miracles that followed. A	Mark 16:20
praising and glorifying $\operatorname{God} A$	Luke 24:53
which is blessed forever. A	
God over all blessed for ever A	Rom 9:5
To him be glory for ever A	Rom 12:36
God of peace be with you. A	Rom 15:33
unlearned say a at thy	I Cor 14:16
This saith a	Rev 3:14
AMEND AMENDMENT	
they a at the preaching of Jonas	Matt 12:42
and felt none a at all	
the hour when he began to a	John 5:52
help to a him in the spirit of	
to improve to a	

ANGEL	
are as the a which	Mark 12:25
There appeared an <i>a</i>	Luke 22:43
<i>a</i> went down	John 5:4
divers have received a	Heb.13:2
a desire to behold	1 Pet. 1:12
ANGER ANGRY	
a with his brother	
Be ye a but sin not	Eph. 4:26
by a foolish nation, I will a you	Rom 10:19
is not provoked to a	
anger, wrath, fierceness	Col 3:8
ANNOINTED	
hath a me to preach	Luke 4:18
is by interpretation, a	John 1:41
Jesus made clay and a mine eyes	
<i>a</i> Jesus' feet	
and a them with ointment	Luke 7:38
a many that were sick	Mark 6:13
ANOINT	
When thou fastest a	Matt 6:17
to a my body	Mark 14:8
that they might come and a him	Mark 16:1
didst not a mine head with oil	Luke 7:46
pray over him, and <i>a</i> him with oil	James 5:14
A DDE A D	
APPEAR	N/1044 22-20
a righteous before menmust all a before the	
also a with him	
by the a of our Seviour	

APPEAR CONT.	
for him shall he a	Heb. 9:28
APT	
there are many a	1Cor 16:9
looketh back is a for the. kingdom of God	Luke 10:63
appareled, hospitable, a to teach 1	
unto all men, and a to teach	
<i>a</i> to prayer	
ARRAY ARRAYED	
Women that they a themselves	1 Tim 2:9
a himself in royal apparela	Acts 12:21
shall be clothed in white a	Rev 3:5
ARCHANGEL	
the voice of the <i>a</i>	1 Thess.4:16
Michael the a	Jude 9
ARISE	
a and take the child his mothe	Matt 2:13
a and take the child and his mother	Matt 2:20
a, and take up thy bed	Mark 2:11
I will a and go to my father	Luke 15:18
ARMOUR	
The a of light	Rom.13:12
a of righteousness	2 Cor.6:7
The <i>a</i> of God	Eph 6:11
ASCEND ASCENDED	
there are many a	1Cor 16:9
And Jesus a to Jerusalem	
Joseph also a from Galilee	
and a up into the tree	

ASCEND ASCENDED CONT.	
God a and descending upon the Son	John 1:51
Son of man a up	
am not yet a to my Father	
I a unto my Father	
who shall <i>a</i> into heaven	
ASHAMED	
not a of the gospel	Rom. 1:16
be not <i>a</i> of the	2 Tim.1:8
needeth not be a	2 Tim.2:15
not a to be called	Heb. 11:16
let him not be a	1 Pet.4:16
ASK	
a and it shall be given	Matt. 7:7
a what you will	John 15:7
let him a of God	James 1:5
because ye a not	James 4:2
every man that a you	1 Pet. 3:15
if we a anything	1 John 5:14
ASLEEP	
with waves and he was a	Matt 8:24
and found them a	Matt 26:40
he was in the stern <i>a</i>	Mark 4:38
and found them a again	Mark 14:40
as they sailed he fell a	
he had thus spoken, he fell a	Acts 7:60
many are fallen a	1 Cor. 15:6
them which are fallen a	.1 Thess 4:13
s in Jesus will God bring	.1Thess 4:14.
AUTHOR	
God is not the a of confusion	1 Cor.14:33
The a and finishe of our faith	

AUTHORITY	
The a and finishe of our faith	Heb.12:2
wise will tell you by what a I do	
Neither tell I you by what a I do	
exercise a over them	
all that are in a	
rebuke with all a	Titus 2:15
power and great a	
by what a who gave thee this a	
AVENGE	
A me of mine	Luke 18:3
shall not God a his own	Luke 18:7
he will a them and that quickly	Luke 18:8
he defended him and a him that was	Acts 7:24
beloved a not yourselves	
beloved a not yourselves	
to a our blood on them	
hath a the blood of his servants	
AVOID AVOIDED	
Jesus unto him.A. Satan	Matt 4:10
Howbeit it cannot be a	Matt 18:7
<i>a</i> profane and vain	1Tim.6:20
Lusts of youth a	2 Tim 3:22
Jesus a with his disciples	Mark 3:7
it can not be a but that offences	Luke 17:1
contrary to doctrine learned and a then	n Rom 16:173
Nevertheless to a fornication	1 Cor 7:2
and a profane vanities of voices	1 Tim 6:20
Lusts of youth a	2 Tim 3:22
A foolish questions	Titus 3:9
AWAKE	
Therefore a and remember	
<i>a</i> out of sleep	Rom. 13:11

AWAKE CONT.	
a truly out of sleep	1 Cor.15:34
a thou that sleepest	
Be a and strengthen	_
AWAY	
minded to put her a secretly	Matt 1:20
Jesus led a of the spirit	
Jesus saith unto him, a Satan	Matt 4:10
whosoever put a his wife	Matt 5:31
at the law and take a thy coat	Matt 5:40
and sent him a forthwith	Mark 2:43
that lay a all that presseth down	Heb 12:1
В	
BABES	
and hast opened them unto b	Matt 11:5
the mouth of b	Matt. 21:16
hast opened them to the b	bLuke 10:21
as it were unto b in Christ	1 Cor 3:1
as new born b desire that sincere milk	1 Peter 2:2
BAPTISM	
b that I am baptized with	
The <i>b</i> of John	
b of repentance	Mark1:4
with the b of John	Luke 7:29
I have a <i>b</i> to be	Luke 12:50
buried with him by b	Rom.6:4
one faith one b	
Buriewd with him in b	Col. 2:12
Of the doctrine of b	Heb.6:2
BAPTIZE-BAPTIZED	
I b you in water in token	Matt. 3:11
I ought to be b of you.	
believeth and is b	

BAPTIZE-BAPTIZED	
I b with Water	Iohn 1.26
Repent, and be B.	
b in the name	
what will let me to be b	
we which were b	
all b to make one body	
b have put on Christ	
b have put on Christ	Gai 3:2/
BARREN	
Elisabeth was b	Luke 1:7
though she was called b	Luke 1:36
happy are the b and the wombs	Luke 23:29
rejoice, thou b that bearest no children	Gal 4:27
BARE	
and b our sicknesses	Matt 8:17
b twelve manner of fruits	Rev 22:2
clothed in linen upon the b	
Elisabeth shall b thee a son	
shalt b a son, and thu shall call his name Je	
And all b him witness	
they that b him stood still	Luke 7:14
B no wallet, neither scrip,shoe	
Happy is the womb that b thee	
BATTLE	
Goeth to make b	Luke 14:31
run with patience, unto the b	
horses prepared unto b	
great b in heaven	
to the h of that great day of God	

BEAR	
b not his cross	Luke 14:27
I am one that b witness	John 8:18
also shall b witness	John 15:27
b the frailness	Rom 15:1
b ye one another's	Gal 6:2
For I b in my body	Gal 6:17
and b record	John 5:8
BEAST	
fought with b	Cor 5:32
as natural brute b	2 Pet 2:12
And the first b was like a lion	Rev 5:7
the second b like a calf	Rev 5:7
the third b had a face as a man	Rev 5:7
the fourth b was like a flying eagle	Rev 5:7
those b gave glory and honour	Rev 5:9
And the four b said, Amen	. Rev 5:14
the b that came out of the bottomless pit	Rev 11:7
And the four b had each	Rev 5:8
I saw a b rise out of the sea	. Rev 13:1
the b which I saw was like a cat	Rev 13:2
all the world wondered at the b	Rev13:3
dragon which gave power unto the b	Rev 13:4
and they worshiped the b	Rev 13:5
who is like unto the <i>b</i>	. Rev 13:5
I beheld another b	Rev 13:11
did all that the first b could do	.Rev 13:12
the first b whose deadly wound	Rev 13:12
make an image unto the b	Rev 13:14
life unto the image of the b	Rev 13:15

BEAUTIFUL	
appear, b outward	Matt 23:27
Which is called <i>b</i>	Acts 3:2
the B gate of the temple	Acts 3:10
How b are the feet	Rom 10:15
BEGINNING	
is worse than the <i>b</i>	Matt 12:45
$m{b}$ made them man and woman	Matt 19:4
from the <i>b</i> it was not so	Matt 19:8
give them their hire, \boldsymbol{b} at the last	Matt 20:8
these are the <i>b</i> of sorrows	Matt 24:8
as was not from the b of the world	Matt 24:21
In the b was the word	John 1:1
was in the b with God	John 1:2
the b set forth good wine	John 2:10
This b of miracles did Jesus in Cana	
The b and the end	Rev 21:16
BEGAT BEGOTTEN	
Jacob b Joseph the husband of Mary	Matt:1:16
Gave his only b Son	
Madian where he b two sons	Acts 7:29
this same day b I thee	Acts 13:33
whom I b in my bonds	
$m{b}$ us again.unto a lively hope	
art my Son this day b I thee	
Of his own will b he us	
<i>b</i> us again unto a lively hope	
His only b Son	1 John 4:9
BEHAVE BEHAVED	
himself boldly	
let us hour selves	('or 6·4

BEHAVE BEHAVED CONT.	
what manner we b	Thess 1:5
we b our selves among you	Thess 2:10
b your selves honestly	
we b not ourselves inordinately	
b thyself in the house of God	
BEHOLD	
b the angel of the Lord appeared	Matt 1:20
B a virgin shall be with child	
B there came wise men	Matt 2:1
b the face the face of my Father	Matt 18:10
B I send my messenger	Mark 1:2
B thy mother and thy brethren seek	Mark 3:33
b thou shalt be dumb, and not able to s	speakLuke 1:20
b thy cousin Elisabeth	Luke 1:36
Mary said, b the handmaid of	Luke 1:38
BELIEVE BELIEVED	
b that ye shall have it	Mark 11:24
Which for a while b	Luke 8:13
That <i>b</i> on his name	John 1:12
<i>b</i> thou this	John 11:26
b in God and b in me	John 14:1
b on the Lord Jesus	Acts 16:31
none that b on him	Rom. 9:33
how shall they b	
given to them that b	
know whom I have b	
must b that God is	Heb. 11:6
devils also b	
BELLY	
Three nights in the whales b	
descendeth down into the b	

BELLEY CONT.	
babe sprang in my b for joy	Luke 1:44
filled his b with the cobs	Luke 15:16
Out of his b shall flow rivers	John 7:38
but their own b and with	Rom 16:18
Whose God is their b	Phil. 3:19
BELOVED	
This is my <i>b</i> Son	Matt 3:1
whom I have chosen, my b	Matt 12:18
Accepted in the <i>b</i>	Eph 1:6
\boldsymbol{b} be not troubled in this heat	1 Peter 4:12
This is my <i>b</i> Son	2 Peter 1:17
BETTER	
B it is for thee that one of thy	Matt 5:29
Are ye not much b than they	
it is b for him that a millstone	Mark 9:42
which thing is <i>b</i>	
every man esteem other b	Phil. 2:3
But now they desire a b	Heb.11:16
for it had been <i>b</i>	2 Pet.2:21
BEWARE	
B of false prophets	Matt 7:15
B of men: for tey shall deliver	Matt 10:17
b of the leaven of the Pharisees	Mark 8:15
B of the Scribes which love to	Mark 12:38
B of the leaven of the Pharisees	Luke 12:1
b of covetousness	Luke 12:15
B therefore lest that fall on you	Acts 13:40
b of dogs b evil workers	Phil 3:2
BIND	
Except he first b the strong man	Matt 12:29
thou b on earth	Matt 6:19

BIND CONT.	
and b him hand and foot	Matt 22:1
3and they b heavy burdens	
and no man could b him	
authority of the high priest to b	
gird thyself, and b on thy sandals	
Jews at Jerusalem b the man	
Jews at Jerusaiem v the man	ACIS 21:11
BISHOP BISHOPRICK	
and his b let another take	Acts 1:20
with the b and deacons	Phil 1:1
covet the office of a b	1 Tim. 3:1
and a b must be faultless	1 Tim 3:2
for a b must be faultless	Titus 1:7
BITTERNESS	
full of cursing and b	Rom 3:14
let all b fierceness and wrath	Eph 4:31
that no root of b.	-
BLAME	
be saints, and without b	Enh 1:4
be holy and without b	-
BLAMELESS	
and yet are b	Matt 12:5
I go b unto the Gentiles	
be b in the day of the Lord	
BLASPHEME BLSPHEME	
How doth this fellow so b	Mark 2:7
b wherewith they	
he that b against the Holy Ghost	
When before I was a b	
they might be taught not to b	
to b his name and his tahernacle	

BLASPHEME BLSPHEME	
And b the God of heaven	Rev 16:11
BLESS BLESSED BLESSING	
more b to give than	Acts 20:35
For that <i>b</i> hope	
\boldsymbol{b} are the dead	Rev 14:13
the b of the gospel of Christ\	Rom 15:39
the cup of b which we bless	1 Cor 10:16
good $ar{b}$ promised afore	2 Cor 9:5
it be a \bar{b} and not a defrauding	2 Cor 9:5
b of Abraham might come on the Gentiles	Gal 3:14
B and cursing	James 3:10
Strength and honor and glory and b	
BLIND BLINDED	
thence two b men followed him	Matt 9:27
the b came to him	Matt 9:28
The b see, the halt go	Matt 11:5
was both b and dumb	Matt 12:22
brought a b man unto him	Mark 8:22
Bartimaeus which was b	Mark 10:46
And they called the <i>b</i>	Mark 10:49
and giving sight to the b	
their minds were b	
of this world hath b.	
darkness hath b his eyes	
BLOOD	
flesh and b hath not revealed	Matt 16:17
His b be on us	
b of the New Testament	
like drops of b	
drinketh my b.	
instified by his <i>h</i>	

BLOOD CONT.	
new testament in my b	1 Cor 11.25
through his b	
without shedding of b	-
precious b of Christ	
by the b of the Lamb	
BLOT BLOTTED	
$oldsymbol{b}$ out the handwriting	Col 2:14
BOAST BOASTING	
rose up one Theudas, b himself	Acts 5:36
B not thyself against the branches	
I <i>b</i> to him	1 Cor 7:4
b that I b to Titus	
while we are now come to b	
should <i>b</i> himself	
covetous b proud	_
now ye rejoice in your <i>b</i>	
b great things	
BODY	
<i>b</i> of sin might be	Rom 6:6
Present your b a quick	
many members in one b	
b is the temple	
I tame my $\overset{ extstyle 1}{b}$	
b even that I burned	
absent from the <i>b</i>	
I bear in my <i>b</i>	
BONE BONES	
of dead b	Matt.23:27
both not flock and h	

BONE BONES CONT.	
Ye shall not break a b of him	John 19:36
flesh, and of his b	Eph 5:30
gave commandment of his b	Heb 11:22
воок	
b of the generation of Jesus Christ,	Matt 1:1
not read in the b of Moses	Mark 12:26
in the b of the sayings of Esaias	Luke 3:4
name out of the b of life1	Rev. 3:5
which are not written in this b	John 20:30
not written in the b of life	Rev.13:8
another b was opened	Rev. 20:12
the words of the b	Rev.22:19
BORN	
b King of the Jews	Matt.2:2
For unto you is b	Luke 2:11
Except a man be b anew	John 3:3
loveth is b of God	1 John 4:7
that Jesus is Christ is b of God	1 John 5:1
b of God overcometh	1 John 5:4
BOSOM	
by the b of the Lamb	Rev. 12:11
into Abraham's b	Luke 16:22
and Lazarus in his b	Luke 16: 23
b of the Father	John 1:18
leaning on Jesus' b	John 13:23
BOUGHT	
Sold all that he had and b it	Matt 13:46
sold and b in the temple	Matt 21:12
and b with them a potters field	Matt 27:7
And he he linen eleth	Mork 15.46

BOUGHT CONT.	
Are not five sparrows b	Luke 12:6
said unto him, I have b a farm	
that Abraham b for money	
For ye are dearly b	
Ye are dearly b	1 Cor 7:23
BOW BOWED	
and b their knees before him	Matt 27:43
Every knee shall <i>b</i>	Rom 14:11
and was b together	Luke 13:11
It is finished and b his head	John 19:30
have not b the knee to Baa	lRom 11:4
ever b down their backs	Rom 11:10
every knee shall b to me	Rom 14:11
I b my knees unto the Father	Eph 3:14
of Jesus should every knee b	Phil 2:10
sons he both the of Joseph, and b	Heb 11:21
that sat on him had a b	Rev 6:2
BREAD	
Stones be made b	Matt 4:3
Shall not live by <i>b</i>	Matt 4:4
this day our daily <i>b</i>	Matt 6:11
I am that <i>b</i> of life	John 6:35
he took b and brake it	Acts 27: 35
betrayed took b	1 Cor 11:23
BREATH BREATHED	
giveth life and b	Acts 17:25
Saul, yet b out threatenings	Acts 9:1
he b on them and saith unto them	John 20:22
BRIDE BRIDEGROOM	
mourn, as long as the b is with them	Matt 9:15
the h shall be taken from them	Matt 0.15

BRIDE BRIDEGROOM CONT.	
went to meet the b	Matt 25:1
the b with them they cannot fast	Mark 2:19
He called the <i>b</i>	
He that hath the bride is the b	
voice of the b and of the b shall	Rev 18:23
Prepared as a b adorned	
The Spirit and the b	
BRIMSTONE	
it rayned fire and b from heaven	Luke 17:29
went forth fire and smoke and b	Rev 9:17
of fire, smoke, And b	Rev 9:18
shall be punished in fire and b	Rev 14:10
lake of fire burning with b	Rev 19:20
into a lake of fire and b	
lake which burneth with fire and b	
BRING	
She shall b forth a son	Matt 1:21
have found, him b me word	Matt 2:8
abide there till I b thee word	Matt 2:13
receive it, and b forth fruit	Mark 4:20
<i>B</i> him unto me	Mark 9:19
Loose him, and b him forth	Mark 11:2
I b good tidings of great Joy	Luke 2:10
B forth due fruits of repentance	Luke 3:8
that it may b more	John 15:2
them also must I b	John 10:16
BREAK BROKEN	
whosoever b one of these	Matt 5:19
marry her that is divorced b wedlock	Matt 5:32
where thieves, neither <i>b</i> up	
thieves b through and steal	
for then the vessels h	

and marrieeth another b wedlock	Mark 10:11
adulterers and women that b	James 4:4
not b a bone of him	John19:36
b down the wall	Eph. 2:14
shall he b them to shivers	Rev 2:27
BROTHER	
Peter, and Andrew his b	Matt 4:15
and John his b	Matt 4:21
and John, James's, b	Mark 3:17
doeth the will of God, he is my b	Mark 3:35
and his b Philip	Luke 3:1
BROTHERLY	
to another with b love	Rom. 12:10
But as touching b love	1 Thess 4:9
I to love b without feigning	1 Peter 1:22
let b love continue	
Love b fellowship	
In godliness b kindness	
and to b kindness love	
BUILD	
come and b in the branches	Matt 13:32
I will b my congregation	Matt.16:18
Ye b the tombs of the prophets	Matt 28:29
if any man b upon this foundation	1 Cor. 3:12
For if I b again that which I destryed	Gal 2:18
BUILDER	
The stone which the <i>b</i> refused	
as a wise b	
b and maker is God	Heb.11:10
Stone which the <i>b</i> 	1 Pet.2:7

BUILDING BUILDINGS	
to shew him the b of the temple	Matt 24:1
Ye are God's b	
a b ordained of God	2 Cor. 5:1
the b of the wall	Rev.21:18
BURDEN BURDENS	
My <i>b</i> is light	Matt. 11:30
which have borne the <i>b</i>	Matt 20:12
Yea and they bind heavy b	Matt 23:4
for ye lade men with b	Luke 11:46
the ship was to unlade her b	Acts 21:3
One another's b	Gal. 6:2
every man shall bear his own b	Gal 6:5
BURN	
will b the chaff withunquenchable fire	Matt 3:12
begineth to b he shall not quench	Matt 12:20
bind them in sheaves to be b	Matt 13:30
ven as the tares are gathered and b	Matt 13:40
and your lights b	Luke 12:35
did not our hearts b	Luke 24:32
even that I b	1 Cor. 13:3
b with brimstone	Rev. 19:20
BURY BURIED	
me first to go and b my father	Matt 8:21
let the dead b their dead	Matt 8:22
Dead b their dead	Luke 9:60
manner of the Jews is to b	John 19:40
we are b with him	Rom. 6:4
he was b	1Cor.15:4
b with him in baptism	Col. 2:12

BUSINESS	
but that more b was made	Matt 27.24
about my Fathers b	
not faithful in another man's b	
appoint to this needful b	
no part nor fellowship in this b	
let not that b	
to do your own b	
\mathbf{C}	
CALL CALLING CALLING	
CALL CALLING CALLING	M. 4. 1. 1.
Jesus who is c Christ	
thou shalt c his name JESUS	
they shall c his name Emmanue	
whereunto he hath c you	_
And anon he c them	
prize of the high c	
with a holy c	2 Tim. 1:9
CANDLE	
Do men light a c	Matt 5:15
a c and covereth it	Luke 8:16
Lighted a c	Luke11:33
a c doth light them	Luke 11:3
6nd they need no c	Rev 22:5
CAPTIVE	
led c into all nations	Luke 21:24
hath led captivity c	Eph 4:8
CARE	
hy c ye then for raimentMatt	6:28
C not then for the morrow	
but let the morrow c for itself	
The e of this world	•

CARE CONT	
and c of this world	Luke 21:34
CAREFUL	
be not c for your life	Matt 6:25
be not <i>c</i>	Phil 4:6
wherein ye were also c	Phil 4:10
CARNAL CARNALLY	
I am c sold under sin	Rom 7:14
are c are c minded	Rom 8:5
minister them, in c things	Rom 15:27
but as unto <i>c</i>	1Cor. 3:1
weapons are not c things	2 Cor.10:4
the c commandment	Heb 7:16
CAST	
I c not away	John 6:37
c all your care to him	1 Peter 5:7
love c out all fear	John 4:18
CAUGHT	
forth his hand, and c him	Matt 15:31
he c the blind by the hand	Mark 8:23
Be c up together	1Thess. 4:17
c him: and he was bound	uke 8:29
CEASE CEASED	
in to the ship, the wind c	Matt 15:32
wind c and they were sore amazed	Mark 6:51
hath not c to kiss my feetL	Luke 7:45
tempest of water: and they c	Luke 8:24
c not teaching and preaching	Acts 5:42
Or tongues shall c	1Cor.13:8
pray continually without c	Thess. 5:17

CERTIFY	
The same Spirit c our spirit	Rom 8:16
I c you, brethren	
And am surely <i>c</i> .`	Phil 1:6
thou shouldest c	
CHAMBERLAIN	
c and of great authority	Acts 8:27
the kings c	Acts 12:20
Erastus the c	Acts 16:23
CHANGE CHANGED	
his countenance was c	
and shall c the ordinances	Acts 6:14
they c their minds	
women did c the natural use	
But be ye c in your shape	
but we shall all be c	1 Cor. 15:51
and are c unto the same	2 Cor.3:18
and could c my voice	eGal 4:20
shall c our vile bodies	Phil 3:21
as a vesture shalt thou c them	Heb 1:12
and they shall be c	Heb 1:12
CHASTEN	
I will therefore c him	Luke 23:16
we are c of the Lord	1Cor 11:32
we yet live; as c	2 Cor 6:9
Lord loveth he c	Heb 12:6
no manner c for the present	Heb. 12:11
I rebuke and c	Rev.3:19
despise not the c of the Lord	Heb 12:6
whom the Lord loveth him he c	Heb 12:6
as I love I rebuke and c	Rev 3:19

CHASTE	
There are c which were so born	Matt 19:12
there are c which be of men	
make you a c virgin to Christ	
To be discrete c housewifely	
CHEER	
son be of good <i>c</i>	Matt 9:2
be of good c it is I	Matt 14:27
be of good c	John 16:33
we are always of good c	
for God loveth a c giver	
CHIEF	
power of the c devi	IMatt 9:35
of whom I am c	1 Tim 1:15
c head	1 Peter 2:13
$oldsymbol{c}$ shepherd shall appear	1 Peter 5:4
CHILD	
with c of the Holy Ghost	Matt 1:18
a virgin shall be with c	Matt 1:23
search diligently for the c	Matt 2:8'
the place where the c was	Matt 2:9
And he said of a c	Mark 9:21
manner c child shall this be	LLuke 1:66
when I was a c	1 Cor.13:11
CHILDREN	
become as children	Matt 18:3
Suffer the c	Matt.19:14
henceforth be no more c	_
c obey your fathers and mothers	Eph.6:1
CHOOSE	
what to c I wot not	Phil 1:22

CHOSE CHOSEN	
	M. 44 20.16
called. But few be c	
Mary hath c that good part	
Ye have not c me	
but I have c you	
he is a c vessel to me	
the charge of God's c	
but God hath c	
But ye are a c generation	1 Peter.2:9
CHRIST CHRSTIANS	
Thou art <i>c</i>	Matt. 16:16
which is called c	John 4:25
Gospel of Jesus C the Son of Go	dMark 1:1
according to the time C died	
C liveth in me	Gal. 2: 20
for <i>C</i> is to me life	Phil 1:21
Jesus is <i>C</i>	1 John 2:22
priests of God and of C	
The first that were called C	Acts 11:26
for to become a c	
beginning of a C man	
if any man suffer as a c	
CIRCUMCISE	
came to c the child	Luke 1:59
the child should be c	Luke 2:2
ye on the sabbath day c a man	
c him the eighth day	
c after the manner of Moses	
that it was needful to c them	
Ye must be c and keep the law	
and took and c him	
c or upon the uncircumcised also	
received the sign of c as a seal	

CIRCUMCISION	
Moses therefore gave unto you c	
on the sabbath day receive <i>c</i>	
c verily profitethh if thou keep. the law	
c is made uncircumcision	
uncircumcision be counted for c	
and c dost transgresses the law	
Neither is that thing <i>c</i>	
the c of the heart is the true c	
C nor uncircumcision	
he gave him the covenant of c	
they of the c which believed	
they of the c reasoned with him	
they of the c reasoned with him	ACG 11.2
CITY	
took him up into the Holy city	Matt 4:5
which is a <i>c</i> upon the sea	Matt 4:13
dwelt in a <i>c</i> alled Nazareth	Matt 2:23
A c that thas set on an hill	Matt 5:1
4entire c gathered together	Mark 1:33
from Nazareth c of Galilee	
dwelt in a c called Nazareth	Acts 2:23
c of the living God	
the c of the nations fell	
the beloved C	
CLEAN	
canst make me c	Matt. 8:2
I will be thou <i>c</i>	Matt 8:3
it in a c linen cloth	Matt 27:59
make c the outside of the	
and behold, all is c to youLuke	
Ye are not all c	
Now are ve c through the word	John 15:3

CLEANSE CLEANSED	
immediately his leprosy was c	Matt 8:3
Heal the sick, c the lepers	Matt 10:8
lepers are c the deaf hear	Matt 11:5
leprosy departed and he was c	
the halt go, the lepers are c	Luke 7:22
as they went they were c	
when he saw that he was c	Luke 17:15
what God hath c .call. thou not common	Acts 10:15
son be of good c	Matt 9:2
let us c ourselves	2 Cor 7:1
To sanctify it and c it	Eph 5:26
c your hands ye sinners	James 4:8
c us from all unrighteousness	John 1:9
CLOTHE CLOTHED	
If God do so <i>c</i>	Matt. 6:30
Naked, and ye c me	
John was c with camel's hair	
both c and in his right mind	Mark 5:15
A man c in soft raiment	
sitting at the feet of Je'sus, c	Luke 8:35
be c with humility	1 Pet. 5:5
c with a vesture	Rev. 19:13
CLOUD	
the c of heaven with	Matt.24:30
A c that shadowed them	Mark 9:7
in a c with Power	Luke 21:27
caught up in the c	1 Thess.4:17
and behold a white c	Rev 14:14
CLAVE	
he went and c to a citizen	Luke 15:15
they heard that, they c asunder	Acts 5:33
cortain man a unta Paul	

COLD	
cup of c water	Matt 10:42
many shall wax c	Matt 24:12
made a fire of coals for it was c	Acts 18:18
rain, and because of the \emph{c}	Acts 28:2
in c and nakedness	2 Cor. 11:27
neither c nor hot	Rev.3:15
COME COMING	
son be of good c	Matt 9:2
c unto me	Matt.11:28
the Son of man is c	
compel them to c	Luke 14:28
I will c again	John 14:3
to shew in times to c	
Where is the promise of his c	2 Peter 3:4
Even so c Lord Jesus	Rev 22:20
COMFORT COMFORTED	
and would not be \emph{c}	Matt 2:18
they shall be <i>c</i>	Matt 5:4
Daughter, be of good c	Matt 9:22
Be of good c	Mark 10:49
Daughter be of good c	Luke 8:46
to Martha and Mary, to \emph{c} them	John 11:19
able to \emph{c} them	2 Cor 1:4
That their hearts might be c	Col 2:22
COMFORTER	
give you another $oldsymbol{c}$	John 14:16
that C which is the Holy Ghost	John14:26
when the c is come	
For if I go not away, that C	John 16:7
COMMANDMENT	
of these least c	Matt 5:19

COMMANDMENT CONT.	
the c of God	Matt 15:3
ye have made that the c of God	
a new <i>c</i> I give	
first c that hath any promise	
I write no new c	_
COMMIT COMMITED	
Thou shalt not c adultery	Matt 5:27
hath c adultery with her already	Matt 5:28
which is divorced doth c adultery	Matt 19:9
to another, she c adultery	
c things worthy of stripes	Luke 12:48
to whom men c much	Luke 12:48
hath c all judgment unto the Son	John 5:22
c sin is the servant of sin	John 8:34
which I have c unto his keeping	2 Tim. 1:12
COMMUNICATION	
let your c be yea yea	Matt. 5:37
what manner of c	
Let no filthy <i>c</i>	
c should not be spoken to them	_
COMPANY	
and gathered unto him all the c	cMatt 27:27
what c hath light with darkness	
and have no c with him	
your c a man with a golden ring	
COMPASSION	
he had c on them	Matt. 9:36
I have c on the people	Matt 15:32
Jesus had c on him	
how he had a	

COMPASSION CONT.	
much people, and had $oldsymbol{c}$ on them	Mark 6:34
saw him and had c	
	Rom. 9:15
	yPhil 2:1
can have c on the ignorant	
and shutteth up his c from him	
COMPEL COMPELLED	
$oldsymbol{c}$ thee to go a mile	Matt.5:41
him they c to bear his cross	Matt. 27:32
c them to come in	
and c them to blaspheme	
Ye have <i>c</i> me	2 Cor 12:11
yet was not c to be circumcised	Gal 2:3
not as though ye were c thereto	1 Peter 5:2
COMPREHEND COMPREHENDED	
the darkness c it not	John 1:5
all Commandment is c in this saying c	
to c with all saints	Eph.3:18
CORRUPT	
that old man which is c	Eph 4:22
men of c minds	2 Tim 3:8
Your riches are c	James 5:2
ye were not redeemed with c	1 Peter 1:18
CONDEMN	
into the world to c	John 3:17
believeth not is c	John 3:18
neither do I c thee	
if our hoort a us not	

CONFESS	
c that Jesus Christ	Phil.2:11
if we c our sins	1John 1:9
c that Jesus is the	1John 4:15
CONFIDENCE	
Have c in God	Mark 11:22
no c in the flesh	Phil.3:3
hold fast the c and the rejoicing	
unto the end, the first c	Heb 3:14
unto the end, the first c	
Faith is a sure c	
we have c	Нев 13:18
CONGREGATION	
upon this rock I will build my c	Matt 16:18
tell it unto the c	
If he hear not the c	Matt 18:17
added to the c daily	
fear came on the entire c	
the c of Christ	
set some in the c	
he that prophesieth edifieth the c	
Unto him be glory in the c	
also loved the c	-
a glorious <i>c</i>	•
speak between Christ and the c	-
he is head of the body the c	-
care of the c of God	
c of the living God	
but are the c of Satan	
CONQUER-CONQUERING	
forth c and for to overcome	Rev 6:2

CONSCIENCE	
Ye have <i>c</i> me	2 Cor 12:11
I have lived in all good c	Acts 23:1
and of a good c	1 Tim.1:5
Having faith and good c	1 Tim.1:19
c marked with a hot iron	1Tim.4:2
with pure c that without ceasing	2 Tim 1:3
minds and c of them are defiled	Titus 1:15
minister perfect as pertaining to the c	Heb 9:9
purge your c from dead works	
have had no more c of sins	
our hearts from an evil c	Heb 10:22
a good c in all things and	Heb 13:18
if a man for c toward God	1 Peter 2:19
Having a good c that when thy backbite .	1 Peter 3:16
CONSIDER	
c the lilies of the	Matt.6:28
thou c not men's estate	Matt 22:16
I c that thou wast an hard man	Matt 25:24
for you c not the degree of men	
but c not the beam	
<i>c</i> the ravens	
c that it is expedient for us	
nor yet c his own body	Rom 4:19
let the same also c of himself	
c thyself lest thou also be tempted	Gal 6:1
C what I say	
c the ambassador and high pries	tHeb 3:1
CONSUME CONSUMING	
and <i>c</i> them	Matt 9:54
Death is c in to victory	
heed that ye be not c	
For our God is a c	
whom the Lord shall c	

CONSUME CONSUMING CONT.	
ye may c it on your lusts	James 4:3
elements shall be c with heat	
and c their enemies	
CONTENT	
and of a good <i>c</i>	1 Tim.1:5
not c in themselves	Mark 14:4
Pilate willing to c the people	Mark 15:15
be c with your wages	Luke 3:14
to be c and to do nothing rashly	
she be c to dwell with him	1 Cor 7:12
therewith to be <i>c</i>	Phil.4:11
If a man be c	
be c with that ye have already	
CONTINUE-CONTINUAL	
give ourselves c	Acts 6:4
if ye c in my word	John 8:31
<i>c</i> ye in my love	John 15:9
Peter c knocking	Acts 12:16
to c in the grace	Acts 13:43
shall we c in sin	Rom. 6:1
c instant in prayer	Rom. 12:12
if ye c grounded and established	
c in prayer and watch	
If they \hat{c} in faith	
Let brotherly love <i>c</i>	
CONTRARY	
the wind was c unto them	Mark 6.48
for it was a c wind	
and c wise Lazarus pain	
these all do c	
they said c and blasphemed	
they said t and plasphenied	

CONTRARY CONT.	
to be smitten c to the law	Acts 23:3
c to the name of Jesus of Nazareth	
c to hope believed in hope	
wast grafted c to nature R	
flesh is c to the Spirit	Gal 5:17
CONVERSATION	
our c is in heaven	Phil. 3:20
in word in <i>c</i> in love1	Tim.4:12
c be without covetousness	.Heb.13:5
CONVERT CONVERTED	
And when thou art c L	uke 22:32
should be c	John12:40
Jews, and c	
Nicolas a c of Antioch	Acts 6:5
Jews and virtuous c	Acts 14:43
and should be c	Acts 28:27
and one c himJ	ames 5:19
But be c or else I wil	. Rev 2:16
CORRECTION	
If ye be not under c	Heb 12:8
CORRUPT	
and rust doth c	
a c tree bringeth forth	
malicious speaking c good manners	Cor.15:33
COUNCEL	
Held a c together	ohn 11:53
shewed ye all the c of GodA	cts 20:27\
by the determinate c	Acts 2:23
COUNT	
and of a good c	1 Tim.1:5

COUNT CONT.

and $oldsymbol{c}$ the cost	Luke 14:28
I c loss for	Phil. 3:7
I c not myself	Phil3:13
ye are c worthy\	2 Thess.1:5
strong: for he $oldsymbol{c}$ me true	1:12
My brethren, c it exceeding joy	James 1:2
as some men c slackness2	Pet.3:9
COUNTENANCE	
His $oldsymbol{c}$ was like lightning	Matt.28:3
full of joy with thy c	Acts 2:28
glory of his C	2Cor.3:7
COURSE	
the <i>c</i> of Abia	Luke 1:5
as his \emph{c} came	Luke 1:8
when John had fulfilled his c	Acts 13:25
I might fulfill my c with Joy	Acts 20:24
they which run in a c run all	1 Cor 9:24
according to the c of this world	Eph 2:2
I have fulfilled my c	2Tim 4:7
which have ended their \emph{c}	Heb 12:27
COURTEOUS COURTEOUSLY	
Julius $oldsymbol{c}$ entreated Paulhim liberty	Acts 27:3
love as brethren, be pitiful, be c	1 Peter 3:8
lodged us three days <i>c</i>	Acts 28:7
Be ye c one to another	Eph 4:31
CREATE -CREATED	
Neither was the man c	1 Cor.11:9
<i>c</i> in Christ Jesus	Eph 2:10
were all things c	Col. 1:16

CREATED CONT.	
for thou hast c	Rev.4:11
CREATOR	
unto a faithful c	1 Pet. 4:19
CREATURE	
glad tidings to every c	Mark16:15
worshipped and served the c	Rom 1:25
fervent desire of the <i>c</i>	Rom 8:19
the c are subdued to vanity	Rom 8:20
the very c shall be delivered	Rom 8:21
nor any other c	Rom.8:39
but a new <i>c</i>	Gal 6:15
preached among all c	Col.1:23
CROSS	
come down from the c	Matt. 27:40
take up thy c	Mark 10:21
come down from the c	Mark 15:30
take up his c daily	Luke 9:23
less the c of Christ	Cor. 1:17
rejoice, save in the c	Gal.6:14
even the death of the c	Phil. 2:8
they are the enemies of the c	Phil.3:18
set before him endured the c	Heb. 12:2
CROWN	
platted a c of thorns	Mat.27:29
a c of righteousness	2Tim.4:8
shall receive the c of life	James 1:12
I will give thee a c of life	Rev.2:10
cast their c hefore the sea	tRev 4·10

CRUCIFY CRUCIFIED	
c him c him	Luke 23:21
that our old man is c	Rom. 6:6
even the same that was c	1 Cor. 2:2
I am c with Christ	
They that are Christ's have c	Gal. 5:24
CRY CRYING	
c day and night	Luke 18:7
two blind men followed him c	Matt 9:27
not strive, he shall not c	Matt 12:19
she followeth us crying	
children c in the temple	
midnight there was a c made	Matt 25:6
Jesus stood and c saying	
we c Abba, Father	Rom.8:15
CUP	
$oldsymbol{c}$ of cold water only	Matt.10:42
let this c pass from me	
give you a c of water	Mark 9:41
And he took the c	Mark 14:23
the course of Abia	Luke 1:5
clean the outside of the c	
This c is the new testament	
shall I not drink of the c	
Is not the c of blessing is it not	
or drink the c	
CURSE	
depart from me ye C into	Matt.25:41
are under the C	

CURSE CONT.	
bless them that c you	Matt. 5:44
bless but c not	Rom.12:14
deeds of the law are under the c	Gal.3:10
therewith c we men	James 3:9
CUT	
c him off, and cast him	Matt 5:30
c down branches	Matt 21:8
hand offend thee, c him off	Mark 9:43
and c of his ear	Mark 14:47'
After that c it down	Luke 13
and c off his right ear	John 18:10
Then the soldiers c off the rope	Acts 27:32
c out of a natural wild olive tree	Rom 11:24
c away occasion from them	2 Cor 11:12
c down the grapes vineyard earth	Rev 15:10
COVENANT	
and to remember his holy c	Luke 1:72
c which God made	Acts 3:25
the prophets, and of the c	Acts 4:25
he gave him the c of circumcision	Acts 7:8
c breakers, unloving	Rom 1:31
and the glory and the c	Rom.9:4
And this is my c unto them	Rom 11:27
COVERED	
c with waves and he was asleep,	Matt 8:24
c his face, and to beat him	
is nothing c that shallnot be. uncovered	Luke 12:2
whose sins are c	
For love c a multitude of sin	1Pet 4.8

COVET COVETOUS COVETOUSNESS	
thefts, c wickedness	Mark 7:22
Take heed beware of c	
c, nor drunkards	
C after the best gifts	
for love, and c spiritual gifts	1 Cor 14:1
all uncleanness. or c	
For <i>c</i> of lucre	
D	
DAILY	
This day our d bread	Matt 6:11
take up his cross d	
added to the congregation d	Acts 2:47
in Christ Je'sus our Lord I die d	1 Cor. 15:31
naked or destitute of d food	James 2:15
DAMNED DAMNATION	
and shall not come into d	John 5:24
Whose end is <i>d</i>	Phil 3:19
lest ye be <i>d</i>	James 5:9
bring upon themselves swift d	2 Peter 2:1
overthrew them, <i>d</i> them	2 Peter 2:6
believes not shall be d	Mark 16:16
DARKNESS	
cast out into outer d	Matt.8:12
light to them that sit in d	Luke 1:79
\vec{d} over all the land	Luke 23:44
d comprehended it not	John 1:5
loved \bar{d} more than	John 3:19
might turn from d to light	Acts 26:18
What company hath light with d	2 Cor.6:14
rulers of the d of this world	dEph.6:12
delivered us from he power of d	_
called you out of d	

DARKNESS CONT.	
and in him is no d	John 1:5
and yet walk in d	1 John 1:6
DAY	
was glad to see my d	John 8:56
For the d shall declare itr	1 Cor 3:13
until the d of Jesus Christr	Phil 1:6
and the children of the d	1 Thess 5:5
d and hour knoweth no man	Matt 24:36
that d come on you unawares	Luke 21:34
raise it up again at the last d	John 6:39
now is that d of that salvation	2 Cor 6:2
The d of Jesus Christ	Phil.1:6
<i>d</i> of the Lord	1 Thess.5:2
how that one d is with the Lord	2 Pet.3:8
d spring from on high hath	Luke I:78
DAY STAR	
d arise in your hearts	r2 Pet.1:19
DEAD DEATH	
let the d bury the d	Matt.8:22
the d rise againr	Matt.11:5
the maiden is not d	Mark 5:39
what rising from d should mean	Mark 9:10
For this is my Son which was d	
though he were d	
if we be d with Christ	
stand up from d	
first begotten from the d	-
and you, which were d	
And the d in Christ shall arise first	
if we be d with him	
also he heing d vet sneaketht	

again from d our Lord Jesus Christ	Heb.13:20
we that are d to sins	Rom 6:2
I am alive and was d	Rev.1:18
that thou livest and thou art d	Rev.3:1
DEAD DEATH CONT.	
Shall not not taste of d	Matt.16:28
soul is heavyl even unto d	tMatt. 26:38
that he should not see d	Luke 2:26
but is escaped from <i>d</i> unto life	John 5:24
e shall never see d	John 8:51
to God by the d of his Sont	Rom.5:10
d by means of sin	
be graft in d like unto him	Rom 6:5
the reward of sin is d	
the law of sin and d	Rom. 8:2
d where is thy sting	1Cor 15:55
should taste of <i>d</i> for all men	Heb.2:9
bringeth forth d	James 1:15
translated from d unto life because	
be faithful unto the d	
shall be no more d	Rev.21:4
DEAF	
lest ye be <i>d</i>	James 5:9
lepers are cleansed: the d hear	
one that was d	Mark 7:32
both the d to hear	Mark 7:37
thou dumb and <i>d</i> spirit	Mark 9:25
the d hear, the dead are raised	
DEBTOR	
lest ye be <i>d</i>	James 5:9
a certain lender which had two d	

DEBTOR CONT.	
called he all his master's d	Luke 16:5
I am d both to the Greeks	Rom.1:14
we are now d not to the fleshy	Rom 8:12
and their d are they	
DECEITFULNESS	
and d vanity	Col.2:8
the d of riches	Matt 13:22
wickedness, d uncleanessy Mark 7:22	
d the child of the devil,	Acts 13:10
d evil conditioned	Rom 1:29
false apostles are d workers	1 Cor 11:13
and d vanity	Col 2:8
the d of $\sin \dots$	yHeb 3:13
DECEIVE DECEIVABLE	
lest ye be <i>d</i>	James 5:9
through the d lusts	
and the d of riches	_
that no man d you	Matt.24:4
Be not <i>d</i>	
Be not d God is not mockedy	
They lie in wait to d	
d and being d	
we d ourselves	
let no man d you	
DECLARE	
d to be the Son	Rom.1:4
the day shall d it	
DEED	
by the <i>d</i> of the law	Rom.3:20
faith without the d	
the d of the hody	

DEED CONT.	
ye do in word or d	Col.3:17
not by d of righteousness	Titus 3:5
in d and in verit	1 John 3:18
DEDICATED	
Things d unto Idols	1 Cor 8:1
DEDICATED CONT.	
this is d unto idolsy	1 Cor 10:28
eat of meat d unto idols	Rev 2:14
DEFILE	
into the mouth d not	Matt.15:11
they d the many	Matt.15:18
lest they should be d	John 18:28
d the temple of God	1Cor.3:17
those that d themselves	1Tim.1:10
thereby many be d	Heb.12:15
which have not d	Rev.3:4
DELIGHT	
beloved Son, in whom is my d	Matt 3:17
I d in the law	
DELIVER	
d us from evil	Matt. 6:13
d from the bondage of	Rom,8:21
d unto death for Jesus sake	2 Cor. 4:1
d me from all evil doing	2Tim.4:18
DEN	
a d of thieves	Matt.21:13

DENY	
whosoever shall d	Matt.10:33
will I also d before my Father	Matt 10:33
thou shalt d me thrice	Matt 26:34
let him d himself, and take up his cross	Luke 9:23
Sadducees which d	Luke 20:27
and we cannot d it	Acts 4:16
he cannot d himself	2Tim.2:13
DEPART DEPARTING	
they d and lo the star	Matt 2:9
When they were d	Matt 2:13
d from me ye workers	Matt 7:23
the leprosy d from him	Mark 1:42
And the Pharisees d	Mark 3:6
pray him that he would d	Mark 5:17
there come a <i>d</i> first	2 Thess 2:3
DECEND	
Spirit of God d like a dove	Matt.3:16
And abundance of rain d	Matt 7:25
housetop not d down from the house	Mark 13:15
d now from the cross	Mark 15:32
<i>d</i> from heaveny	1 Thess. 4:16
This wisdom d no	James 3:15
d out of heaveny	Rev.21:10
DECEIVED	
ye are <i>d</i> , and understand not	Matt 22:29
the very elect should be d	Matt 24:24
Are ye not therefore d	Mark 12:24
Ye are therefore greatly d	Mark 12:27

DESIRE	
if any d to be first	Mark 9:35
d when ye pray	Mark11:24
Holy Spirit to them that <i>d</i>	Luke 11:13
a d to be loosed	Phil.1:23
d that reasonable milk of the word	d1 Peter.2:2
petitions that we d	1 John 5:15
and d the other	Matt. 6:24
DESPISE DISPISED	
d the council of Gody	Luke 7:30
d thou the riches	Rom.2:4
and we are <i>d</i>	1Cor.4:10
d not prophesyingy	1Thes.5:20
Let no man d thy youth	1Tim.4:12
See that no man d thee	Titus 2:15
<i>d</i> the shame	Heb.12:2
DESPERATE	
Lest they be of a d mind	dCol 3:21
DESTROY	
not come to d	Matt.5:17
him that is able to d	Matt.10:28
I will d this temple	Mark 14:58
save life or d it	Luke 6:9
to save or to d	James 4:12
DESTRUCTION	
that leadeth to d	Matt.7:13
sudden d cometh	1Thess.5:3
drown men in perdition and d	1Tim.6:9

DEVIL	
tempted of the d	Matt.4:1
prepared for the d	Matt 25:41
your father the d	John 8:44
the <i>d</i> also believ	James 2:19
DEVIL CONT.	
Resist the d	ames 4:7
your adversary the D	1Pet.5:8
DIE DIED	
shall suffer d	Matt 15:4
If I should d with thee	Matt 26:35
nor yet can d any more	Luke20:36
shall d in your sins	John 8:21
believest on me shall never d	John 11:26
for a good man durst a man d	Rom.5:7
it is Christ which has d	Rom.8:34
if we d we die at the Lord's wil	zRom.14:7
Christ both d and rose	Rom.14:9
How that Christ d for our sins	1Cor.15:3
in Christ Je'sus our Lord I d daily	1Cor.15:31
and that he d for all	1 Cor.5:14
and to d is advantage	Phil.1:21
That Jesus d and rose againz	1Thess.4:14
unto men that they shall once d	Heb.9:27
and these all d in faith	Heb.11:13
DINE	
be sought him to d with him	
Come and d	
When they had d	John 21:15
DILIGENCE	
as thou art in the way give d	Luke 12:58

DILIGENCE CONT.	
received the word with all d	Acts 17.11
him that ruleth, do it with d	
hereunto, give all d	
I gave all d	
what d this godly sorrow	
William of the goal's sollow	2 001 7 111
DISCIPLE-DISCIPLES	
Called his twelve d	Matt 10:1
the d is not above his Lord	
tell his d that he is risen	
His d came by night	Matt.28:13
Why do the d of John	
As John taught his d	
he cannot be my d	Luke14:26
are you my very d indeed	
to washed the <i>d</i> feet	John 13:5
and be made my d	John 15:8
d whom Jesus loved	
the d of Antioch	Acts 11:26
DISCOMMENDABLE	
unto all good works d	Titus 2:16
DISHONOUR	
breaking the law d God	Rom 2:23
and another unto d	Rom. 9:21
bare headed d her head	1 Cor 11:5
it is sown in <i>d</i>	1 Cor.15:43
In honour and <i>d</i>	2 Cor 6:8
and some to d	2 Tim.2:20
DISOBEDIENCE	
by one man's <i>d</i>	Rom.5:19
take vengeance on all d	
transgrassion and d	

DISOBEDIENT	
not d unto the heavenly vision	Acts 26:19
d to Father and Mother	
in times past unwise d	Titus 3:3
unrighteous and d	
cursed speakers, d	
neither are d	
were in time passed d	
DIVERS	
cursed speakers, d	2 Tim 3:2
were taken with d diseases	jMark 1:31
and d of the scribes	Mark 7:1
d of them that stood there	Mark 11:14
sick with d diseases	Luke 4:40
When d waxed hard	Acts 19:9
d gifts according to the grace	Rom 12:6
there are d manners of operations	1 Cor 12:6
to another d tongues	1 Cor 12:10
<i>d</i> of tongues	1 Cor 12:28
destroy the faith of d persons	2 Tim 2:18
women are led of d lusts	
DIVIDE DIVIDING	
cursed speakers, d	2 Tim 3:2
Every kingdom d	Matt.12:25
d the inheritance	
d to every man severally	•
d the word of truth justly	
the d asunder of soul	
DO	
cursed speakers, d	2 Tim 3:2
should d to you	
even so d ye to	
this i in remembrance of me	

DO CONT.	
without me ye can d nothing	John 15:5
I can d all things	Phil.4:13
and <i>d</i> it not	James 1:23
DOCTRINE DOCTRINES	
were astonied at his d	Matt 7:28
d which are nothing	Matt 15:9
cursed speakers, d	2 Tim 3:2
the d of the Pharisees	Matt 16:12
What new <i>d</i> is this	Mark 1:27
said unto them in his d	Mark 4:2
d which are nothing	Mark 7:7
all the people marveled at his d	Mark 11:18
unto them in his d	Mark 12:38
he shall know of the d	John 7:17
continued in the Apostles' d	Acts 2:42
heart unto the form of d	
carried with every wind of d	Eph 4:14
d pertaining to the beginning	Heb 6:1
endureth in the d	
DOING	
shall find so d	Matt. 24:46
Jesus went about d good	Acts 10:38
not be weary in well d	Gal.6:9
d the will of God	Eph.6:6
suffer for well d	1Pet.3:17
their souls to him with well d	1 Pet.4:19
DOMINION	
lords of the Gentiles have d over them	Matt 21:25
and d and above all namesthat are nat	med Eph.1:21
to whom be praise and d	_
To him be glory and d	

All this was d to fulfill	DOMINION CONT.	
glory and d for ever more. Amen	be glory, and majesty, d	Jude :25
All this was d to fulfill Matt 1:22 In thy name have d many miracles Matt 7:22 were d because they repented not Matt 11:20 which were d in you Matt 11:21 be d in similitudes Mark 4:11 great things the Lord hath d unto thee Mark 5:19 see her that had done that thing Mark 5:32 mighty hath d to me great Luke 1:49 came out to see what was d Luke 8:35 were d in Bethabara John 1:28 d things on the sabbath day John 5:16 have d many miracles Matt 7:22 Sins may be d away Acts 2:19 DOOR the d is the shepherd John 10:2 I am the d John 10:7,9 opened the d of faith Acts 14:27 A great d 1 Cor.16:9 I stand at the d and knock Rev.3:20 behold a d was opened Rev.4:1 DOUBLE deacons not be d tongued 17 min.3:8 worthy of d honour 17 min.5:17 a d minded man James 1:8 give her d according to her works Rev 18:6 And pour in d to her Rev 18:6		
In thy name have d many miracles	DONE	
were d because they repented not	All this was d to fulfill	Matt 1:22
which were d in you	In thy name have d many miracles	Matt 7:22
be d in similitudes	were d because they repented not	Matt 11:20
great things the Lord hath d unto thee	which were d in you	Matt 11:21
see her that had done that thing	be d in similitudes	Mark 4:11
mighty hath d to me great Luke 1:49 came out to see what was d Luke 8:35 were d in Bethabara John 1:28 d things on the sabbath day John 5:16 have d many miracles Matt 7:22 Sins may be d away Acts 2:19 DOOR John 10:2 I am the d John 10:7,9 opened the d of faith Acts 14:27 A great d 1 Cor.16:9 I stand at the d and knock Rev.3:20 behold a d was opened Rev.4:1 DOUBLE Tim.3:8 worthy of d honour 1Tim.5:17 a d minded man James 1:8 give her d according to her works Rev 18:6 DOUBT DOUBTED	great things the Lord hath d unto thee	Mark 5:19
came out to see what was d	see her that had done that thing	Mark 5:32
were d in Bethabara	mighty hath d to me great	Luke 1:49
d things on the sabbath day	came out to see what was d	Luke 8:35
have d many miracles	were d in Bethabara	John 1:28
have d many miracles	d things on the sabbath day	John 5:16
DOOR the d is the shepherd		
the d is the shepherd	Sins may be d away	Acts 2:19
I am the d	DOOR	
opened the d of faith	the d is the shepherd	John 10:2
A great d	I am the <i>d</i>	John 10: 7,9
I stand at the d and knock	opened the d of faith	Acts 14:27
behold a d was opened		
DOUBLE deacons not be d tongued	I stand at the d and knock	Rev.3:20
deacons not be d tongued	behold a d was opened	Rev.4:1
worthy of d honour	DOUBLE	
worthy of d honour	deacons not be d tongued	1Tim.3:8
a d minded man	S S	
give her <i>d</i> according to her worksRev 18:6 And pour in d to herRev 18:6 DOUBT DOUBTED	· ·	
And pour in d to herRev 18:6 DOUBT DOUBTED		
wherefore didst thou d	DOUBT DOUBTED	
	wherefore didst thou d	Matt.14:31

DOUBT DOUBTED CONT.

and shall not d	Matt.21:21
But some of them d	Matt 28:17
the people were in a d	tLuke 3:15
d because that it was said of some	Luke 9:7
no $oldsymbol{d}$ the kingdom of God	Luke 11:20
how long dost thou make us d	John 10:24
d of whom he spake	John 13:22
In thy name have d many miracles	Matt 7:22
and go with them and d not	Acts 10:20
go with them, without <i>d</i>	Acts 11:12
without wrath and d	1Tim.2:8
DOVE DOVES	
descend like a d	Matt.3:16
serpents and innocent as d	Matt 10:16
the seats of them that sold d	Matt 21:12
descending upon him, like a d	Mark 1:10
of them that sold d	Mark 11:15
a pair of turtle \emph{d}	Luke 2:24
bodily shape like a <i>d</i>	Luke 3:22
unto a d and abode upon him	John 1:22
sheep and d and changers of money	John 2:14
DRAGON	
and behold a great red d	Rev 12:3
And they worshipped the d	Rev 13:4
out of the mouth of the d	Rev 16:13
laid hold on the old d	Rev.20:2
DRAW DRAWN	
same have \emph{d} many miracles	Matt 7:22
Your redemption d nigh	Luke 21:28
which both cont mad him	

DRAW DRAWN CONT.	
when he is d away and enticed	James 1:14
DRINK DRUNK	
have d many miracles	Matt 7:22
to d a cup of cold water	Matt.10:42
ye gave me <i>d</i>	Matt.25:35
vinegar to d mingled	Matt.27:34
d because ye belong to Christ	Mark 9:41
Give me to <i>d</i>	
my blood is <i>d</i> indeed	John 6:55
come unto me and d	John 7:37
nor to <i>d</i> wine	Rom. 14:21
one manner of spiritual d	1Cor.10:4
as oft as ye d of it	
and have all d of one Spirit	1Cor.12:13
about meat and d	
DRUNKARD	
a d or an extortione	r1Cor 6:11
not angry, no d	Titus 1:7
DUMB	
d man possessed of a devil	Matt 9:32
and d both spake and saw	Matt 12:22
blind d maimed	Matt. 15:30
the d to speak	Mark 7:37
he hath a d spirit	Mark 9:17
ehold, thou shalt be d	Luke 1:20
the d spake and the people wondered	Luke 11:14
d before his shearer	Acts 8:32
and went your ways unto d idols	1 Cor 12:2
The tame and d heast	

DWELL DWELLETH	
But sin that d in me	Rom.7:17
d in your hearts by faith	
all fulness d of the Godhead bodily	-
word of Christ d in you plenteously	
and d in the light	
wherein d righteousness	
DUST	
Shake off the d of your feet	Matt.10:14
${f E}$	
EAGLE	
there will the e resort	Matt 24:28
was like a flying e	Rev 4:7
two wings of a great e	Rev 12:14
EAR EARS	
their e were dull of hearing	Matt.13:15
having e , hear ye no	tMark 8:18
e hath not heard	1 Cor.2:9\
And if the e shall say	1Cor.12:16
having itching e	2Tim.4:3
turn their e from the truth	2 Tim 4:4
are entered into the e of the Lord	James 5:4
his e are open	1Pet.3:12
EARNEST	
e of the Spirit into our hearts	2 Cor.1:22
e of our inheritance	Eph.1:14
EARTH EARTHLY	
meek.shall inherit the e	Matt.5:5
treasure unon the a	Matt 6.19

EARTH EARTHLY CONT	
to send peace on e	Matt.10:34
shall bind on e	Matt.16:19
shall agree on e	Matt.18:19
peace on the e	Luke 2:14
in e vessels	2.Cor.4:7
not on things on the e	Col.3:2
pilgrims on the e	Heb.11:13
but is e and natural	
e brought forth	
the e also with the works	
Shall reign on e	
a new heaven and a new e	
hunger, and e	Matt 24:7
EARTHQUAKE	
lghtings and e	Rev.8:5
there was a great e	Acts 16:26
EAT EATETH	
what ye shall e or what ye shall	Matt 6:25
pluck the ears of corn, and to e	Matt 12:1
not lawful for him to e	Matt 12:4
did e locusts and wild honey	Mark 1:6
e with publicans and sinners	
not leisure so much as to e	Mark 3:20
whelps under the table e	Mark 7:28
whelps e of the children's crumbs	Mark 7:29
what ye shall e	Luke 12:22
let us e and be merry	Luke 15:23
EAT EATETH	
whatsoever is set before ve e	1.Cor.10:27

EAT EATETH CONT.	
that e and drinketh unworthily	1 Cor.11:29
that if there were any which e	
will I give to e of the tree of life	
EDIFY EDIFYING	
his wealth and e	Rom.15:2
but love <i>e</i>	1Cor.8:1
\speaketh unto men to e	1Cor.14:3
the e of the body of Chris	
ELDER ELDERS	
The <i>e</i> that rule well	Tim 5:17
ordain e in every city	Titus1:5
he e of the congregation	.James 5:14
submit yourselves unto the e	1Pet.5:5
ELECT	
gather together his e	. Matt.24:31
God avenge his own e	Luke18:7
therefore as the E of God	Col.3:12
e by the foreknowledge of God	1 Peter 1:2
ELECTION	
The purpose of God which is by e	Rom.9:11
to make your calling and e sure	2 Peter 1:10
through the e of grace	Rom.11:5
but yet the <i>e</i> hath obtained it	Rom.11:7
but as touching the e	. Rom.11:28
that ye are e of God	1Thess.1:4
END	
and of the e of the world	Matt:24:3

END CONT.	
and then shall the <i>e</i> come	Matt 24:14
	Mark 13:7
	Luke 1:33
	Phil 3:19
Receiving the <i>e</i> of your faith	1 Peter 1:9
he beginning and the E	Rev.21:6
ENDURE-ENDURETH	
But he that e to the end	Matt 10:22
but he that shall e	Matt.24:13
e all things	1Cor.13:7
they will not e sound	2 Tim.4:3
if ye e chastening	Heb.12:7
the man that e in	James 1:12
the word of the Lord <i>e</i> forever	1 Peter1:25
wrath is come; And who can e it	Rev 6:17
ENEMY	
your e bless	Matt. 5:44
if when we were e we were reconciled	Rom.5:10
if thine e hunger	Rom.12:20
the e of the cross	Phil 3:18
count him not as not as an e	2Thess.3:15
friendship of the world is e of God	James 4:4
ENOUGH	
It is <i>e</i> for the disciple	Matt 10:25
have bread e and to spare	
prayest, e into thy chamber	
town ye shall e	
e into life halt or maimed	
pray, lest ye <i>e</i> into temptation:	
and to ρ into his glory	

ENTER	
e into his mother's womb	John 3:4 he
that e not in by the door	John 10:1
$\sin e$ into the world	Rom.5:12
$\sin e$ into the world	Rom.5:12
neither have e into the heart	1Cor.2:9
ENVY ENVIOUS ENVIETH ENVEING	
full of e, murder, debate, deceit Rom.1:29	
neither in strife and e	Rom.13:13
as there is among you e, strife	1Cor.3:3
Love <i>e</i> not	1Cor.13:4
e, murder, drunkenness, gluttony	Gal.5:21
whereof spring e, and strife	1Tim.6:4
in maliciousness and e	Titus 3:3
Ye e and have indignation	James 4:2
EQUAL	
hast made them e unto us	Matt. 20:12
For they are <i>e</i> unto the angels	Luke 20:36
and made himself e with God	John 5:18
it not robbery to be e with God	Phil.2:6
your servants that which is just and e	Col.4:1
ERROR	
e from the faith and tangled	1 Tim 6:10
if any of you e from the truth	James 5:19
of verity, and the Spirit of e	1 John 4:6
utterly given to the e of Balaam	Jude 11
ESCAPE ESCAPED	
he e out of their hands	John 10:39
into the sea, and e to land	Acts 27:44

ESCAPE ESCAPED CONT.	
How shall we e if we despise	Heb.2:3
ETERNAL	
I do, that I may have e life	Matt.19:16
in danger of e damnation	Mark 3:29
that I may inherit e life	Mark 10:17
but have <i>e</i> life	John 3:15
but have <i>e</i> life	John 3:16
think ye have e life	John 5:39
and I give unto them e life	John 10:28
e life is the gift of God	Rom,6:23
fight of faith, lay hand on e life	1Tim.6:12
you unto his e glory	1Pet.5:10
he hath promised us, even e life	1 John 2:25
no manslayer hath e life	1 John 3:15
God hath given unto us <i>e</i> life	1 John 5:11
know how that ye have e life,	
EVERLASTING	
cast into e fire	Matt.18:8
and shall inherit <i>e</i> life	Matt.19:29
on him have E life	John 6:40
with e destruction	2Thess.1:9
e consolation2	Thess.2:16
EVERY	
e tree which bringeth not forth	Matt 3:10
but by e word that procedeth	
and told e And what	
you that of e idol word	
and told e And what	
came to him from e quarter	
e knee shall bow	
e creature groaneth	
e good gift	

EVIL	
all manner of e	Matt.5:11
if ye then which are e	Matt.7:11
O e servant	
deeds were e	John 3:19
the e which I would	Rom.7:19
Abhor that which is e	Rom.12:9
Put away that e person	1 Cor 5:13
set in e works	Col 1:21
appearance of e	1 Thess.5:22
the root of all e	1Tim.6:10
EXALT EXALTED	
e himself	Luke 14:11
If a man e himself	2 Cor.11: 20
hath highly e him	Phil 2:9
that he may e you	1Pet 5:6
EXAMINE	
behold, I have e him	Luke 23:14
If we this day are e	Acts 4:9
he e the keepers	Acts 12:19
to be scourged and to be e	Acts 22:24
they which should have e him	Acts 22:29
let a man e himself	2 Cor.11:28
because he is spiritually e	1 Cor 2:14
EXAMPLE	
and loth to make an e of her	Matt 1:19
After these e shall it be	Luke 18:30
I have given you an e	John 13:15
after the e o Christ	Rom 15:5
These are <i>e</i> to us	1 Cor 10:6
happened unto them for an e	1 Cor 10:11
as ve have us for an a	

EXAMPLE CONT	
ye were an e to all that believe in	1 Thess 1:7
our selves an e unto you	2 Thess 2:9
be thou an <i>e</i>	
leaving us an e	1Pet.2.21
EXCEEDING EXCEEDINGLY	
They were <i>e</i> glad	Matt.2:10
An e high mountain	Matt.4: 8
rejoice and be e glad	Matt.5:11
prepareth an e and	2 Cor.4:17
the e greatness	Eph.1:19
e riches of his grace	Eph.2:7
Able to do e abundantly	Eph.3: 20
EXCELLENT	
a more e way	1Cor.12:31
EXCEPT	
e your righteousness exceed	Matt 5:20
e ye be converted	Matt 18:3
away his wife e it be for fornication	Matt 5:32
e he first bind the strong man	Matt 12:29
e ye repent	Luke13:4
e ye be born again	John 3:3
e they be sent	Rom.10:15
<i>e</i> it die	1Cor.15:36
e it be of mine infirmities	2 Cor 12:5
e ye be castaways	2 Cor 13:5
EXHORT EXHORTATIONS	
e preached he	Luke 3:18
and e them saying	Acts 3:40
a thom all that with nurness	A ote 12.22

EXHORT EXHORTATIONS CONT	
e your ownselves	Col 3:16
Our e was not to bring you to error	1Thess 1:3
e and comforted and besough	t1Thess 2:11
we bessech and e you in the Lord	1 Thess 4:1
And give you e	1 Thess 5:13
are such we command and e	2 Thess 3:12
e therefore, that above all things	1 Tim 2:1
to reading, to e and to doctrine	1 Tim 4:13
reprove, rebuke e with all	2 Tim 4:2
able to e with wholesome learning	Titus 1:9
e that they be sober minded	Titus 2:6
these things teach and e	1 Tim 6:3
E servants to be obedient	Titus 2:9
These things speak and e	e Titus 2:15
But e one another daily	Heb 3:13
But let us e one another	Heb 10:25
brethren suffer the word's of e	Heb 13:22
I e which am also an elder	1 Peter 5:1
e and testifying how that this	1 Peter 5:12
to write unto you, to e you	Jude :3
EXPEDIENT	
that it is e for us, that one man die	[John 12:50
it is e for you	John 16:7
it was e that one man	John 18:14
but all things are not e	1 Cor 12:22
For this is <i>e</i> for you	2 Cor 8:20
It is not e for me doubt to rejoice	2 Cor 12:1
EYE EYES	
if thy right <i>e</i> offend thee	Matt. 5: 29
which opened the e	John 11:37
e hath not seen	
twinkling of an e	
VALUE ATUR A	

EYE EYES CONT.	
The <i>e</i> of your understanding	Eph. 1:18
e of the Lord	
e of his majesty	
The lust of the e	
EYESERVICE	
not with e as menpleasers	Eph. 6:6
not with e as menpleasers [_
${f F}$	
FABLES	
either give heed to f	1 Tim. 1:4
profane and old wives f	
and shall be given unto f	2 Tim 4:4
not taking heed to Jews f	
followed not deceivable f	2 Peter 1:16
FACE	
f did shine as the sun	Matt. 17:2
<i>f</i> of my Father	Matt.18:10
but then f to f	1 Cor.13:12
all with open f	2 Cor.3:18
with stood him f to the f	Gal. 2:11
his natural f	James 1:23
From whose f	Rev 20:11
FAIL	
heavens that f no	tLuke 12:33
And men's hearts shall f them	
that thy f not	Luke 22:32
shall; f or tongues shall cease	1 Cor 13:8
thy years shall not f	Heb 1:12
I will not f thee nor forsake thee	Heb 13
vet f in one point	Iames 2:10

FAITH	
ye of little <i>f</i>	Matt 6:30
found so great f	Matt 8:10
f as a grain	
If ye have <i>f</i>	Mat .21:21
have f in God	Mark 11:22
Thy f hath saved thee	Luke 7:50
Increase our f	Luke 17:5
Holy Ghost and of f	Acts 11:24
opened the door of f	Acts 14:7
established in the f	Acts 16:5
justified by f	Rom 3:28
we have access by f	Rom 5:2
the word of f	Rom 10:8
f cometh by hearing	Rom 10:17
the measure of f	Rom. 12:3
though I have all f	1Cor. 13:2
And now abideth f	1Cor. 13:13
we walk by f	2 Cor.5:7
f of the Son	Gal. 2:20
of the household of f	Gal. 6:10
in your hearts by f	Eph. 3:17
One Lord, one f	Eph 4:5
taking the shield of f	f Eph. 6:16
your work of f	1 Thess.1:3
and the work of f	2 Thess. 1:11
he hath denied the f	1Tim.5:8
erred from the f	1Tim.6:10
the unfeigned f	2Tim. 1:15
I have kept the f	2 Tim.4:7
true heart in a full f	fHeb 10:22
f is the substance	Heb. 11:1
without f it isimpossibleto please him	Heb.11:6
These all died in f	
finisher of our f	Heb 12.2

FAITH CONT.	
trying of your f	James 1:3
let him ask in f	James 1:6
f if it hath not works	James 2:17
the prayer of f	
FAITHFUL	
the prayer of f	James 5:15
good and f servant	Matt.25:21
thou hast been f	Luke 19:17
man be found f	1Cor.4:2
<i>F</i> is he that	
Lord is <i>f</i>	
without f it is	
This is a f saying	
Thou to f men	2Tim.2:2
It is a f saying	
f that promised	
judged him f	
he is f	
be thou f unto death	
true and f	Rev.21:5
FAITHLESS	
O generation crooked and f	Matt17:17
Of generation	
and be not f but believing	
FALL FALLING	
great was the f	Matt.7:27
f down and worship	
-	Matt.10:29
shall they not both f	
Whosoever shall f	
head lest he f	

FALL FALLING CONT.	
ye are f from grace	Cal 5.4
f unto reproach	
rich f into temptation	
•	
if they shall f away	
count it all joy when ye f into divers	
f into condemnation	
Jews an occasion of f	
Keep you from f	Jude 24
FALSE	
Beware of f prophets	Matt.7:15
many bare f witness	Mark 14:56
by f accusation	Luke 19:48
are f apostles2	
f accusers	
not f accusers	
FAMINE	
here shall be f	Matt.24:7
f and troubles	
FASHION FASHIONED	
We never saw it on this f	Mark 2:12
And f not your selves	
the f of his countenance was changed	
can skill of the f of the earth	
make it according to the f	
be like f unto the shape of his Son	
why hast thou made me on this f	
f not your selves like unto. this world	
the f of this world oeth away	
If my self to all men	
f themselves like unto the apostles	
until Christ be f in you	
f like unto his glorious hody	

FAST FASTING	
when ye f	fMatt.6:16
thy disciples f not	Matt. 9:14
If twice in the week	Luke18:12
Give yourself to f	f1Cor.7:5
FATHER	
Our F which art in heaven	Matt.6:9
for your heavenly <i>F</i>	Matt.6:32
he that loveth his f	Matt.10:37
in the name of the F	Matt. 28:19
about my F business	Luke 2:49
f, I have sinned against you	Luke 15:21
F, forgive them	Luke 23:34
F, into thy hands	Luke 23:46
All that the F giveth	John 6:37
A liar and the f of it	John 8:44
I and my F are one	John10:30
No man can come unto meexcept the F	John 6:44
and I will pray the F	John 14:16
F the hour is come glorify thy Son	John 17:1
we cry Abba F	Rom.8:15
One God and F of all	Eph.4:6
f provoke not your	_
glory of God the F	_
it pleased the F	
F of light	James 1:17
An advocate with the F	
the love of the <i>F</i>	1 John 2:15
of love the F hath	1 John 3:1
F there are three	1 John 5:7
FAULT	
Tell him his f	
I find no f	Luke 23:4

FAULT CONT.	
confess your fJames 5:10	6
buffeted for your f1 Peter 2:20	
without f it is impossibleHeb.11:	6
FAULTLESS	
f and pure, and the sons of GodPhil 2:1:	5
To present you fJude 2	
f unto the coming of our Lord1 Thess 5:2	
Yea, and a bishop must be f 1 Tim 3:	2
if they be found f 1Tim 3:10	
f the husband of one wifeTitus 1:	6
a bishop must be fTitus 1:	
first testament had been f Heb 8:	
and to present you f	4
FEAR	
f him which is able	8
F not little flockLuke 12:3	
No f in love 1John 4:19	8
FEARFUL	
why are ye f O ye of little faith Matt 8:20	6
Why are ye so f	
and pestilence: and f things Luke 21:1	
But a f looking for judgmentHeb 10:2	
It is a f thing to fallHeb 10:3	
FEARFUL CONT.	
the f and unbelieving Rev 21:	8
FEED	
f my lambs	5
<i>f</i> my sheep John 21: 16,1	
f the congregation of GodActs 20:20	
enemy hunger, f himRom	

FEET	
kissed his f	Luke 7:38
at the f of Jesus	
f are swift to shed blood	
beautiful are the f	
ll things under his f	
your f shod	Eph 6:15
steps for your f	Heb 12:13
stood upon their f	
EFFCAUNC	
FEIGNING Leve broth only with out f	1 Datan 1.22
Love brotherly without f	1 Peter 1:22
FELLOWSHIP	
apostles' doctrine and f	Acts 2: 42
called unto the f	1 Cor 1: 9
f of the Holy Ghost	2 Cor 13:14
right hand of f	Gal 2:9
because of the f	Phil 1:5
then have we \hat{f}	
FERVENT	
f desire of the creatures	Rom 8:19
f mind to God	
f in spirit	
Your f mind toward me	
hath a f mind	
concerning f	
the f prayer of a	
melt with f heat	
FEW	
f there be that find it	Matt 7.1/
but the laborers are f	
seven, and a f little fishes	
many are called and f be chosen	
a f small fishes	
THE PROPERTY AND ADDRESS OF THE PROPERTY OF TH	I ZIELLIN ().

FEW CONT.	
upon a f sick folk and healed them	Mark 6:5
They had a f small fishes	Mark 8:7
shall be beaten with f stripes	Luke 12:48
are there f that shall be saved	Luke 13:23
and that within this f days	Acts 1:5
the chief women not a f	Acts 17:4
and of men, not a f	Acts 17:12
FIGHT	
then would my ministers surely f	John 18:36
So f I, not as one that beateth the air	1 Cor 9:26
shall prepare himself to f	1 Cor 14:8
f a good f	1Tim 1:18
f against the soul	1 Pet 2:11
and will f against them	Rev 2:16
These shall f with the Lamb	Rev 17:14
FILL FULFILL	
Elisabeth Was f with the holy Ghost	Luke 1:41
The God of hope f You	Rom 15:13
Might be f with all	Eph 3:19
to f all things	Eph 4:10
f with the Spiri	tEph 5:18
be ye warmed and f	James 2:16
FILTHY	
Let no f communication proceed	Eph 4:29
f speaking out of your mouths	Col 3:8
not given to f lucre	1 Tim 3:3
${\bf nor\ greedy\ unto}\ f\ {\bf lucre}\$	1Tim 3:8

FILTHY CONT.	
because of f lucre	Titus 1:11\
FIND	
seek and ye shall f	Matt 7:7
for my sake shall f it	Matt 10:39
his ways past f out	Rom 11:33
and f grace to help	Heb 4:16
FIRE	
cast into the f	Matt 3:10
the tongue is a f	James 3:6
tried with f	
cast into a lake of f	Rev 20:10
with f and brimstone	Rev 21:8
FIRST	
Seek ye f	Matt 6: 33
Many that be f	Matt 19:30
The f and great commandment	Matt 22:38
called Christians f in Antioch	Acts 11:26
f that should rise	Acts 26:23
<i>f</i> man Adam	1 Cor 15:45
a departing f	2 Thess 2:3
if judgment f	1 Peter 4:17
for he <mark>f</mark> loved us f	1 John 4:19
left thy f love	Rev 2:4
and do the f works	Rev 2:5
f heaven and the f earth	Rev 21:1
FLAME	
I am tormented in this f	Luke 16: 24
in a f of fire in a bush	Acts7:30
His ministers a f of fire	
and his eyes were as a f of fireRev 1:14	

hath his eyes like unto a f of fire Rev 2:18

FLAME CONT

His eyes were as a f of fireRev 19:12 FLEE and f into Egypt and abide there Matt 2:13 f into another Matt 10:23 f into the mountains Matt 24:16 f also youthful lusts2 Tim 2:22 FLESH FLESHLY willing but f is weak Matt 26:41 f the law of sin Rom 7:25 f mind is enmity against God Rom 8:7 no f should rejoice1 Cor 1:29 soweth in his f......Gal 6:8 wrestle not against f......Eph 6:12 no confidence in the f......Phil 3:3 shewed in the f......1 Tim 3:16 pertaining to the f......1 Peter 3:18 going after strange fJude 7 abstain from f Lusts......1 Peter 2:11 **FLOCK** sheep of the f shall be scattered Matt 26:31 watching their f by nightLuke 2:8 Fear not little *f*......Luke 11:32

FLOCK CONT.	
be one f, and one shepherd	John 10:16
and to all the f	Acts 20:28
feed Christ's f	1 Peter 5:2
FLOWER	
and his flower f away	James 1:10
glory of man is as the f of grass	James 1:24
and the flower f away	James 1:24
FOLLOW	
do not thou f	Acts 23:21
Let us f those things	Rom 14:19
<i>f</i> for love	1 Cor 14:1
But I f after	Phil 3:12
f that which is good	1 Thess 5:15
and f righteousness	2 Tim 2:22
FOLLOW CONT.	
f not that which is evil	3 John :11
Their works shall f them	Rev 14:13
FOOL FOOLISH	
whosoever saith thou f	Matt 5:42
Ye f and blind	
Ye f did not he that made that	Luke 11:40
Thou f this night, will they fetch	Luke 12:20
Of and slow of heart to believe	Luke 24:25
their f hearts were blinded	
themselves wise, they became f	Rom 1:22
by a f nation	Rom 10:19
is to them that perish f	1 Cor 1:18
the wisdom of this world f	1 Cor 1:21
through f of preaching	1 Cor 1:21
and unto the Greeks f	1 Cor 1.23

FORSAKE	
let him f himself	Matt 16:24
my God my God why has thou f me	Matt 27:46
let us not f the fellowship	Heb 10:25
I will not fail thee nor f thee	Heb 13:3
And they have f the right way	2 Peter 3:2
If a woman f her husband	Mark 10:12
FOUGHT	
f with beasts at Ephesus	1 Cor 15:43
I have f a good fight	2 Tim 4:7
Michael and his angels f	Rev 12 :7
and the dragon f and his angels	Rev 12:7
FOUND	
not f so great faith Ma	tt 8:10 James 3:11
f with child of the Holy Ghos	Matt 1:18
when ye have f him bring me word	Matt 2:8
and f the child, with Mary his mother	Matt 2:11
$\operatorname{not} f$ so great faith	Matt 8:10
he had f one precious pearl	Matt 13:46
FOUNDATION	
laid the f on a rock	Luke 6:48
Lest after, he hath laid the f	Luke 14:29
have built on another man's f	fRom 15:20
before the f of the world was laid	Eph 1:4
for themselves a good f	1 Tim 6:19
the f of God standeth sure	2 Tim 2:10
laying again the f of repentance	Heb 6:1
looked for a city having a f	Heb 11:10
But the f of God standeth sure	2Tim 2:10
the wall of the city had twelve f	Rev 21.14

FOUNTAIN	
Doth a f send forth at one place	1
them unto f of living watersRev 7:1	
of the f of the water of lifeRev 21:	
FREE	
The truth shall make you f John 8:3	2
Ye are then made f from sin Rom 6:1	
if thou mayest be f	
being a servant, is the Lord's f	
there is neither bond nor f	
As f and not as using your liberty 1 Peter 2:1	
be dead she is f from the lawRom 7:	
FRIEND	
man bestow his life for his f John 15:1	4
and he was called the f of God James 2:2	
Whosoever will be a fJames 4:	
if ye be f to your brethren only	
thine own house and to thy f	
FRUIT	
good tree bringeth forth good f	7
blessed is the f of thy wombLuke 1:4	
the earth bringeth forth ftMark 4:2	
it bringeth forth much f	
And every branch that beareth f	
But the f of spirit is love	
FULFILL	
All this was done, to f	2
f that which was spoken Matt 2:1	
it becometh us to f all righteousness Matt 3:1	

FULFIL CONT.	
come to destroy them, but to f them	Matt 5:17
all the law is f in one word	
f all enjoyment of goodness	
unto you, that your joy may be f	
FULNESS	
In the f of time God sent forth	Gal 4:4
fulfilled with all manner of f	
that in him should all f dwell	
f of the Godhead bodily	
G	
GAVE	
g them power over unclean	
blessed, and brake, and g	
And he g her never a word	
who g thee this power?	
I was an hungered, and ye g	
I thirsted: and ye g me drink	
g it them saying drink of it	
g them for the potters field	
and g him to drink	
g large money unto the soldiers	
g unto Simon to name Pete	
$oldsymbol{g}$ no fruit	
and g him reverence	
GARDEN	
and sowed in his g	Luke 13:19
Cedron, where was a g	
GARMENT	
John had his g of camel's hair	Matt 3:4
man which had not on a wedding g	

GARMENT CONT.	
hast not on a wedding g	Matt 22:12
him they parted his g	Matt 27:35
they divided my g among them	Matt 27:35
and touched his g	Mark 5:27
many spread their g	Mark 11:8
his g and immediately	Luke 8:44
his g was white and shone	Luke 9:29
laid aside his upper g	John 13:4
And they put on him a purple g	John 19:2
took his g and also his coat	John 19:23
and g which Dorcas had made	Acts 9:39
wax old as doth a g	Heb 1:11
your g are moth eaten	James 5:2
clothed with a linen g	Rev 1:13
have not defiled their g	
long white g were given	Rev 6:11
watcheth and keepeth his g	Rev 17:5
GATE	
Enter in at the straight g	Matt 7:13
wide is the g , and broad is the wa	
But straight is the g	
my congregation; and the g	Matt 16:18
and the g was shut up	
Lazarus, which lay at his g	Luke 16:20
laid at the g of the temple	
g that leadeth unto the city	
suffered without the gate	
twelve g , and at the g twelve angels,	
GATHER GATHERETH	
and g the wheat into his garner	Matt 3:12
g you not treasure upon the earth	Matt 6:19
σ ve treasure together in heaven	

GATHER GATHERETH CONT.	
Do men g grapes of thorns	Matt 7:16
g not with me scattereth	Matt 12:30
$oldsymbol{g}$ together in my name	Matt 18:20
And anon many g together	rMark 2:2
shall g together his elect	Mark 13:27
that g riches, and is not rich in God	Luke 12:21
would I have g thy children together	Luke.13:34
GIVEN	
Ask and it shall be g you	Matt 7:7
g you even in that same hour	Matt 10:19
All things are g unto me	Matt 11:27
it is g to know the mystery	Mark 3:11
g authority to his servants	Mark 13:34
and he hath g his only Son	John 3:16
nothing at all, except it be g	John 4:27
would have g thee water of life	John 4:10
g all things into his hand	John 4:35
likewise hath he g to the Son	John 5:26
Father hath g me to finish	John 5:36
and that shall be g	Luke 6:38
g to know the secrets of the	Luke 8:10
GODLY	
singleness and g pureness	2 Cor 1:12
For ye sorrowed g	2 Cor 7:9
g sorrow causeth repentance	2 Cor 7:10
According as his g power	2 Pet.1:3
partakers of the g nature	2 Peter 1:4
GUIDE GUIDED	
Woe be unto you, blind g	Matt 23:16
hlind σ which strain	Matt 23.24

GUIDE GUIDED CONT.	
g our feet into the way of peaceLuke 1:	79
Judas, which was g to them	
how can I except I had a g	
And the Lord g your hearts 2 Thess 3	
~ .	
Christ, g our journey unto you	
g your hearts, unto the love of God	
and bear children, and g the house1 Tim 5:	15
GUILE	
and that shall be gLuke 6:	38
right Israelite, in whom is no g	47
I being crafty, took you with g	
neither was it with g1 Thess 2	
aside all maliciousness, and all g1 Peter 2	
neither was there g found in his mouth	
his lip's that they speak not g	
in their mouths was found no g	
in their mouths was round no g	т.
GUILTY	
not g of anything worthy of death Acts 23:	29
unworthily shall be g of1 Cor 11:	27
one point, he is g in all James 2:	10
Н	
HABITATION	
an h for God in the Spirit Eph 2:	22
Behold your h shall be left untoLuke 13:	
receive you into everlasting h Luke 16	6:9
His <i>h</i> be void	
an h not made with hands 2 Cor 5	
made an h for God in the SpiritEph 2:	
but left their own h	
is become the harf devils Day 19	

HAND	
Whose fan is in his h	Matt 3:12
for the kingdom of heaven is at h	Matt 4:17
and the kingdom of God is at h	Mark 1:15
sat him down on the right h of God	Mark 16:19
And the h of the Lord was with him	Luke 1:66
h to the plow, and looketh back	Luke 9:62
and hath given all things into his h	John 3:35
to take them out of my Fathers h	John 10:29
for he is on my right h	
as though the day of Christ were at h	
on the right h of the majesty on high	
For the time is at h	
НАРРУ	
h are ye, if ye do them	John 13:17
I think myself h king Agrippa	Acts 26:2
H is he that condemneth not himself	Rom 14:22
we count them <i>h</i> which endure	
Yea, h are ye if any trouble happen	
for the name of Christ, h are ye	
HARD	
This is an h saying, who can abide the	John 6:60
h for thee to kick against the pricks	Acts 9:5
many things to say, and h to be uttered	
HARLOT	
that publicans and h	Matt 21:31
them the members of an h	1 Cor 6:15
coupleth himself with an h	1 Cor 6:16
By faith, the h Rahab	
was not Rahah the h justified	Iames 2:25

HATE	
and shall h one another	Matt 24:10
what Do good to them that h you	Matt 5:44
but what I h that do I	
brethren though the world h you	1 John 3:13
they that shall h the whore	Rev 17:16
HEAD	
didst not anoint my h	Luke 7:46
lift up your <i>h</i>	Luke 21:28
the h of every man	1 Cor 11:3
$m{h}$ of the congregation	Eph 1:22
the h cornerstone	Eph 2:20
the h of the body	Col 1:18
HEAL HEALING	
and h all manner of sickness	Matt 4:23
to \boldsymbol{h} the broken hearted	Luke 4:18
me this proverb, physician h thyself	Luke 4:23
And h the sick that are there	Luke 10:9
would ready descend, and h his son	John 4:47
converted, and I should h them	John 12:40
HEAVEN	
likewise Joy shall be in h	Luke 15:7
sinned against h and thee	Luke 15:18
Sooner shall h and earth perish	Luke 16:17
Which is gone into h	1 Peter 3:22
НОРЕ	
my flesh shall rest in h	Acts 2:26
And have h towards God	Acts 24:15
All h that we should be saved	Acts 27:20
for the k of Israel I am bound	A ata 20.20

HOPE CONT.	
contrary to h believed in h	Rom 4:18
<i>h</i> of the praise that shall be	Rom 5:2
experience, bringeth h	Rom 5:4
And h maketh not ashamed	Rom 5:5
which subdueth them in h	Rom 8:20
or we are saved by h	Rom 8:24
But h that is seen is not h	Rom 8:24
in h should be partaker of his h	1 Cor 9:10
abideth faith, h , and love	1 Cor 13:13
HORN	
hath raised up an h of salvation unto us	Luke 1:69
HOUR	
given you, even in that same h	Matt 10:19
not what h your Lord doth come	Matt 24:42
From the sixth h , was there darkness	Matt 27:45
And about the ninth h Jesus cried	Matt 27:46
the <i>h</i> might pass from him	Mark 14:35
the third h and they crucified him	Mark 15:25
And at the ninth h Jesus cried with	Mark 15:34
at an h when ye think not	Luke 12:40
at the ninth <i>h</i> of prayer	Acts 3:1
HOUSE HOUSEHOLD	
And if a h be divided against itself	Mark 3:25
that <i>h</i> cannot continue	Mark 3:25
He is like a man which built an h	Luke 6:48
the flood beat upon that h and	Luke 6:48
in my Father's h are many mansions	John 14:2
and brake bread from h to h	Acts 2:46
For we know that if our earthly h	2 Car 5.1

HOUSE HOUSEHOLD	
and specially for them of his h	1 Tim 5:8
HUMBLE HUMBLETH	
shall <i>h</i> himself as this little child	Matt 18:4
he that <i>h</i> himself, shall be exalted	Matt 23:12
and giveth grace to the h	
HUNGER	
Blessed (are) they, which h	Matt 5:6
He that cometh to me, shall not h	
if thine enemy h feed him	Rom 12:20
If any man h	
often, in h and thirst	2 Cor 11:27
to kill with sword, and with h	
They shall h no more	Rev 7:16
Blessed are ye that h now	Matt 6:21
HURT	
and nothing shall h you	Luke 10:19
shall not be h of the second death	Rev 2:11
and oil and wine see thou h not	Rev 6:6
H not the earth, neither the sea	Rev7:3
And if any man will h them	Rev 11:5
HUSBAND	
Then Joseph her <i>h</i>	Matt 1:19
Let the h give unto the wife due	I Cor 7:3
or be reconciled unto her h again	1 Cor 7:11
For the <i>h</i> is the head of the wife	Eph 5:23
the <i>h</i> of one wife	1 Tim 3:2
And let not the <i>h</i> put away his wife	1 Cor 7:11
HYPOCRISY	
full of h and iniquity	Matt 23:28
of the Pharisees which is h	

h of the praise that shall be	Rom 5:2
speak falsely through h	
lest ye fall into h	
1000 y C 1411 11100 1	, during eviz
I	
IDOL	
either of the i	.1 Cor. 5:10
we are sure that there is none I	1 Cor 8:4
flee from worshipping of <i>i</i>	1 Cor 10:14
which is worshipping of <i>I</i>	
and to eat meats offered up unto I	Rev 2:21
IDOLS-IDOLATRY	
themselves from things offered to <i>I</i>	Acts 21:2
or covetous, or a worshipper of <i>i</i>	
that are dedicated unto I	
and to eat meats offered up unto 1	
IGNORANCE IGNORANT	
For they being <i>i</i> of righteousness	Rom 10:3
But if any man be i let him be i	
have compassion on the <i>i</i>	
be not <i>i</i> of this one thing	
IMAGE	
we have borne the i of the earthy	1 Cor 15:49
so shall we bear the <i>i</i> of the heavenly	
and the very <i>i</i> of his substance	Heb 1:3
to give a life unto the <i>i</i> of the beas	tRev 13:15
the beast, and of his i	Rev 15:2
not worshipped the beast neither his i	Rev 20:4
IMPOSSIBLE	
neither should anything be i unto you	. Matt 17:20
with men this is <i>I</i>	
and said with men it is <i>i</i>	Mark10:2

IMPOSSIBLE CONT.	
For with God, can nothing be <i>i</i>	Luke 1:37
The things which are <i>i</i> with men	Luke 18:27
in which it was <i>i</i> for God to lie	Heb 6:18
But without faith it is i to please him	Heb 11:6
INCORUPTIBLE	
9but we to obtain an <i>i</i> crown	1 Cor 9:25
and the dead shall rise <i>i</i>	1 Cor 15:52
corutible must put on <i>i</i>	1 Cor 15:53
INCREASE INCREASETH	
said unto the Lord: i our faith	Luke 17:5
He must <i>i</i> but I must decrease	John 3:30
but God gave i	1 Cor 3:6
but God that giveth the <i>i</i>	1 Cor 3:7
and i the fruits of your righteousness	2 Cor 9:10
hath it's measure and i of the body	Eph 4:16
knit together and i with the i of God	Col 2:19
And the Lord <i>i</i> you, and make you	1 Thess 3:12
that ye <i>i</i> more and more	1Thess 4:10
they will <i>i</i> unto greater ungodliness	2 Tim 2:16
INDIGNATION	
when his disciples saw it, they had i	Matt 26:8
of the synagogue answered with <i>i</i>	Luke 13:14
Sadducees, and were full of i	Acts 5:17
[shall come] <i>i</i> and wrath	Rom 2:8
it caused i	2 Cor 7:11
INORDINATE	
every brother that walketh i	2 Thess 3:6
not ourselves <i>i</i> among you	2 Thess 3:7
walk among you I	2Thess 3.11

INFIRMITY
had a spirit of i eighteen yearsLuke 13:11
because of the i of your 6:19
Ye know how through <i>i</i> of the flesh
he himself also is compassed with iHeb 5:2
for the which $[i]$ sake he is boundHeb 5:3
maketh men high priests which have IHeb 7:28
INHERIT
what shall I do, that I may i externalMark 10:17
unrighteous shall not i the kingdom1 Cor 6:9
nor pillers, shall i the kingdom of God1 Cor 6:10
flesh and blood cannot i the kingdom1 Cor 15:50
through faith and patience <i>i</i> theHeb 6:12
He that overcometh, shall <i>i</i> all thingsRev 21:7
INFORM
that he might <i>i</i> him1 Cor 2:16
INTERCESSION
but the Spirit maketh great i for usRom 8:26
he maketh i for the saints Rom 8:27
the right hand of God, and maketh IRom 8:34
INTERCESSION CONT
how he maketh i to God, against IsraelRom 11:2
he even liveth to make i for them

J

JEALOUS	
For I am j over you	2 Cor 11:2
are j over you amiss	Gal 4:17
JESUS	
and thou shalt call his name J	Matt 1:21
when J was come into Peters house	Matt 8:14
counsel against J to put him to deat	hMatt 27:1
J took bread: and when he had	Mark 14:22
J the Son of God, let us hold fast the	Heb4:14
confesseth that J is the Son of	1 John 4:15
JOIN JOINED	
durst no man j himself to them	Acts 5:13
Go near and j thyself to yonder chariot	Acts 8:29
JOY JOYOUS	
enter thou into the j of thy Lord	Matt 25:21
the babe leaped in my womb for j	Luke 1:44
j is made in the presence of the	Luke15:10
but your sorrow shall be turned to j	John 16:20
that my j is [the j] of you all	
exceeding j in all our tribulation	2 Cor 7:4
But the fruit of the Spirit is, love j	Gal 5:22
Yes, ye are our glory and j	1Thess 2:20
write we unto you, that your j may be	1 John 1:4
before the presence of his glory with j	Jude 24
JUDGE JUDGEMENT	
killeth, shall be in danger of j	Matt 5:21
j not, that ye be not j	Matt 7:1
Of thine own mouth have I i thee	Luke 19:22

though I j my j is true
of sin, and of righteousness, and of j John 16:8
the which he will j the world in Acts 17:31
the day when God shall j the secretsRom 2:16
why dost thou then j thy brother Rom 14:10
We shall be all brought before the <i>j</i> Rom 14:10
once to die, and after this the j Heb 9:27
JUST JUSTIFIED JUSTIFY
They which j yourselfLuke 16:15
He willing to j himself Luke 10:29
I hear I judge, and my judgement is j John 5:30
but the doers of the law shall be j Rom 2:13
gift came to j from many sinsRom 5:16
end of the law to j all that believe Rom 10:4
whatsoever things (are) jPhil 4:8
do unto your servants that which is j
a j recompense of rewardHeb 2:2
he is faithful and j to forgive us our sins 1 John 1:9
K
KEEP
Hear the word of God and k itLuke 11:28
man k my sayings he shall never see death John 8:51 if a man love me he will k my commandments John 14:23
From which if you k youselves
k silence in the congregation
Let your women k silence in the congregation 1 Cor. 14:3
k vourselves in the love of GodJude 21

KEY KEYS
The k of the kingdom of heaven
Taken away the k of knowledge Luke 11:52
Which hath the k of DavidRev 3:8
given the k of the bottomless pitRev9:
Having the k of the bottomless pitRev 20:
KILL
This is the heir come let us k him Matt 21:38
To save life or k itMark 3:4
Rise Peter <i>k</i> and eat Acts 10:13
and went about to k meActs 26:23
to k with sword and hungerRev 6:8
shall overcome them and k themRev11:
KIND KINDNESS
He is k to the unkindLuke 6:35
shewed us no little kActs 28:2
k of God leadeth thee to repentance Rom 2:4
k if thou continue in kRom 11:22
Be k one to another Rom 12:20
KING
Jesse begat David the k Matt 1:0
in the days of Herod the k Matt 2:
Where is he that was born k of the Jews Matt 2:2
for it is the city of the great k
behold thy k cometh unto thee
saying Hail k of the Jews
k of k and Lord of Lords1 Tim 6:15
k of k and Lord of LordsRev 17:14
KISS
Whomsoever I do k that same is he
Thou gavest me no k Luke 7.4^{k}

KISS CONT.	
Hath not ceased to k my feet	Luke 7:45
Betrayest thuw the Son of msn with a k	
With an holyt k	
Greet one another with an holy k	
Greet ye one another with a k of charity	
KNEW	
and k her not till she had	Matt 1:25
that I never k them	Matt 7:23
but Je'sus k their thoughts	Matt 12:25
and they k him not	Matt 17:12
he k not the man	Matt 26:74
he k not the man	Mark 9:32
that k his masters will	Luke 12:47
KNOW	
ye shall k them by their frui	tMatt 7:16
I say unto you: I k you not	Matt 25:12
for ye k neither the day	Matt 25:13
To you it is given to k	Mark 4:11
k not when the Master of the	Mark 13:35
seeing I k not a man	Luke :34
Unto you is it given to k	
I k well Messiah shall come	John 4:25
that good shepherd, and k mine	John 10:14
but thou shalt k hereafter	John 13:7
we k that all things work for the	Rom 8:28
And to k the love of Christ	Eph 3:19
For I k whom I have believed	
But we k that, when he shall	John 3:2
I k thy works, and thy labou	rRev 2:2

KNOWLEDGE

I k thy works, and thy labourrRev 2:2

KNOWLEDGE CONT

D 41 . 1	D 2.20
By the lsw cometh the k of sin	
And filled with all k	
Love of Christ which passeth k	-
excellence of the k of Christ	Phil 3:8
treasures of wisdom and k	Col 2:3
k your faults one to another	James 5:16
KNOWN	
neither hid that it shall not be k	Luke 12:2
if ye had k me ye had k my Father	John 14:7
now after that ye had k God	Gal 4:9
yea rather are k of God	Gal 4:9
might be k by the congregation	
from an infant thow hast k God	
which have not k the deepness of Satan	
L	
LABOUR	
which bestowed much <i>l</i> on us	Rom 16:6
your <i>l</i> is not in vain in the Lord	
my companion in l	
in the faith and <i>l</i> of love	
I know thy works thy and thy l	
that they may rest from their <i>l</i>	
LADY	
to the elect \boldsymbol{l} and her children	2 John 1
now beseech I thee <i>l</i>	
now besette i thee t	4 JUIII 4.3
Lamb	
for thee to eat the passover l	
And made ready the passover l	Matt 14:16

LAMB CONT.	
Behold the L of God	John 1:29
Behold the L of God	
of Christ, as of a <i>l</i> undefiledd	1 Peter 1:19
L as though he had been killed	
him by the blood of the L	
LAME	
lest any <i>l</i> turn ye out of the way	Heb 12:13
the maimed the <i>l</i> and the blind	Luke 11:13
LAUGH LAUGHTER	
that weep now for ye shall l	Luke 6:21
Woe be to you that now l	Luke 11:25
l be turned to mourning	James 4:9
LAW	
Think not that I am come to destroy the l	Matt 5:17
or one title of the <i>l</i> shall not escape	Matt 5:18
could not be justified by the l	Acts 13:39
Sinned without <i>l</i>	Rom 2:12
Shall perish without <i>l</i>	Rom 2:12
not justified by the deeds of the l	
for the <i>l</i> made nothing perfect	Heb7:19
l of liberty, and continueth therein	James 1:25
LEAD	
And <i>l</i> us not into temptation	Matt 6:13
If the blind l the blind	Matt 15: 14
But when they <i>l</i> you	Matt 13:11
Take him, and <i>l</i> him away safely	Mark 14:44
and <i>l</i> him to the water	Luke 13:15
he will <i>l</i> you into all truth	John 16:13
l thee whither thou wouldest not	John 21:18
and shall I them unto fountains of waters	Rev 7·17

I E A DALL E A DALED	
LEARN LEARNED	. 44 11 30
Take my yoke on you and <i>l</i> of me	
Moses was <i>l</i> in all manner wisdom	
This only would I learn of you	
But ye have not so <i>l</i> Christ	_
have <i>l</i> in whatsoever state	
of whom thou hast l them1	Tim 3:14
LEAST	
one of these <i>l</i> commandments	Matt 5:19
<i>l</i> in the Kingdom of heaven	att 11:11
one of the <i>l</i> of these my brethren M	att 25:40
To whom <i>l</i> is forgivenL	uke 7:47
For he that is <i>l</i> among you all	Luke 9:4
l the same is faithful in muchLu	ıke 16:10
LEAVE LEAVETH	
no man that <i>l</i> house, or fatherLu	ıke 18:29
not <i>l</i> in thee one stone upon Lu	
I will not <i>l</i> you comfortless	
Peace I <i>l</i> with you, my peace	
I l the world again	
doth he not I the ninety and nine	
wilt not l my soul in hell	
that we should <i>l</i> the word of God	
LIE	
knoweth that I lie not2 C	or. 11:39
<i>l</i> in wait for us to deceive us	
L not one to another	-
they should believe <i>l</i>	
the truth in Christ, and <i>l</i> not1	
God, that cannot <i>l</i> hath promised	
It was impossible that Cod should l	

LIFE	
which sought the child's <i>l</i>	Matt 2:20
be not careful for your <i>l</i>	Matt 6:25
<i>l</i> for the redemption of many	Matt 20:28
righteous, into <i>l</i> eternal	Matt 25:46
that I may inherit eternal <i>l</i>	Mark 10:17
the world to come, eternal <i>l</i>	Mark 10:30
shall lose his life for my sake	Mark 8:35
<i>l</i> , in such holiness, and	Luke 1:75
<i>l</i> for my sake, the same shall	Luke 9:24
take no thought for your <i>l</i>	Luke 12:22
<i>l</i> he cannot be my disciple	Luke 14:26
<i>l</i> and the l was the light of men	John 1:4
That none should perish but have eternal l	John 3:15
but should have everlasting <i>l</i>	John 3:16
believeth on the Son hath hath eternal l	John 3:36
believeth not the Son shall not see l	John 3:36
given thee water of l	John 4:10
springing up into everlasting l	l John 4:14
gathereth fruit unto l eternal'	John 4:36
the Father hath <i>l</i> in himself	John 5:25
the Son to have <i>l</i> in himself	John 5:25
and giveth \boldsymbol{l} unto the world	John 6:33
I am that bread of l	John 6:35
eternal <i>l</i> to as manyasthou hast given him	John 17:2
no manslayer hath eternal <i>l</i>	1 John 3:15
LIGHT	
sat in darkness saw great l	Matt 4:16
Ye are the <i>l</i> of the world	Matt 5:14
Let your <i>l</i> so shine before men	Matt 5:16
moon shall not give her l	Matt 24:29
moon shall not give her l	Mark 13:24
A I to I the Centiles	Luka 2.22

LIGHT CONT.	
enter in may see the <i>l</i>	Luke 8:16
l shineth in the darkness	John 1:5
to bear witness of the L	John 1:7
He was not that L	John 1:8
but to bear witness of the L	John 1:8
that I is come into the world	John 3:19
men loved darkness more than l	John 3:19
I am the <i>l</i> of the world	John 8:12
but shall have the <i>l</i> of life	
there is no <i>l</i> in him	
LINEN (RAYNE)	
wrapped it in a clean <i>l</i> cloth	Matt27:59
l cloth, and laid him in a tomb	Mark 15:46
the l clothes laid by themselves	Luke 26:12
as it had been a large <i>l</i> cloth	Acts 11:5
clothed in pure and bright <i>l</i>	Rev 15:6
arrayed with pure and fine <i>l</i>	Rev 19:8
LOOSE LOOSED	
shall <i>l</i> on earth shall be	
I desire to be <i>l</i>	
had pity on that servant and l	
tongue was l and he spake plain	
and they <i>l</i> him	
l to them Barabbas	
bound lo eighteen years be l	
a wife seek not to be <i>l</i>	1 Cor 7:27
LOST	3.5 40
l sheep of the house of Israel	
salt have <i>l</i> its saltiness	
go after that which is <i>l</i>	
W/198 / 1981/1 18 1/11/8/11	

LOST CONT.	
and to save that which was <i>l</i>	. Luke 19:10
and would have no man <i>l</i>	2 Peter 3:9
LOVE LOVEST	
unto you, <i>l</i> your enemies	Matt 5:44
L the Lord thy God with all thine heart	
have the upper hand, the <i>l</i>	. Matt 24:12
l the Lord thy God with all thy heart	
you which hear, L your enemies	
God so <i>l</i> the world, he gave his onlybegotten Son	John 3:16
<i>l</i> me because I put my life from me	
faith, <i>l</i> , and peace,	
sound in the faith, In <i>l</i>	Titus 2:2
brotherly kindness, <i>l</i>	
LUCRE	
hich think that l is godliness	1 Tim 6:5
For covetousness of l	
not given to filthy l	
LUST	
looketh on a wife l after her	Matt 5:28
riches, and the <i>l</i> of other things	Mark 4:19
fulfill not the <i>l</i> of the flesh	Gal 5:16
l hath conceived it bringeth forth sin	. James 1:15
that is in the world through <i>l</i>	2 Peter 1:4
lesh in the <i>l</i> of uncleanness	.2 Peter 2:10
the l of the flesh. and l of the eyes	. 1 John 2:16
passeth away, and the <i>l</i> thereof 1	John 2:17M
M	
MAD	
And they said unto her thou art m	Act 12:15

MAD CONT.	
And was yet more <i>m</i> upon them	Acts 26:11
Much learning hath made thee <i>m</i>	
I am not m most noble Festus	Acts 26:25
MADE	
that these stones be <i>m</i> bread	Matt 4:3
thy faith hath <i>m</i> thee safe	
as touched it were <i>m</i> whole	Matt 14:36
ye have made it a den of thieves	Mark 11:17
m ready the Passover	
destroythis temple <i>m</i> with hands	Mark 14:58
build another <i>m</i> without hands	
shall be <i>m</i> straight, and	Luke 3:5
and the rough shall be <i>m</i> smooth	Luke 3:5
who <i>m</i> me a judge or a divider	Luke 12:14
All things were <i>m</i> by him	John 1:3
the world was <i>m</i> by	John 1:10
And the Word was m flesh	John 1:14
Wilt thou be m whole	John 5:6
m whole, sin no more	John 5:14
that God hath <i>m</i> that same Jesus	Acts 2:36
which God <i>m</i> with our fathers	Acts 3:25
prayer was <i>m</i> without ceasing	Acts 12:5
and <i>m</i> an oration unto them	Acts 12:21
circumcision is <i>m</i> uncircumcision	Rom 2:25
shall many be <i>m</i> righteous	Rom 5:19
are then made free from sin	
should be <i>m</i> of none effect	
God <i>m</i> the wisdom of this world foolishness	
We are m as it were the filthinessof the wrld	
he hath <i>m</i> him to be sin for us	
of a woman and <i>m</i> bond unto the law	
m us sit together in heavenly things	
which hath <i>m</i> of both one	-
ham himself of no reputation	-

MADE CONT.	
hath <i>m</i> a shew of them openly	Col 2:15
by whom also he <i>m</i> the worlds	Heb 1:2
who was <i>m</i> less than the angels	Heb 2:9
and was m perfect	Heb 5:9
And m us kings and Priests	
And hast m us unto our God	Rev 5:10
MALICIOUSNESS	
<i>m</i> and wickedness	1 Cor 6:8
concerning <i>m</i> be children1	Cor 14:20
m speaking corrupt1	
prating on us with <i>m</i> words	
m full of envy	
MAKER	
more than the <i>M</i>	. Rom 1:25
whose builder and <i>m</i> is God	Heb 11:10
These are <i>m</i> of sects	Jude :19
MASTER	
go in into thy m Joy	Matt 25:23
M, M and kissed him	Mark 14:45
<i>M</i> , what shall we do?	
Why call ye me <i>m m</i>	
And he said m say on	.Luke 7:40
is dead distress not the m	.Luke 8:49
MERCY	
I require <i>m</i> and not sacrifice	. Matt 12:7
<i>m</i> is on them that fear him	
master, have <i>m</i> on us	
but in the m of God	
on the vessels of <i>m</i>	
peace be on them, and m	
beloved, put on tender m	

MESSENGER	
I send my <i>m</i> before thy face	
When the <i>m</i> of John	
sent m before him	Luke 9:52
Now then we are <i>m</i>	2 Cor 5:20
the <i>m</i> of the congregations	2 Cor 8:23
m of Satan to buffet me	
am a m in bonds	
m of the seven congregations	Rev 1:20
MIND MINDS	
the m of the Gentiles	Acts 14:3
lighten the eyes of your m	Eph 1:18
follow not their <i>m</i>	Acts 23:21
they c their <i>m</i>	Acts 28:13
But their <i>m</i> were blinded	2 Cor 3:14
m of them which believe not	2 Cor 4:18
lighten the eyes of your m	Eph 1:18
shall keep your hearts and m	_
m were set in evil works	Col 1:21
with corrupt m	1 Tim 6:5
corrupt m and lewd	2 Tim 3:8
deceivers of m	
I will put my laws in their m	Heb 8:10
MINISTER MINISTRY	
let him be your <i>m</i>	Matt 21:26
not to be m unto, but to m	2Matt 21:28
obtained fellowship, in this m	
m to preach the atonement	
MOCK MOCKED	
To the Gentiles to be <i>m</i>	Matt 20:19

MOCK MOCKED CONT.	
and m Him saying Hail king of the Jews	Matt 27:29
<i>m</i> him, and smote him	
	2010 22100
MONEY	
the tables of the <i>m</i> changers	Matt 21:12
large m unto the soldiers	
nor <i>m</i> in their purses	Mark 6:8
he offered them m	Acts 8:18
MORTAL MORTALITY	
<i>m</i> men like unto you	Acts 14:15
reign therefore in your <i>m</i> body	
this <i>m</i> must put on immortality	
might appear in our m flesh	
MOTHER	
saw his wife's m	Matt 8:14
who is my <i>m</i>	Matt 12:48
The <i>m</i> of Jesus was there	John 2:1
MOURN	
Can the wedding children m	Matt 9:15
to m and to say to him one by one Is it I	Mark 13:9
as they m and wep	tMark 16:10
MOUTH	
opened his m and taught them	Matt 5:2
of the heart the <i>m</i> speaketh	Matt 12:43
and inquire at her m	Matt 24:57
in the <i>m</i> of two or three witnesses	Matt 28:16
give you a m and wisdom	Luke 21:15
the m of David	Acts 1:16
by the <i>m</i> of all his prophets	Acts 3:18
all m may be stopped	Rom 3:19
with the m is made unto Salvation	Rom10.10

MOUTH CONT.	
not muzzle the <i>m</i> of the ox	1 Cor 9:9
the <i>m</i> of two or three witnesses	2 Cor 13:1
MULTITUDE	
m with swords and staves	Matt 26:47
<i>m</i> of the people	Luke 1:10
m of heavenly soldiers	Luke 2:13
innumerable <i>m</i>	
great m of sick folk	John 5:3
the m came together	Acts 2:6
the <i>m</i> of them that believed	Acts 4:30
in m as the stars of the sky	Heb11:12
so great a m of witnesses	
MYSTERY	
m of the kingdom of God	Mark 4:11
m which was kept secret	
Behold I shew you a m	
the <i>m</i> of his will	
the <i>m</i> of Christ	_
for the <i>m</i> of that iniquity	-
that m of godliness	
N	
NAKED	
<i>n</i> and ye clothed me	Matt 25:36
fled from them <i>n</i>	Mark 14:52
fled out of the house <i>n</i> and wounded	
are <i>n</i> , and are buffeted	
found clothed and not <i>n</i>	
n and bare unto the eyes of him	
hand bare unto the eyes of min	

NAKED CONT.	
poor, blind, and <i>n</i>	Rev 3:17
desolate and n	Rev17:16
NAME	
and thou shalt call his <i>n</i> Jesu	sMatt 1:21
they shall call his <i>n</i> Emmanue	Matt 1:23
Hallowed be thy name	
n, of him that is Lord	Mark 11:10
saying, his n is John	Luke 1:13
saying, his n is John	Luke 1:63
there any other n given to men	Acts 4:12
NATION	
o shall it be with this evil n	Matt12:4
And For <i>n</i> shall rise against <i>n</i>	Matt 24:7
And teach all <i>n</i> baptizing them	Matt 28:19
He loveth our <i>n</i>	Luke 7:5
own <i>n</i> at Jerusalem	Acts 26:4
NATURAL	
the <i>n</i> use unto the unnatural	Rom 1:26
left the <i>n</i> use of the woman	
a n body; and it riseth a spiritual body1	Cor15:43
that belongeth unto the <i>n</i> son	Gal4:5
were <i>n</i> the children of wrath	
n brute beasts, made to betaken and destroy	ed2 Peter 2:12
NAY	
shall be Yea yea; N n	Matt 5:37
I tell you, N but except ye repent	Luke 13:3
And he said: N father Abraham	Luke 19:23
N but he deceaveth the people	John 7:12
<i>n</i> not so	Acts 16:37
N but by the law of faith	Rom 3:27
N sin was death unto me	

NAY CONT.	
should be Yea, yea ,and N, n	2 Cor 1:17
n, great is that mystery	1 Tim 4:16
NEIGHBOR	
love thine <i>n</i>	Matt 5:43
love thine <i>n</i> as thy self	fMatt 19:13
And her <i>n</i> and her cousin	Luke 1:58
was <i>n</i> unto him	Luke 9:36
But he that did his <i>n</i> wrong	Acts 7:27
NEVER	
unto them, that I n knew them	
n so seen in Israe	
<i>n</i> have condemned the innocent	Matt 12:7
ye n read Out of the mouth of babes	Matt 21:16
have ye n read what David did	Mark 2:23
shall <i>n</i> have forgiveness	Mark 3:29
NEW	
Neither do men put <i>n</i> wine	Matt 9:7
My blood of the <i>n</i> testament	Matt 26:28
I shall drink it <i>n</i> with you	Matt 26:29
Put it in his <i>n</i> tomb	Matt 27:60
What <i>n</i> doctrine is this	Mark 1:28
A <i>n</i> commandment give I unto you	John 13:34
NIGHT	
the child and his mother by n	Matt 2:13
fasted forty days and forty <i>n</i>	Matt 4:2
fasted forty days and forty n	Matt 4:2
three days and three n	Matt 12:40
disciples came by n	Matt 28:13
<i>n</i> he came unto them	Mark 6:48
this <i>n</i> before the cock crows	Mark 14:30

NIGHT CONT.	
watching their flock by <i>n</i>	Luke 2:8
continued all <i>n</i> in prayer	
his elect which cry day and n	
The same came to Jesus by <i>n</i>	
his elect which cry day and n	
• •	
NOISE	
as it were the <i>n</i> of thunder	Rev 6:1
0	
OATH	
but shalt perform thine o to God	Matt 5:33
he promised with an o	
he denied with an o	
And to perform the o	
God had sworn with an o	
and an o to confirm the thing	
of his council, he added an o	
not promised without an o	
neither by any other o	
OBEY	
both wind and sea o him	Matt 8:27
winds and water, and they o him	
thereunto o in the lusts of it	
his servants ye are to whom ye o	
o you more than God	
we ought more to o God	
God hath given to them that o him	
thereunto $\overset{\circ}{o}$ in the lusts of it	
OFFER OFFERED	
o thy gift at the altar	Matt 5:23
leave there thine o	
a also the other	

OFFER OFFERED CONT	
and if I be <i>o</i>	Phil 2:17
once o to take away the sins of many	Heb 9:28
ONE	
o jot or o title of the law	Matt 5:18
as o having power	
And I and my Father are o	John 10:30
that o man die for the people	John 11:50
but ye are all o in Christ Je'sus	Gal 3:28
o Lord, o faith, o baptism	Eph 4:5
OPEN OPENED	
and o their treasures, him	Matt 2:11
he o his mouth, them	Matt 5:2
hath not o this unto thee	Matt 16:17
privy that it shall not be o	Mark 4:22
of many hearts may be o	Luke 2:35
that heaven was o	Luke 3:21
Then o he their wits	Luke 24:45
shall ye see heaven o	John 1:51
To him the porter o	John 10:3
of my Father I have o to you	John 15:15
ORDAIN ORDAINED	
Thou hast o praise	Matt 21:16
And he o them	Mark 3:14
must one be o	Acts!:22
it is he that is o of God	Acts 10:42
when they had o them elders	Acts 14:23
ORDAIN ORDAINED	
which was o unto life	Rom 7:10
vessels of wrath o to damnation	Rom 9:22
God o before the world	1 Cor 2:7
so o I in all congregations	1 Cor 7:17

ORDAIN ORDAINED CONT.	
Even so also did the Lord o	1 Cor 9:14
And God hath also o	1 Cor13:28
o in the congregations	1Cor 16:11
we have a building o of God	2 Cor 5:1
He that hath o us for this thing	2 Cor 5:5
which God before o	
ORDER	
will I set in o when I come	1 Cor 11:24
honestly and in o	1 Cor 14:40
every man in his own o	1 Cor 15:23
be done honestly and in o	1 Cor 15:40
the o that ye keep	Col 2:5
after the o of Melchisedec	Heb 5:6
ORDINANCE	
resisteth the o of God	Rom 13:2
and o of the Lord	Luke 1:6
and shall change the o	Acts 6:14
by the o of the Angels	Act 7:53
resisteth the o of Go	dRom 13:2
keep the o even as I delivered	1 Cor 11:2
OUGHT	
these o ye to have done	Matt 23:23
whither he saw o	Mark 8:23
O we to give, or o we not	Mark 12:15
stand where it o not	Mark 13:14
these o ye to have done	Luke 11:42
same hour what ye o to say	Luke 12;12
six days in which men o to work	Luke 13:14
o not this daughter of Abraham	Luke 13:16

OUGHT CONT.	
O not Christ to have suffered	Luke 24:26
where men o to worship	John 4:20
by our law he o to die	
what thou o to do	Acts 10:6
ye o to receive the weak	Acts 20:35
what to desire as we o	Rom 8:26
the time ye o to be teachers	Heb 5:12
these things o not so to be	James 3:10
OUTWARD	
Appear beautiful o	Matt 23:27
Which is a Jew o	Rom 2:28
our o man perish	2 Cor 4:16
OVERCOME	
lest your hearts be o	Luke 22:34
was the more o with sleep	Acts20:9
shouldest o when thou art judged	Rom 3:4
upon him, and o him	,
we o strongly through his help	
Be not o of evil	Rom 12:21
But o evil with goodness	Rom 12:21
and ye have o that wicked one	
o them: for greater is he	1 John 4:4
born of God o the world	
the victory that o the world	1 John 5:4
to the congregations: He that o	Rev 2:11
P	
PAIN PAINED	
and is grievously <i>p</i>	Matt 8:6
shall go into everlasting p	
with much a deport of from him	

PAIN PAINED CONT	
and how am I p till it be ended	Luke 12:50
p was as the p that sting of a scorpion	Rev 9:5
neither shall there be p	
PARTAKER	
p of the root and fatnes	Rom 11:17
eareth in hope should be p	1 Cor 9:10
If others be p of this power over	1 Cor 9:12
which wait at the altar are p	1 Cor 9:13
Ye cannot be p of the Lords table	1 Cor 10:21
shall ye be p of consolation	
and p of his promise	
to be p of the inheritance	_
neither be p of other men's sins	
faithful and beloved, and p	
children were p of flesh and blood	
p of the celestial calling	
We are p of Christ	
become p of the Holy Ghost	
whereof all are p	
ye are p of Christ's passions	
a p of the glory that shall be	
ye should be p of the Godly nature	
PARTAKING	
p of the blood of Christ	1 Cor 10:16
p of the body of Christ	
PASSAGE	
ou now in my <i>p</i>	1 Cor 16:7
word of God may have free n	

PAST PASSED PASSOVER	
prepare us the p lamb	Luke 22:8
desired to eat this P	
which in time p was unprofitable to thee	Phil 12
Which in time <i>p</i>	
which so <i>p</i> their time	Heb 10:33
PATH	
make his p straight	Mark 1:3
straight p for your feet	
PATIENCE PATIENT	
have p with me I will pay it all	Matt 18:24
and bring forth fruit with p	Luke 8:15
With your <i>p</i> possess your souls	Luke 21:19
abide for it, with p	Rom 8:25
goodness, p, andsufferance	
know that tribulation bringeth p	
p bringeth experience	
Abide for it with p	
Suffered with long <i>p</i>	Rom 9:22
Let us run with p	Heb12:1
let us run with p	
faith bringeth p	James 1:3
temperance p , to p godliness	2 Peter 1:6
PEACE	
if the house be worthy, your p	Matt 10:13
come to send <i>p</i> unto the earth	
not to send p but a sword	
said unto the sea: P	Mark 4:39
and feet into the way of p	Luke 1:79
have n among vourselves	Mark 10:50

PEACE CONT.	
and p on the earth	Luke 2:14
lettest thou thine servant depart in p	Luke 2:29
P I leave with you, my p	John14:27
PERISH	
Save us we <i>p</i>	Matt 8:25
one that believeth in him should not p	John 3:15,16
so shall the rich man p	James 1:11
They shall p but thou shall Endure	Heb 1:11
Heed to the things we have heard, lest we	<i>p</i> Heb 2:1
they know not and shall p	
if all these things shall p	2 Peter 3:11
PERFECT	
her husband, being a p	Matt1:17
Ye shall therefore be p	Matt 5:48
Father which is in heaven is p	Matt 5:48
Both were p before God	Luke 1:6
should feign themselves p	Luke 20:21
a surety this man was p	Luke 21:43
they may be made p in one	John17:23
And one Anianias, a p man	Acts 24:12
that acceptable, and p will of Go	dRom 12:2
wisdom among them that are p	1 Cor 12:6
p among you might be known	1 Cor 11:19
PERFECTION	
Let us go on unto p	Heb 6:1
If therefore now p came	Heb 7:11
PERILOUS	
In the last days shall come p times	2 Tim 3:1

PERSECUTE	
men revile you, and p you	Matt 5:11
do you wrong and p you	Matt 5:44
p you in one city, flee into another	Matt 10:25
p from city to city	
they shall slay and p	Luke 11:49
hands on you, and p you	Luke 21:12
the Jews did p Jesus	John 5:16
so will they p you	John 15:20
Bless them which <i>p</i> you	Rom 12:14
are p but are not forsaken2	Cor 4:9
PERSECUTION	
suffer p for righteousness sake	Matt 5:10
tribulation or p ariseth	
a great p against the congregation	Acts 8:1
or anguish? or p	
in need in p in anguish2	Cor 12:10
why do I yet sufferer p	Gal 5:11
because they would not suffer p	Gal 6:12
in Christ Jesus, must suffer p	2 Tim 3:12
PERCEIVEST	
p not the beam that is in	Matt 7:3
p thou not how that the	
when thou p not the beam	Luke 6::42
PROUD	
scattereth them that are p	Luke 1:51
doers of wrong, p boasters	
God resisteth the p	James 4:6
mouths speak p things	Jude 16

PERVERSE	
speaking p thingsA	cts 20:30
a crooked and a p nation	
PERVERT	
and intend to p the gospel	. Gal 1:7
but to p the hearers2	Гіт 2:14
which p whole housesT	itus 1:11
p as they do other scriptures2 P	eter 3:16
PIECE PIECES	
with a p of new cloth	Iatt 9:16
a p of twenty pence	att 17:27
him thirty p of silver	att 26:16
having ten p of silverL	uke 15:8
found the p which I had lostL	uke 15:9
PIERCE PIERCING	
the sword shall p thy soulL	uke 2:35
on him whom they p	hn 19:37
any two edged sword: and p	Heb 4:12
they also which p him	.Rev 1:7
PILGRIMAGE	
your p here in fear1 P	eter 1:17
PILGRIMS	
I beseech you as strangers and p1 Pe	eter 2:11
strangers and p upon the earthH	
PILLAR	
which seemed to be <i>p</i>	. Gal 2:9
his feet as it were p of fire	Rev 10:1
will I make a p in the temple of my god	Rev 3:12

PIT	
the key of the bottomless <i>p</i>	Rev 9:1
opened the bottomless <i>p</i>	Rev 9:2
there arose out of the p	Rev 9:2
there arose out of the p	Rev 9:2
out of the bottomless <i>p</i>	Rev 17:8
PITCHER	
meet you bearing a p	Mark 14:13
meet you, bearing a p	Luke 22:10
PLACE	
the p where the child was	Matt 2:9
men of that p had knowledge of him	Matt 14:35
stand in the holy <i>p</i>	Matt 24:15
he is in the secret <i>p</i> believe not	Matt 24:26
a p which is called Gethsemane	Matt 26:36
unto the p called Golgotha	Matt 27:33
p where the Lord was put	Matt 28:6
found the p where it was written	Luke 4:17
secret p shall be preached	Luke 12:3
come into this p of torment	Luke 16:28
when Je'sus came to the p	Luke 19:5
that he might go to his own p	Acts 1:25
PLEASE PLEASED	
for so it <i>p</i> thee	Matt 11:26
danced before them, and p Herod	Matt 14:6
even so Father for so p it thee	Luke 10:23
those things that <i>p</i> him	John 8:29
Then p it the apostles	Acts 15:22
to the flesh cannot p God	Rom 8:8
p God through the preaching	1 Cor 1:21
how she may p her husband	1 Cor 7:34
ourselves to p him	2 Cor 5:9

POLLUTED P this holy place	Acts 21:28
POWER	
taught them as one having p	Matt 7:29
as one that had p	
greatness of his p to usward	
Let not sin have p you	-
Lordship, or rule or p	
PUT	
p forth his hand, and touched him	Matt 8:3
I will not <i>p</i> out his name	Rev 3:5
now is the ax p unto the root	
and p it under a bushel	Matt 5:15
I will p my spirit on him	
Let not man therefore p asunder	Matt 19:6
not <u>p</u> on two oats	Mark 6:9
P down through death	Heb.2:14
PROVE	
and I go to p them	Luke 14:9
he said to p him	John 6:6
Neither can they p	Acts 24:13
P your selves whether	2 Cor 13:5
PRUDENT	
from the wise and p	Matt 111:39
Sergius Paulus a p man	Acts 13:7
understanding of the p	Cor 1:19
PUNISHMENT	
It caused ferver,it caused p	2 Cor 7:11
how much sorer p	
for the p of evil doers	
of p and sorrow for she said	Rev 18:7

PURCHASE	
he hath p with his own blood	Acts 21:28
redeem the p possession	
PURE	
Blessed are the p in heart	Matt 5:8
Nardus, that was p and costly	
with a good and p heart	
ye may be faultless and p	
whatsoever things are p	
keep thyself p	
Unto the p are all thing p	
P then peaceable, gentle	
Love one another with a p heart	
PURGE	
his hand, and will p his floor	
P therefore the old leaven	1 Cor 6:7
p himself from such fellows	2 Tim 2:21
his own person <i>p</i> our sinsH	
p your consciences	
the law p with blood	
the offerers once p	
PURPOSE	
came out for that p	Mark 1:39
not put her beside her p	Mark 6:26
this p to make thee a minister	
are the called of his p	Rom 8:28
p of God which is by election	
PURPOSE CONT'	
n the same in himself	Enh 1.0

according to his ability p	Acts11:29
appeared unto thee for this p	cts 26:16
PURPOSE CONT'.	
for this same p have I stirred	Rom 9:17
Q	
¥	
QUENCH	
he shall not qM	latt 12:20
q all the fiery darts of the wicked	Eph 6:16
Q not the Spirit1T	hess 5:19
Q the violence of fire	
QUICK QUICKLY	
a judge of q and dead	cts 10:42
your bodies a q sacrificel	Rom 12:2
shall judge q and dead	2 Tim 4:1
the word of God is q	Heb 4:12
Lord both of dead and ql	Rom 14:9
go q and tell his disciples	Matt 28:7
Go out q into the streetLi	ıke 14:21
q and write fiftyI	Luke 16:6
That thou doest do q	ohn 13:27
saying: arise up q	Acts7:12
I may be restored to you q	Ieb 13:19
QUARTER GUARTERS	
and earthquakes, in all q	Matt 24:7
came to him from every q	Iark 1:45
about the fourth q M	ark 6: 48
shall be earthquakes in all q	Iark 13:8
into the streets and q Lu	ıke 14:21
an hundred a of wheat	uko 16.7

QUARTER GUARTERS walked throughout all q	A ata 0.22
_	
walked throughout all q	
are in the four q of the earth	Kev 20:8
QUIET	
I shall with a more q mind	Acts 24:10
that ye study to be q	1 Thess 4:11
may live a q and a peaceable life	1 Tim 2:2
q fruit of righteousness	Heb 12:11
R	
RAGE	
Why did the heathen r	Acts 4:26
RAIN	
and sendeth his r	Matt 5:45
r descended, and the floods came	Matt 7:25
it r fire and brimstone	
giving us r from heaven	
RAISE RAISED	
of these stones to r up	Matt 3:9
cleanse the lepers, r the dead\	
he is r from death again	Mark 6:16
r up an horn of salvation	Luke 1:69
as the Father r up the dead	John 5:21
but should r it up again	John 6:39
Whom God hath r up	Acts 2:24
This Jesus hath God r up	
God should r again the dead	
Christ was r up from death	Rom 6:4
<i>r</i> us up by his power	1 Cor 6:14

RANSOM	
gave himself a r	1 Tim 2:6
READY	
and all things are r	Matt22:24
be ye also <i>r</i>	Matt 24:44
and they that were r	Matt 25:10
made r the passover lamb	Mark 14:16
the spirit is <i>r</i>	Mark 14:38
people r for the Lord	Luke 1:17
sick and r to die	Luke 7:2
all things are now r	Luke 14:17
I am r to go with thee	Luke 22:33
your time is always <i>r</i>	John 7:6
found a ship r to sail	Acts 21:2
REAP	
if we r your carnal things	I Cor 9:11
soweth little, shall <i>r</i> little	2 Cor 9:6
man soweth, that shall he r	Gal 6:7
of the flesh <i>r</i> corruption	Gal 6:8
shall of the spirit r life	Gal 6:8
shall r without weariness	Gal 6:8
r for the time is come to r	Rev 14:15
REBUKED	
and r the winds	Matt 8:26
Jesus <i>r</i> the devil 	Matt 17:18
r him, saying: Hold thy peace	Mark 1:25
r Pe'ter saying avoid Satan	Mark 8:33
And his disciples <i>r</i> those	Mark 10:13
r of him for Herodias	Luke 3:19
over her, and r the fever	
about, and r them	
The other answered, and r him	
The r of them which r thee	

REBUKED CONT.	
same man that he was r of many	2 Cor 2:6
Words, which cannot be r	
neither faint when thou art r	Heb 12:5
are r of the law as transgressors	James 2:9
was r of his iniquity	
RECEIVE	
freely ye have r, freely give	Matt 10:8
but he r it not	
he was r into heaven	Mark 16:19
r baptism and when Jesus was Baptized	Luke 3:21
r up, then he set his face to goLuke9:51	
He r to his company sinners	Luke 15:2
one shall be r	Luke 17:34
r and the other forsaken	Luke 17:34
and his own r him not	John 1:11
RECOMPENSE	
come again I will r thee	Luke 9:35
for they cannot r thee	Luke 14:14
r at the resurrection of the just	
R to no man evil for evil	
See that none <i>r</i> evil for evil	1 Thess 5:15
with God to r tribulation	2 Thess 1:6\
and to r their elders	
will r it	Phile :19
I will <i>r</i> saith the Lord	Heb 10:30
hath great r of reward	Heb 10:35
RECONCILE	
first and be r to thy brother	Matt 5:34
we were r to God	
let her remain unmarried, or be r	1 Cor 7:11
hath r us unto himself	2 Cor 5:18
that ve be r to God	2 Cors 5:20

RECONCILE CONT.	
to r both unto God	Eph 2:16
to r all things unto himself	
RECORD	
this is the r of John	John 1:19
John bare r saying	John 1:32
three that bear <i>r</i>	1 John 5:8
r that this is the Son of God	John 1:34
I receive not the r of man	John 5:34
Thou bearest r of thyselfJ	ohn 8:13
thy <i>r</i> is not true	John 8:13
raised him from death, bare r	John 12:17
And he that saw it bare r	John 19:35
and his <i>r</i> is true	John19:35
r concerning these things	Acts 6:32
I take you to r	
For I bear them r	
I call God for a r unto my soul	
For to their powers (I bear r)	
R how greatly I long after you all	
God is <i>r</i>	
Holy Ghost also beareth us r	Heb 10:15
three which bear r in heaven	
three that bear r in earth	1 John 5:8
believed not the <i>r</i>	
we ourselves also bear r	
ye know that our r is true	
Which bare <i>r</i> of the word	
REDEEMED	
hath visited and r his people	Luke 1:68
not r with corruptible things	
r us by thy blood	
which were <i>r</i> from the earth	

REFUGE Fled for r to hold fast	Heb 6:18
REFUSED	
The stone, which the builders r	Mott 21.42
the other shall be r	
and be r of this nation	
to be r if it be with thanksgiving	
r him that spake on earth	нед 13:25
REIGN	
r until the time of John	Luke 16:16
death r from Adam to Mose	sRom 5:14
sin of one death r	Rom 5:17
as sin had r unto death	Rom5:21
so grace <i>r</i> through righteousness	Rom 5:21
sin has r unto death	Rom 7:21
received thy great might might and hast r	Rev11:17
lived and r with Christ	Rev 20:4
REJOICE	
<i>R</i> and be glad	Matt 5:12
he r more of that sheep	
many shall r at his birth	Luke 1:14
my spirit hath r in God my Saviour	Luke 1:58
R ye then and be glad	
r because your names are written in heaven	
to r and to Laud God	Luke 19:37
he that reapeth might <i>r</i> together	John 4:36
to see my day: and he saw it and r	
r because I go unto my father	
he saw it and r	John 8:56
and the world shall R	1 John 16:20

REJOICE CONT	
and they r with her	Luke 1:58
REJOICING	
and unto men r	Luke 2:14
r thatwere counted worthy	Acts 5:41
he went on his way r	Acts 8:39
Where is then thy r	Rom 3:28
Your <i>r</i> is not good	1 Cor 6:6
take this r from me	1 Cor 9:15
r which I have in Christ	1 Cor 15:36
abundance of their r	2 Cor 8:2
the word of life unto my r	
or crown of r	1 Thess 2:19
REMEMBER REMEMDERED	
r that thy brotherhath ought against thee	Matt 5:23
we r that this deceiver said	
For they <i>r</i> not of the loaves	Mark 6:52
Peter r the word that Jesus said	Mark15:72
and to r his holy covenant	
<i>R</i> Lot's wife	
R me whenyou come into thy kingdomLuke 23:42	
r how he spake unto you	
And they r his words	
REMNANT	
went and told it to the r	Mark 16:13
why take ye thought for the <i>r</i>	Luke 12:26
yet shall a r be saved	Rm 9:27
R left through the election of grace	
r of the men repented not	
And the r were feared	
r were slain with the sword	

REMOVE	
this mountain r hence	Matt17:20
and he should r	17:20
By faith he r into the land	Heb 11:9
r thy candlestick	Rev 2:5
RENDERING	
In flaming fire r vengeance	2 Thess 1:8
Not r evil for evil	1 Peter 3:9
REPENT	
saying; R ye	Matt 3:2
because they r not	Matt 11:20
RESPECT	
he had a r unto the reward	Heb 11:26
And ye have a r to him that weareth	James 2:3
REST	
East and West and shall r with Abraham	Matt 8:11
nowhere to r his head	Matt 8:20
find r for your souls	
let her be in r	
Then had the congregations r	
I had no <i>r</i> in my spiri	
our flesh had no r	
which are troubled <i>r</i>	2 Thess 1:7
REST CONT.	
not enter into his r	Heb 3:18
do enter into his <i>r</i>	Heb 4:3
God did r the seventh day	Heb 4:4
RESURRECTION	
Now in the r whose wife	Matt 22:28
For in the <i>r</i> they neither Marry	

RESSURECTION CONT.	
Came out of the graves after his r	Matt 27:53
believed not which had seenhis r	
shall be the fall and r of many	Luke 2:34
at the <i>r</i> of the just	Luke 14:14
good unto the r of life	John 5:29
evil unto the r of damnation	John 5:29
the r at the last day	John 11:24
a witness with us of his r	
spake of the r of Christ	Acts 2
Jesus the r of life	
Preached unto them Jesus and the r	
must we be in the <i>r</i>	
by a man came r from death	
so is the <i>r</i> of the dead	1 Cor 15:42
saying the r is past	
receive a better r	
RETURN	
r into their own country	Matt 2:12
r into the city he hungered	
and the shepherd r	Luke 2:20
r again with joy	Luke 10:12
they r and prepared odors	Luke 23:36
no more to r to corruption	Acts 13:34
I will r unto you if God will	Acts 18:21
r from the slaughter of the kings	Heb 7:1
r unto the Shepherd	1 Peter 2:25
REWARD	
What r shall you have	Matt 5:26
they have their r	
r of a righteous man	
his <i>r</i> with the unbelievers	
he that reapeth receives r	
with the r of injusity	

REWARD CONT	
the <i>r</i> of their error	Rom 1:27
r every man to his deeds	
the <i>r</i> of sin is death	
The <i>r</i> of sin is death	
But one receives the r	
Obtain the r of the high calling	
RICH RICHES	
hard for a r man to enter	Matt 19:22
and the deceitfulness of <i>r</i>	Mark 4:19
But woe be to you that are r	
choked with cares and with r	Luke 8:14
and is not <i>r</i> in God	
there was a certain <i>r</i> man	
the r of his glory	
the <i>r</i> of the Gentiles	
now ye are made <i>r</i>	1Cor 4:8
RIGHTEOUS	
r again with joy	Luke 10:12*
hunger and thirst for r	
except your <i>r</i>	
exceed the r of the Scribes and	
and the <i>r</i> thereof	Matt 6:33
he that receiveth a <i>r</i> man	
in the name of a <i>r</i> man	Matt 10:41
shall receive the reward of a \emph{r} man	Matt 10:41
garnish the sepulchers of the r	Matt 23:29
the enemy of all <i>r</i>	Acts 13:10
before God they are not <i>r</i>	Rom 1:13
There is none r no, not one	Rom 3:10
R that cometh of God declared	Rom 3:21
ROCK	
it was grounded on the <i>r</i>	Matt 7:25
this r $\ddot{ ext{I}}$ will congregation	

Rock Cont.	
hewn out in the r	Matt 27:60
that was hewn out of the r	Mark 15:46
a r which shall make men fall	Rom 9:32
drank of that spiritual r	1 Cor 10:4
which r was Christ	1 Cor 10:4
ROD	
Shall I come unto you with a r	1 Cor 4:21
Thrice was I beaten with r	1 Cor 11:25
rule them with a r of iron	Rev 2:27
was given me a reed like unto a r	Rev 11:1
all nations with a r of iron	Rev 12:5
ROOT	
the ax put unto the r of trees	Matt 3:10
for lack of r withered away	Matt 13:6
shall be plucked up by the <i>r</i>	Matt 15:13
the fig tree dried up by the r	Mark 11:20
the r be holy, the branches also	
r and fatness of the olive tree	
there shall be the <i>r</i> of Jesse	Rom 15:12
covetousness of lucre r of all evil	1 Tim.6:10
RULE	
bear r among the Gentiles	Mark 10:42
they that bare r over them	Luke 22:25
and had rule of all her treasure	Acts 8:40
down all r authority and power	1 Cor 15:24
walk according to this r	Gal 6:16
Above all r and power	Eph 1:21
but against r against power	-
t us proceed by one r	Phil 3:16
head of all r and power	
head of all <i>r</i> and power	

RULE CONT.	
cannot r his own house	1 Tim 3:
such as r their children well	
learn first to <i>r</i> their own houses	
as a Son hath r over house	
he shall <i>r</i> them with a rod of iron	
should <i>r</i> all nations	Rev 12:5
RUN	
r to bring his disciples word	Matt 28:8
or <i>r</i> in damage of himself	Luke9:25
disciple did out r Peter	John 20:4
that they which <i>r</i>	1 Cor10:24
in a course <i>r</i> all	1 Cor 10:24
So <u>r_</u> that ye may obtain	1 Cor 10:24
I therefore so r	1 Cor 10:26
been thought that I should <i>r</i>	Gal 2:2
or had <i>r</i> in vain	Gal2:2
that I have not <i>r</i> in vain	Phil 2:16
that ye <i>r</i> not also with them	1 Peter 4:4
many horses r together to battle	
${f S}$	
SACRAFICE	
require mercy and not s	Matt 12:7
every s shall be seasoned with salt	
your bodies a quick s	
s of a sweet savor to God	
the offering and s of your faith	-
a s accepted, and pleasant to God	
then those s have been offered	
S and offering thou not have	
one a few sine fewerer	

SACRAFICECONT	
s acceptable by Jesus Christ1 l	Peter 2:5
when ye fast be not s	
SAINTS	
many s which slept arose Ma	att 26:52
he hath done to thy s	Acts 9:13
the s I shut up in prison Ac	cts 26:10
and s by calling	
he maketh intercession for the ss	Rom 8:2
distribution for the poor sR	
in Christ Jesus s by calling1	
congregations of the s1 C	
gathering for thes1	Cor 16:1
supplieth the need of the s2	Cor 9:12
that we should be s	.Eph 1:4
Lord Jesus Christ with all his s1Th	ness 3:13
glorified in his s2 T	hess1:10
SALVATION	
hath raised up an horn of sL	uke 1:69
to give knowledge of sL	
today is s come unto this houseL	
For s cometh of the Jews Je	
Neither is there s in any other	
SALVATION CONT.	
Thou be s unto the end of the world Ac	cts 13:47
it is the power of God unto s R	
For now is our s nearerRo	
s which s sheweth her power2	
the day of s have I succored thee2	
work own s with fear and tremblingl	
chosen you to s 1 Th	
and with hope of s1	

SANCTIFY	
s them with thy truth	
for their sakes s I myself	
To s it and cleanse it	Eph 5:26
God of peace s you throughout	1 Thess 5:23
But s the Lord God in your hearts	1 Peter.3:15
SATAN	
and was tempted of S	Mark 1:13
S hath bound lo eighteen years	Luke 13:16
S hath filled thine heart	
from the power of S unto God	Acts 26:18
God of peace tread S under your feet	Rom16:20
deliver him unto S	1 Cor 6:5
lest S tempt you	1 Cor 7:5
Lest S should prevent us	
S himself is transformed	2 Cor 11:14
messenger of S to buffet me	2 Cor 12:7
but S withstood us	1 Thess 2:18
coming is by the working of S	2 Thess 2:9
I have delivered unto S	1 Tim 1:20
SAVE SAVED	
shall s his people from their sins	Matt 1:21
Lord s us we perish	Matt 8:25
he cried, saying, Lord s me	Matt14:30
to s that which is lost	Matt 18:11
who then can be <i>s</i>	Matt19:25
the same shall be s	Matt 24:13
To s life, or to kill	Mark 3:4
will s his life shall lose	Mark 8:35
Thy faith hath s thee Go in peace	Luke 8:50
through him might be s	John 3:17
enter in he shall be s	John 10:9
the congregation daily such as should be s	Acts 2.47

SAVE SAVED CONT.	
wherein we must be s	Acts 4:12
we shall be s from wrath	Rom 5:9
name of the Lord shall be s	Rom 10:13
so all Is'ra-el shall be s	Rom 11:26
for by grace are ye s	Eph 2:5
SAVIOUR	
a S, one Jesus	Acts 13:23
of God our S	1 Tim 2:3
the S of all men	1 Tim 4:10
appearing of our S	2 Tim 1:10
God our S	Titus 1:3
Jesus Christ our S	Titus 1:4
doctrine of our S God	Titus 2:10
God and S Jesus Christ	2 Peter 1:1
apostles of the Lord and S	2 Peter 3:2
Father sent the Son to be the S	1John 4:14
our S which only is wise	Jude :25
SEARCH SEARCHED	
s diligently for the child	Matt 2:8
S the scriptures	
S and look	John 7:52
s the scriptures daily	Acts 17:11
he that s the hearts	Rom 8:27
For the Spirit s all things	1 Cor 3:10
he which s the reins and hearts	Rev 2:21
SEPARATED	
s the disciples	Acts19:9
s me from my mother's womb	Gal 1:15
he withdrew and s himself	

SEPERATED CONT	
they were s from you	Gal 5:12
SEASON	
therefore dureth but a s	
to give the meat in s convenient	Matt 24:45
shall be fulfilled in their s	Luke 1:20
departed from him for a s	Luke 4:13
portion of meat at due s	
angel went down at a certain s	John 5:4
for a s have rejoiced in his light	John 5:35
not for you to knowtimes or the s	Acts 1:7
shall not see the sun for a s	Acts 13:11
rain from heaven and fruitful s	Acts 15:17
ready in the mean s to kill him	Acts 23:15
I mean the s how that it is time	
be fervent be it in s or out of s	1Tim 4:2
departed for a s	Phile :15
and for a s made him lower than the angels	Heb 2:7
SECRET SECRETLY PRIVILY	
minded to p put her away	Matt 1:19
That thine alms may be s	Matt 6:4
Father which seeth in s	Matt 6:6
to know the s of the kingdom	Matt 13:11
s from the foundatio.of the world	
s why could not we cast. him out	Mark 9:28
John and Andrew asked s	
Unto you is it given to know the s	Luke8:10
in s that shall not come abroad	
God shall judge the s of men	Rom 2 16
the mystery which was kept s	
wisdom, of God, which is in s	
Yea the bottom of God's s	
dispensers of the s of God	
to utter the s of the gospe	

SEE SEEN	
s that you think not to say	Matt 3:9
for they shall s God	
they would be s of men	Matt 6:5
S that ye gather you not treasure	Matt 6:19
they may s your good work	Matt 5:16
s thou tell no man	Matt 8:4
S that no man know of it	Matt 9:30
it was never so s in Israel	Matt 9:33
what ye have heard and s	Matt 11:4
s the Son of man come	
they shall s and not discern	Mark 4:12
they came out for to s	Mark 5:14
Have ye eyes and s not	Mark 8:18
which had s him	Mark 16:14
And when they had s it	Luke 2:17
should not s death, before	Luke 2:26
mine eyes have s the Saviour	Luke 2:30
said Happy are the eyes which s	Luke 10:23
they had s a vision of angels	Luke 24:23
No man hath s God	John 1:18
we have s and ye receive not	John 3:11
nor ye have s his shape	John 5:37
ye have s me and yet believe not	John 6:36
have not s, and yet believe	John 20:27
s saying, The Master is come	John 11:28
had s the Lord in the way	Acts 9:18
he was s many days	Acts 13:31
SEED	
the s should spring and grow up	Mark 4:27
a grain of mustard s	
The s is the word of God	Luke 8:11
shall come of the s of David	John7:42
ye are Abrahams s	John 8:37
Even in thy c	

SEED CONT.	
	A . 4 7 . 5
and to his s after him	
begotten of the s of David	
be sure to all the s	
of promise are counted the s	
He that findeth s	
and shall multiply your s	
for his s remaineth in him	1John 3:9
SEEK	
these things s the Gentiles	Matt 6:32
S and ye shall find	Matt 7:7
I know that ye s Jesus	Matt 28:5
thy brethren s for thee	Mark 3:32
Why doth this generation s a sign	Mark 8:12
Ye s Jesus of Nazareth	Mark 16:6
s ye after the Kingdom of God	Luke 11:30
is come to s and to save	Luke 19:10
why s ye the living among the dead	Luke 24:5
I s not mine own will	
s not the honor	John 5:44
SEND	
s forth laborers	Matt 9:38
I s you forth as sheep	Matt 10:16
Is my messengerbefore thy face	
he shall s his angels	
he might s them to preach	Mark 3:14
s them two and two	Mark 6:7
then shall he s his angels	Mark 13:37
s forth labourers unto the harvest	Luke 10:2
I am come to s fire on earth	Luke 12:49
to s fire on earth	
wassiveth whomseeven I a massiveth me	

SEND CONT. whom my Father will s in my name	John14:26
SEPARATE	
he shall s them one from another	Matt 25:33
what God hath coupled.let man not s	Mark 10:9
s me Barnabas and Saul	Acts 13:2
If she s herself1	Cor 7:11
s me from my mother's womb	Gal 1:15
were come he withdrew and s himself	Gal 2:12
from such s thyself	1 Tim 6:5
s from sinners	Heb 7:26
SERPENT	
would he proffer him a s	Matt 7:10
Be ye therefore wise as s	
Ye s and generation of vipers	Matt 23:33
And shall kill s	Mark 16:18
power to tread on s	Luke 10:19
will he for a fish give him a s	Luke 11:11
Moses lifted up the <i>s</i>	
and of <i>s</i>	Rom 1:23
were destroyed of s	1 Cor 10:9
lest as the s beguiled Eve	2 Cor 11:3
and of birds, and of s	James 3:7
were like unto s	Rev 9:19
that old s called the Devil	Rev 12:9
SERVANT	
my s lieth sick at home	Matt 8:6
nor yet the s above his Lord	
said unto his s this is John the Baptist	
be chief let him be your s	
Happy is that <i>s</i>	
lect of all and a unto all	

SERVANT CONT.	
authority to his <u>s</u>	Mark 13:34
and holpen his s Israel	Luke 1:54
the house of his s David	
lettest thou thy s depart in peace	Luke 2:29
S be obedient	
S obey your masters	
SERVE	
him only shalt thou s	Matt 4:10
No man can s two masters	Matt 6:24
might s him without fear	Luke 1:74
S God with fasting and prayers	Luke 2:37
and s at the tables	
whose I am, and whom I s	Acts 27:23
whom I s with my spirit	Rom 1:9
in my mind s the law of God	Rom 7:25
the elder shall s the younger	Rom 912
but in love s one another	Gal 5:13
for ye s the Lord Christ	Col 4:24
SHEWED	
Lord had s great mercy	Luke 1:58
I s you from my Father	John 10:32
he s himself alive after his passion	Acts 1:3
Thou hast s me the ways of life	Acts 2:28
they s the word of God	Acts 13:5
and s their works	
s you all the council of God	Acts 20:27
glory which shall be s upon us	Rom 8:18
it shall be s by fire	1 Cor 3:13
by revelation s he this mystery	Eph 3:3
God was s in the flesh	1Tim 3:16
s to thee in the mount	
which are now s unto you	1 Peter 1:12
Lord Iogus Christ both a mo	2 Doton1.14

SHEWED CONT.	
s by his angel unto., servant John	Rev 1:1
and s me that great city	
s me a pure river of water of life	Rev 22:1
SHADOW	
region and s of death	Matt 4:16
a bright cloud s them	Matt 17:5
may dwell under the s of it	Mark 4:32
and in shadow of death	Luke 1:72
at the least way, the s of Peter	Acts 5:15
by might over s some of them	Acts 5:15
nothing but s of things to come	Col 2:17
example and s of heavenly things	Heb 8:5
cherubims of glory s	
law which hath but the s	Heb 10:1
SHAME	
foaming out their oun s	Jude:13
write not these things to s you	1 Cor 4:14
This I say to your s	1 Cor 6:5
If it be s for a woman to	1 Cor11:6
s for a man if he have long hair	2 Cor 11: 14
and s them that have not	1 Cor 11:32
a s for women to speak	1 Cor 15:35
it should not be to my s	
whose glory is to their s	
for the s and tribulation	
the cross, and despised the s	Heb 12:2
foaming out their own s	Jude 1:13
SHEEP	
which come to you in s clothing	Matt 7:15
even as s having no shepherd	Matt 9:36
the lost s of the house of Israe	

SHEEP CONT.	
the shepherd of the s	John 10:2
and the s hear his voice	John 10:3
he calleth his own s by name	John 10:3
sent forth his own s	
and the s follow him	John 10:4
A good shepherd giveth his life. For the s	John 10:11
I give my life for the s	John 10:14
And other s I have	John 10:16
ye are not of my <i>s</i>	John 10:26
My s hear my voice	John 10:27
Feed my s	
•	
SHEPHERD	
sheep having no s	Matt 9:36
a s divideth the sheep from the goats	Matt 25:32
I will smite the s	dMatt 26:31
sheep which had no s	Mark 6:34
s abiding in the field	Luke 2;8
told them of the s	Luke 2:18
the <i>s</i> of the sheep	John 10:2
I am the good s	John 10:11
I am that good s	John 10:14
be one flock, and one s	
some s some teachers	
the great s of the sheep	_
the s and bishop of your souls	
when the chief s shall appear	
SHIELD	
take to you the s of faith	Eph 6:16
SHINE	
of death light is begun to s	Matt 4:16
Let your light so a hefore men	

SHINE CONT.	
just men s as bright as the sun	Matt 13:43
his face did s as the sun	Matt 17:2
his raiment did s	Mark 9:3
and s unto the other part the light s in the darkness the image of God, should s the light to s out of darkness see that ye s as lights in	Luke 17:24
	John 1:5
	s2 Cor 2:5
	2 Cor 4:6
	Phil 2:15
a light that s in a dark place	2 Peter 1:19
even as the sun s in his strength	Rev 1:16
SHONE	
brightness of the Lord s round	Luke 2:9
his garment was white and s	
there s from heaven a great light	Acts 22:6
And his face s even as the sun	Rev 1:16
SIN SINS	
shall save his people from their s	Matt 1:21
in Jordan, confessing their s	Matt 3:6
good cheer thy s be forgiven thee	Matt 9:2
away the s of the world	John 1:29
thou art made whole, s no more	John 5:14
without s cast the first stone at her	John 8:7
Go and s no more.	
by one man s entered	Rom 5:12
made him to be s for us	2 Cor 5:21
Be angry, but s not	Eph 4:26
Which did no s	1 Peter 2:22
If we say that we have no s	1 John 1:8
obtained grace for our s	
SINNERS	
many publicans also and s came	Matt 9:10

SINERS CONT.	
but s to repentance	9:13
with publicans and sLuke s	5:30
For the very s love their friendsLuke	
that God heareth not sJohn	
while we were yet sRom	
and not s of the Gentiles	
came into the world to save s1 Tim	
separate from sHeb '	
SING	
and s in thy name Rom	15:9
I will s with the Spirit 1 Cor 14	
and will s with the mind also1 Cor 14	
If any of you be merry let him s psalmsJames s	
And they s the song of Moses Rev	
SLEEP	
as soon as he awoke out of s	1:24
The maiden is not dead, but s	
were heavy with sLuke 9	
Why s ye? Rise and prayLuke 22	
I go, to wake him out of sJohn 1	
prison waked out of his s Acts 10	
fallen into a deep sActs 2	
overcome with s, and fell down Acts 2	
awake out of s Rom 1.	
sick among you and many s 1 Cor 1	
them also which s in Jesus1 Thess	
SLOTHFUL	
thou evil servant and s	5:26
SMITE	
Began to s his fellow servants Matt 24	4:48
it is written. I will s the shepherd	
shall we's with swordLuke 22	

SMITE CONT.	
that stood by to s him	Acts 23:2
God s thee thou painted wall	
s the earth with. all manner plagues	
with it he should s the heathen	
SOBER	
but let us watch and be s	1Thess 5:6
be s putting on the breastplate of faith	1 Thess 5:8
s discrete, honestly appareled	
s righteous, holy temperate	
young women s minded	
Young men exhort be s	
be s, and trust perfectly	
Be ye therefore discrete, and s	
Be s and watch	
SON	
Jesus Christ the S of David	Matt 1:1
the S also of Abraham	Matt 1:1
She shall bring forth a s	Matt 1:21
a S thou shall call his name Emmanuell	Matt 1:23
brought forth her first S	
out of Egypt have I called my S	Matt 3:15
beloved S, in whom I delight	
if thou be the S of God	
the S of man hathnot where to rest his head	Matt 8:20
And if the s of peace be there	Luke 10:6
And who the Father is save the S	
he to whom the S will shew him	Luke 10:22
the only begotten S of the Father	John 1:14
bare record that this is the S of God	John 1:34
thou art the S of God	John 1:49
sent his S in the similitude of sinful flesh	Rom 8:3
Recause ve are s	Gal 4:67

SON CONT.	
and be opened, the s of perdition	2 Thess 2:3
though he were thes S, yet learned	
denieth the Father and the S	
SONG	
every man hath his s	1 Cor 14:36
psalms and hymns and spiritual s	Eph 5:19
And they sung a new s	Rev 5:8
they sung as it were a new s	
no man could learn that s	Rev 13:3
they sang the s of Moses	
and the s of the Lamb	
SORROW	
are the beginning of s	Matt 24:8
found them sleeping for s	
your hearts are full of s	
Ye shall s	
your s shall be turned to joy	
and loosed the s of death	
hath caused s	
godly s causeth repentance	
have had s upon s	
s not, as others which have no hope	
tangled themselves with many s	
s ye, and weep	
gnawed their tongues for s	
for s and pain	
and shall see no s	
punishment and s	
SOUL	
and be not able to kill the s	Matt 10:28

SOUL CONT.	
destroy both s and body into hell	Matt 10:28
shall find rest unto your s	
all the mind, and with all the s	Mark 12:33
My s is very heavy	
My s doth magnify the Lord	Luke 1:46
the sword shall pierce thy s	Luke 2:35
and I will say to my soul	Luke 12:19
S, thou hast much goods laid up	Luke 12:19
will they fetch away thy s	Luke 12:20
With your patience possess your s	Luke 21:19
Now is my s troubled	
wilt not leave my s in hell	Acts 2:27
that his s should not be left in hell	Acts 2:31
added unto them about three thousand s	Acts 2:41
upon the s of everyof man that doeth evil	Rom 2:9
Let every s submit himself	Rom 13:1
First man Adam was made a living s	
your whole spirit s and body	
dividing of the s and the spirit	
we have as an anchor of the s	Heb 6:19
which is able to save your s	James 1:21
shall save a s from death	
the salvation of your s	
which fight against the s	
vexed his righteous s	
beguiling unstable s	
even as thy s prospereth	
under the altar the s of them	
SOW	
for they s not, neither reap	Matt 6:26
Behold, a sower went forth to s	Matt 13:3
as if a man should s seed	Mark 4:26
If we county you spiritual things	1 Car 9·11

SPEAK	
but s the word only	Matt 8:8
how or what ye shall s	Matt 10:19
it is not ye that s	Matt 10:20
that s ye, in light	Matt 10:29
not the devils to s	Mark 1:34
and the dumb to s	Mark 7:37
not able to s	Luke 1:20
sit up and began to s	Luke 7:15
disciples heard him s	John 1:37
We s that we know	John 3:11
began to s with other tongues	Acts 2:4
heard them s his own tongue	Acts 2:6
I s after the manner of men	Rom 3:5
as men evil s of us	Rom 3:8
image of the beast should s	Rev 13:15
SPIRIT	
led away of the s	Matt 4:1
Blessed are the poor in s	 5:3
he cast out the s with a word	
And my s rejoicethin God my Saviour	Luke 1:47
last Adam was made a quickening s	
comforted my s and yours	
the earnest of the S	
no rest in my s	2 Cor 3:13
and from the seven. S	Rev 1:4
I was in the <i>S</i>	Rev 1:10
S saith unto the congregations	Rev 2:7
STAND	
For they love to s and pray	Matt 6:5
s without desiring to speak with thee	
s in the holy place	
Arise and s in the midst	

STAND CONT.	
that s in the presence of God	Luke 1:19
that you may s	
Is and am judged for the hope	
this grace wherein we s	
and to s perfect in all things	
that ye may s perfect and full	Col 4:12
STEPS	
Paul stood on the s	Acts 22:40
swalk also in the s of that faith	Rom 4:12
walked we not in like s	2 Cor 12:18
that ye should follow his s	1Peter 2:21
STONE	
God is able of these s to	Matt 3:9
that these s be made bread	Matt 4:3
The s which the builders refused	Matt 21:42
fall on this s he shall be broken	Matt 22:44
found the s away sepulcher	Luke 24:2
by interpretation, a s	John 1:43
without sin cast the first s at her	
for which of them will ye s meJ	ohn 10:32
I put in Sion an head corner s	1 Peter2:6
the s which the builders refused	1 Peter 2:7
is made the s in the corner	1 Peter 2:7
and will give him a white s	Rev 2:17
STRAIGHT	
make his paths s	Matt 3:3
crooked things shall be made s	
s out of the water	Matt 3:16
Enter in at the s gate	Matt 7:13
was made s and glorified God	

STRAIGHT	
make s the way of the Lord	John 1:23
street which is called s	Acts 9:11
Have s paths for your feet	Heb 12:13
STRANGE	
and went into a s country	Matt 21:33
seen s things today	Luke 5:26
a dweller in a s land	Acts 7:6
bringest s tidings to our ears	Acts 17:20
every year with s blood	Heb 10:25
as into a s country	Heb11:9
with divers and s learning	Heb 13:3
it seemeth to them a s thing	1 Peter4:4
fornication, and followed s flesh	Jude 1:7
STRENGTH	
and with all thy s	Mark 12:30
s with his arm	Luke 1:51
his feet and anklebones received s	Acts 3:7
to be tempted above your s	1Cor 10:13
and the s of sin is the law	1 Cor 15:56
your love may have s over him	2 Cor 2:8
the s of Christ may dwell in me	2 Cor 12:9
for my s is made perfect	Col 12:9
the s of Christ may dwell in me	2 Cor 12:9
Sara also received s	Heb 1:11
even as the sun shineth in his s	Rev 1:16
thou hast a little s	Rev 3:8
wisdom, and s and honour	Rev 5:12
Now is made wisdom, and s	
their nower and c unto the heast	Pay 17:13

STRENGT CONT	
When a s man armed	Luke 11:21
but was made s in the faith	Rom 4:20
s ought to bear the frailness	Rom 15:1
weakness of God is s than men	1 Cor 1:25
not s no neither yet are	1 Cor 3:2
ye are s ye are honorable	1 Cor 4:10
Or are we s than he	
Quit you like men be s	1 Cor 16:12
in God to casting down strong holds	2 Cor 10:4
I am weak then am I s	
when we are weak, and ye s	2 Cor 13:9
my brethren, be s in the Lord	
God shall send them s delusion	2 Thess 2:9
made me s for he counted me true	1Tim 1:12
be s in. grace that is in Christ Je'sus	2 Tim 2:1
and supplications with s crying	Heb 5:7
need of milk, and not of s meat	Heb 5:12
But s meat belongeth to them	
out of weakness were made s	
STRONG	
how that ye are s	1 John 2:14
And I saw a s angel	Rev 5:2
mightily with a s voice	Rev 18:2
s is the Lord God which judgeth her	Rev 18:8
of s thunderings saying Amen Alleluia	
SUBJECT	
Then shall, the Son also himself be <i>s</i>	1 Cor 15:28
SUFFER SUFFERED	
Then he s him	Matt 3:15
Blessed are they which s persecution	
s me to pluck out the mote	
s me first to go and bury my father	

SUFFER SUFFERED CONT.	
We are persecuted, and s It	1 Cor 4:12
Why rather s ye not wrong	
l not s you to be tempted above that you are able	
but also s for his sake	Phil 1:29
to have plenty, and to s need	Phil 4:12
s adversity with the people of God	
that one of you s as a murderer	
SUN	
he maketh his s to arise	Matt 5:45
one manner glory of the s	1 Cor 15:41
let not the s go downupon your wrath	Eph 4:26
neither shall the s light on them	Rev 7:16
SURE	
be ye s that it is near	Matt 24:33
and the promise might be s	Rom 4:16
foundation of God standeth s	2 Tim 2:19
SWEAR	
Neither shalt thou s by thy head	Matt 5:36
whosoever s by the temple	
but whosoever s by the gold	
began he to curse and to s	
So Is in my wrath	
To whom s he	
Nohe had no greater to s by, he s by himself	Heb 6:13
The Lord s and will not repent	
my brethren, s not	James 5:12
SWIFT	_
feet are s to shed blood	
be s to hear, slow to speak	James 1:19

SWORD SWORDS	
with a great multitude with s	Matt 26:47
ot to bring peace but a s	Matt 10:34
his s and struck a servant	Matt 26:51
the s shall pierce thy soul	Luke 2:35
he that hath no s	Luke 22:36
not a s for naught	Rom 13:4
s of the spirit	Eph 6:17
sharper than any two edged s	Heb 4:12
went out a sharp s	Rev 19:15
remnant were slain with the s	Rev 19:21
s which proceeded out of his mouth	Rev 19:21
T	
TABERNACLE	
let us make here three t	Matt 17:4
The Jews feast of <i>t</i>	John 7:2
ye took unto you the t of Moloch	Acts 7:43
the <i>t</i> of witness	Acts 7:44
Which t our fathers received	Acts 7:45
might find a t for the God of Jacob	Acts 7:46
will build again the t of David	Acts 15:16
found him in the <i>t</i>	Luke 2:46
for to hear him in the t	Luke 21:38
as long as we are in this t we sigh	2 Cor 5:4
the very t which God pitched	Heb 8:2
that first t verily had ordinances	Heb 9:1
t which is called Holiest of all	Heb 9:3
as yet the first t was standing	Heb 9:8
greater and a more perfect t	Heb 9:11
as long as I am in this t	1 Peter1:13
I must put off my <i>t</i>	1 Peter 1:14
at the t he commanded it	Matt 14:9
C 41	N.E. 44 1.E. 0.E

TABLE	
the t of the money changers	Matt 21:12
or under the t	
of brasen vessels and of t	
asked for writing t	
with me on the t	
and overthrew the t	
at the t with him	
serve at the t	
TAKE	
t unto thee Mary thy wife	Matt 1:20
arise, and t the child	Matt 2:13
and t away thy coat	Matt 5:40
t no thought how or ye shall speak	Matt 10:19
t thine ease	
t unto you the armour of God	
that no man t away thy crown	-
TASTE	
not <i>t</i> of death till	Matt 16:28
And when he had t	Matt 27:34
not t of death, till	
not t of death, till	
he shall never t of death	
Touch not t nothandle not	
Should t death for all men	Heb 2:9
TEACH TEACHING	
Go ye therefore, and t all nations	
t them to observe	
he began again to t by the	
t in the synagogue	
to t them many things	
hagan to t them have	Maul. 0.21

TEACH TEACHING CONT.	
Lord, <i>t</i> us to pray	Luke 11:1
the Holy Ghost shall t you	Luke 12:12
dost thou t us	
he shall t you all things	
that Jesus began to do and t	
speak or t in the name of Jesus	Acts 4:18
they ceased not to t	Acts 5:42
labour in the word and in t	1 Tim 5:17
is profitable to t to improve	2 Tim 3:16
TEACHER	
that thou art a t	
certain Prophets and t	Acts 13:1
a t of unlearned	Rom 2:20
secondarily prophets, thirdly t	1 Cor 12:28
Are all <i>t</i>	
which went never out of the t	
some shepherds, some t	Eph 4:11
being the t of the Gentiles	1 Tim 2:7
a t of the Gentiles	
and heap to themselves t	
but t of honest things	Titus 2:3
there shall be false t	2 Peter 2:1
TEARS	
father of the child cried with t	Mark 9:24
to wash his feet with t	
but she hath washed my feet with t	Luke 7:44
many t and temptations	Acts 20:19
both night and day with t	
unto you with many t	
being mindful of thy t	
with strong crying and t	tHeb 5:7
though he desired it with t	Hob 12.17

TEARS CONT.	
	Doy 7.17
wipe away all <i>t</i> from their eyes	
God snan wipe away an t	Kev 21:4
TEMPLE	
on a pinnacle of the t	Matt 4:5
priests in the t break the Sabbath	Matt 12:5
here is one greater than the t	
as he walked in the t	Mark 11:27
Mount Olivet over against the t	Mark 13:3
destroy this t made with hands	Mark 14:58
A wretch that destroys, the t	Mark 15:29
went into the t of the Lord	Luke 1:10
that he tarried so long in the t	Luke 1:21
had seen some vision in the t	Luke 1:22
by inspiration into the <i>t</i>	Luke 2:27
in the t those that sold	John 2:14
there was no t therein	Rev 21:22
and the Lamb are the t of itRev 21:22	
TEMPT TEMPTED	
shalt not t thy Lord God	Matt 4:7
and did <i>t</i> him	
Why t ye me ye hypocrites	Matt 22:18
and was t of Satan	
Why <i>t</i> ye me	Mark 12:15
lawyer stood up and t him	
And others, t him	
this they said, to t him	John 8:6
why t ye God	Acts 14:10
lest Satan t you	
Neither let us t Christ	
as some of them t	
not suffer you to be t above	
lest thou also be t	
lest hanly the tempter had t you	

TEMPT TEMPTED CONT.	
succor them that are t	Heb 2:18
your fathers t me	Heb 3:9
all points t like as we	Heb 4:15
no man say when he is t	James 1:13
that he is t of God	James 1:13
TEMPTATION	
Lead us not into t	Matt 6:13
that ye fall not into t	Matt 26:41
lest ye enter into t	Mark 14:38
bidden with me in my t	Luke 22:28
pray lest ye fall into t	Luke 22:40
many tears and t	Acts 20:19
none other t taken you	1 Cor 10:13
midst of the t make a way	1 Cor 10:13.
be rich fall into t and snares	1 Tim 6:9
that endureth in. t	James 1:12
through manifold t	1 Peter 1:6
the Godly out of t	2 Peter 2:9
keep thee from the hour of t	Rev 3:10
TENTH	
was about the t hour	John 1:31
the t part of the city fell	Rev 11:13
t a chrysoprasus	Rev 21:20
TESTAMENT	
blood of the new t	Matt 26:28
new t which is shed for many	Mark 14:24
new t my blood	Luke 22:20
the new t not of the letter	2 Cor 3:6
untaken away in the old t	2 Cor 3:14
for these women are two t	Gal 5:24
from the <i>t</i> of promise	Eph 2:12
Jesus a surety of a hetter t	tHeb7.22

TESTAMENT CONT.	
he is the mediator of a better t	Heb 8:6
THANKS	
gave t and brake them	Matt 15:38, 26:26
gave t and gave it to them	Mark 14:23
gave t and said	Luke 22:17
he took bread, gave t	Luke 22:19
gave t and gave to the disciples	John 6:11
Felix with all t	
and gave t to God	Acts27:35
for he giveth God t	
t but also the congregations	
if I take my part with t	
say Amen at thy giving of t	
But t be unto God	
t may be given of many	
T be unto God	
to give t for you	
but rather giving of t	-
with giving of t	_
In all things give t	
THANKSGIVING	
through us t unto God	2 Cor 9:11
Watch in the same with t	Col 4:2
to be received with t	1 Tim 4:3
Blessing and glory wisdom and t	Rev 7:12
THINK	
you t not to say	
T not that I am come to destroy	
to t saying, what fellow is this	
What t ye in your hearts	
at an hour when we t not	I mko 12.40

THINK CONT.	
Do not t that I will accuse you	John 5:44
t that he doeth God service	
ye t that I am, the same I am not	Acts 13:25
and t yourselves unworthy	Acts 13:46
Me <i>t</i> that God	1 Cor 4:9
Or t I carnally, those things	2 Cor 1:17
THIRST	
t for righteousness	Matt 5:6
I t and ye gave me drink	Matt 25:35
shall never be more a t	ohn 4:14
believeth on me shall never t	John 6:35
any man t let him come unto me	John 7:37
might be fulfilled, he said, I t	John 19:28
if he t give him drink	Rom 12:20
we hunger and t and are naked	1 Cor 4:11
often in hunger, in t	2 Cor 12:27
neither t any more	Rev 7:16
THRONE	
Right hand of the t of God	Heb 12:2
THOUGHT	
While he thus t behold	Matt 1:20
Therefore take no t	Matt 6:31
When Jesus saw their t	Matt 9:4
But he knew their <i>t</i>	Luke 6:8
take no t how or what	Luke 12:11
TESTAMONY	
he that hath received his t	John 4:33
the t of two men is true	John 8:17
we know that his <i>t</i> is true	John 21:24
gave t unto the word of his grace	Acts 4:3
t of Jesus Christ was confirmed in you	1 Cor 1.6

TESTAMONY CONT.	
the t of our conscience	2 Cor 12
t that we had unto you was believed	2 Thess 1:10
not ashamed of the t of our Lordand of the t of Je'sus Christ	2 Tim 1:8
	Rev 1:2
the t which they had	Rev 6:9
when they have finished their t	
and by the word of their t	
the t of Him and of Jesus Christ	
tabernacle of t in heaven was opened	Rev 15:5
have the t of Jesus worship God	
For the <i>t</i> of Jesus is the spirit	
TOGETHER	
But gather ye t in heaven	Matt 6:20
two or three are gathered t	
their witness agreed not t	
pressed down, shaken t	
t and gave them power and authority	Luke 9:1
gather t his elect	
might rejoice t	John 4:36
gather t in one the children of God	John 11:52
TONGUE TONGUES	
did spit and touched his t	Mark 7:33
his t was loosed and he spake plain	Mark 8:35
and his t also and he spoke	Luke 1:64
finger in water, and cool my t	Luke 16:24
heard them speak his own t	Acts 2:6
my heart rejoice and my t was glad	Acts 2:216
with their t they have deceived	Rom 3:13
cannot be expressed with t	Rom 8:26
all t should confess	Phil 2:11
seem devout and refrain not his t	James 2:26
the t is a little member	James 3:5
and that is a fire	Inmag 3.6

TONGUE TONGUES CONT.	
kindred and t and people	Rev 5:9
TREASURE	
and opened their t	Matt 2:11
gather you not t upon the earth	Matt 6:19
lay up for yout t in heaven	Matt 6:20
t that faileth not in heaven	Luke 12:33
where your treasure t	Luke 12:34
and had the rule of all her t	Acts 8:27
thee together the t of wrath	Rom 2:5
cause not your t to be evil spoken of	
have this t in earthen vessels	
the t of wisdom and knowledge	
greater riches than the t of Egypt	Heb 11:26
Ye have heaped t together	
TREMBLE	
for they t and were amazed	Mark 16:8
The woman feared and t	Mark 5:33
Moses t and durst not behold	Acts 7:32
Felix t and answered	Acts 24:25
The devils also believe and t	James 2:19
TRESPASS	
And forgive our <i>t</i>	Matt 6:12
even as we forgive our t	Matt 612
if thy brother t against thee	Matt 18:15
in heaven may forgive you your t	Mark 11:25
every man that t us	Luke 11:4
brother t against thee rebuke him	
then I make myself a t	Gal 2:18
dead in t and sins	
hath forgiven us, all our t	Col 2:13

TRIBULATION	
t or persecution ariseth	Matt 13:21
For then shall be great t	Matt 24:21
after the t of those days	Matt 24:29
t as was not from the beginning	Mark 13:19
in those days, after that t	Mark 13:24
shall ye have t but be of good cheer	John 16:33
we must through much t enter	Acts 14:22
T and anguish, upon the soul	
in t For we know that t bringeth	Rom 5:3
from the love of God shall t	Rom 8:35
Be patient in <i>t</i>	Rom 12:12
Which comforteth us in all our t	2 Cor 1:4
our exceeding t which is momentary	2 Cor 4:17
faint not because of my t	
ye bare part with me in my t	
<i>t</i> even as it came to pass	
and t that ye suffer	2 Thess 1:4
the shame and t	
being in need t and vexation	Heb 11:37
and companion in <i>t</i>	Rev 1:9
thy works, and t and poverty	Rev 2:9
they which came out of great t	Rev 7:14
TROUBLE	
ever enough of its own t	Matt 6:34
see that ye be not t	Matt 24:6
t, and vexation	
neither t any man wrongfully	Luke 3:14
and say t me not	
widow t me I will avenge her	Luke 18:5
shall be great t in the land	Luke 21:23
and t the water	John 5:4
Now is my soul t	John 12:27
t not them, which from among	Acts 15:19
men which are lews t our city	Acts16.20

TROUBLE CONT	
able to comfort them which are t	2 Cor 1.4
there be some, which t you	Gal 1:/
TRUE	
we know thou art t	t Matt 22:16
we know that thou art t	Mark 12:14
Who will believe you in that is <i>t</i>	Luke 16:11
That was a <i>t</i> light	
to his seal that God is t	John 4:43
of myself my witness is not t	John 5:31
which he beareth of me is t	John 5:43
the t bread from heaven	John 6:32
that sent me is t whom ye	John 7:28
the testimony of two men is t	John 8:17
TRUST	
name shall the Gentiles t	Matt 12:14
He <i>t</i> in God; let him	Matt 27:43
for them that t in riches	
t that we have t in him	1 John 5:14
I t to come unto you	
TRUTH	
I tell you for a t	Matt 10:23
t he shall not lose his reward	
of a t thou art the Son of God	
t Lord nevertheless the whelps	
and told him the <i>t</i> of everything	
when he knew the <i>t</i> of the centurion	
But I tell you of a t	
Grace and t came by Jesus Christ	
that doeth t cometh to the light	
know that and the truth make you free	

TRY	
the fire shall t every man's work	1 Cor 3:13
now is come among you, to t you	
TURN TURNED	
he t aside into the parts of Galilee	Mott 2.22
on thy right cheek, t to him the other	
him that would borrow t not away	
lest at any time they should t	
t himself roundabout	
Then he t about	
shall he t to the Lord their God	
to the hearts of the fathers	
at him, and t him about	
he t to his disciples	
Jesus t about, and saw them follow	
water that was t unto wine	
your sorrow shall be t to joy	
sun shall be t into darkness	
Repent ye therefore, and t	
everyone of you should t	
And t the glory of the. immortal God	
Which turned his t unto a lie	
they t to the Lord, the veil1	
I marvel that ye are so soon t	
i mai vei mat ye are so soon i	Gai 1.0
U	
UNBLAMEABLE	
u and without fault	Col 1.22
u in holiness before God	
u in nonness before Gou	11110353.13
UNBELIEF	
But I tell you of a tLuke 4:25*	
ecause of your u	Matt 17:20
he marvelled at their u	
Lord I believe: help thou my u	

u and hardness of heart	Mark 16:14
u to the wisdom	Luke 1:17
because of u they are broken off	Rom 11:20
UNBELIEF CONT.	
if they abide not still in u	Rom 1:23
now obtained mercythrough their u	Rom 11:32
wrapped all nations in uRom	12:32\
in the children of u	Eph 2:2
on the children of u	Col 3:6
an evil heart in u	Heb 3:1
they could not enter in because of u	Heb 3:19
after the same example into u	
_	
UNDEFILED	
ich is holy harmless undefiled	Heb 7:26
and let the chamber be u	Heb 13:4
Pure devotion and u	James 1:27
as of a lamb u	1 Peter 1:19
in peace, without spot and u	2 Peter 3:14
UNDERSTAND UNDERSTANDING	
neither do they u	Matt 13:13
ye shall hear, and shall not	Matt 13:14
u with their hearts	Matt 13:15
u the scriptures	Luke 24:45
none that u	Rom 3:11
u all secrets and knowledge	1 Cor 13:2
I u as a child	1 Cor 13:11
are ye yet without u?	Matt 15:16
that they might u	
Without u	
wisdom and spiritual u	Col 1:9
give thee u in all things	
blinded in their u	
of God which passeth all uP	

UNFEIGNED	
In the Holy Ghost, in love <i>u</i>	2 Cor 6:6
remembrance the u faith	2 Tim 1:5
and of faith unfeigned	
UNCLEAN UNCLEANESS	
gave them power over <i>u</i> spirits	Matt 10:1
When the u spirit is gone out	
a man vexed with an <i>u</i> spirit	Mark 1:23
they said, he had an <i>u</i> spirit	Mark 4:30
a man possessed of an <i>u</i> spirit	
had a spirit of an u devil	Luke 4:32
which were vexed with <i>u</i> spirits	
For u Spirits crying	
not call any man common or u	Acts 10:28
unto their hearts lusts unto u defile	
members servants to <i>u</i> and	John 6:19
Or else were your children <i>u</i>	1 Cor 7:14
touch no u thing	
UNCORRUPT	
with <i>u</i> doctrine	Titus 2:7
UNGODLINESS - UNGODLY	
turn away the <u>u</u> of Jacob	Rom 11:26
we should deny u	Titus 2:12
died for us, which were <u>u</u>	Rom 5:6
UNHOLY	
to sinners, to u and unclean	1 Tim1:9
to father and mother, unthankful, u	
of the testament, as an u thing	
UPRIGHT	
stand <i>u</i> on thy feet	Acts 14:10

V

VAIN VAINII I	
subdued to v	Rom 8:20
thoughts of the wise, that they be v	1 Cor 3:20
in v of their mind	Eph 4:17
deceive you with v words	Eph 5:6
philosophy and deceitful v	Col 2:8
from your v conversation	Peter 1:18
VENGEANCE	
o flee from the <i>v</i> to com	Matt 3:7
these be the days of v	Luke 21:22
yet v suffereth not to	liveActs 28:4
the day of v	Rom 2:5
Is God unrighteous, which taketh v	Rom 3:5
v is mine and I will reward	Rom 12:19
to take v on them that do evil	Rom 13:4.
obey not for fear of v only	Rom 13:5
v of eternal fire	Jude 7
obey not for fear of v only	2 Cor 10:6
In flaming fire rendering v	2 Thess 1:8
VANTAGE	
we have v	Acts 19:25
mine own with v	Luke 19:23
much v with prophesying	Acts 16:16
by this craft we have v	Acts 19:25
were v unto me, I counted loss	Phil 3:7
VIRTUE	
the v that went out of him	Mark 5:30
and the v of his resurrection	Phil 3:10
ye should shew the <u>v</u>	1 Peter 2:9
him that hath called us by v	2 Peter 1:3
add to your faith y and to y	2 Peter 1:5

W

WAGES	
But be content with your wand took w of them	
WAKE	
W therefore	. Matt 24:42
to w him out of sleep	. John 10:40
keeper of the prison w out of his sleep	
that whither we w or sleep	1 Thess 5:10
WAIT WAITING WAITED	
that a ship should w on him	Mark 3:9
Herodias laid w for him	Mark 6:19
the people w for Zacharias	Luke 1:21
they all w for him	Luke 8:40
cometh not with w	
w for the moving of the water	
but to w for the promise of. Father	
them that w on him	Acts 10:7
WALK WALKED	
he w on the water	Matt 14:29
Rise and w	Luke 5:23
take up thy bed and w	John 5:8
shall not w in darkness	John 8:12
w in a new life	Rom 6:4
w not after the flesh	Rom 8:1
w not sfter the flesh but after the Spirit	Rom 8:4
For we w in faith	2 Cor 5:7
In time passed ye w	Eph 2:2
We should w in them	Enh 2:10

WALK WALKED CONT.	
w worthy of the vocation	Eph 4:1
w circumspectly	Eph 5:15
might w worthy	Col 1:10
w worthy of God	1Thess 2:12
w about seeking	1 Peter 5:8
we w in the light	1John 1:7
WAR	
w and rumours of w	Matt 24:6
w and fighting	James 4:1
w not fleshly	2 Cor 10:3
No man that w	2 Tim 2:4
Whence cometh w	James 4:1
WASH	
w their wounds	Acts 16:33
w away thy sins	Acts 22:16
WATCH	
W and pray	Matt 26:41
w unto prayer	1 Peter 4:7
WATER	
I baptize you in w	Matt 3:11
A cup of cold w I baptize with w	Matt 10:42
	John 1:26
Rivers of w of life	
- f 4111 - f 41 f 12f-	D 21 /

WATER CONT.	
w of life freely	Rev 22:17
WAVER	
shall not w in his heart	Mark 11:23
that no man w in his own meaning	Rom 14:5
w and carried with every wind	Eph 4:14
of our hope without w	-
ask in faith, and w not	
purge your hearts, ye w minded	
WAY	
broad is the w	Matt 7:13
w of God truly	Matt 22:16
climbeth up some other w	
I am the w, the truth.	
The w of salvation	
We have a w	
a more excellent w	
unstable in all his w	James 1:8
w of righteousness	2 Peter 2:21
WEAK	
But the flesh is w	
w in his feet	
to receive the w	
the w things of the world to confound	
For when I am w	
For when we were yet w	
w because of the flesh	
Another, which is w eateth herbs	
WEALTH	
minister of God for thy w	Rom 13:4

WEALTH CONT.	
neighbor unto his w and edifying	Rom 15:2
every man seek another's w	
WEAPONS	
lanterns and torches and w	John 18:3
w of our warfare	2 Cor 10:4
WEARY	
pray and not to be w	18:1
not be w of well doing	Gal 6:9
be not w in well doing	2 Thess 3:13
WEEP	
Why make ye this ado, and w	Mark 5:37
and began to w	Mark 14:72
Blessed are ye that w now	Luke 6:21
ye shall wail and w	
and said unto her, w not	
what do ye mean w	Acts 21:13
w with them that w	Rom 12:15
sorrow ye, and w	James 4:9
ye rich men. w and howl	
w not: behold a lionof the tribe of Juda	Rev 5:1
w and wail in themselves	
WEEPING	
a voice heard, mourning, w	Matt 3:18
Rachel w for her children	
be w and gnashing of teeth	Matt 8:12
behind him w and washing his feet	
at the sepulcher w	
WEIGHT	
Eternal w of glory	2 Cor 4:17

WELL	
fulfilled as w in earth Matt 6:1	0
vipers how can ye say w.when ye Matt 12:3	4
w prophesied of you, Esaias Matt 15:	7
w good servant and faithful Matt 25:2	1
might have been w sold Matt 23:9)(
a w of waterJohn 4:1	4
w without water2 Peter 2:1	7
WEPT	
Beheld the city and wLuke 19:4	1
And Jesus w John 11:3	5
WHATSOEVER	
w ye would that men Matt 7:1	2
w things are truePPhil 4:	8
WHELPS	
bread and to cast it unto w	6
WHITE	
not make one hair w Matt .5: 3	6
w already to harvestJohn 4: 3	5
walk with me in wRev 3:	4
WHOLE	
gain the w world Matt 16:2	6
The w have no needMark 2:1	
Put on the w armour of GodEph 6:1	
keep the w LawJames 2:1	0
WHOLESOME	
Thing that is contrary to w doctrine1 Tim 1:	
w words, of our Lord Jesus Christ1 Tim 6:	
the example of the w words2 Tim 1:1	3

WHOLESOME CONT.	
not suffer w doctrine	2 Tim 4:3
honesty, and with the w words	
WICKED	
fiery darts of the w	Eph 6:16
then shall that w be uttered	
WICKEDNESS	
theft, covetousness, w	Mark 7:22
ravening and w	Luke 11:39
w covetousness	Rom 1:29
maliciousness and w	1 Cor 5:8
against spiritual w	Eph 6:12
a world of w	James3:6
is altogether set on w	1 John 5:19
WIFE WIVES	
looketh on a w lusting	Matt 5:28
I have married a w	Luke 14:20
Remember Lot's w	Luke 17:32
w keep silence in the	1Cor 14:34
head of the w	Eph 5:23
WILL	
my Father's w	Matt 7:21
I w be thou clean	Matt 8:3
w of the flesh	John 1:13
for to w is present with me	Rom 7:18
fulfilled the w of the flesh	Eph 2:3
both to w and also to do	Phil 2:13
And let whosoever w	Rev 22:17
WILLING	
spirit is w	Matt 26:41
Pilate w to content the people	
Felix w to shew the Jews a pleasure	

WILLING CONT.	
under captain, w to save Paul	Acts 27:43
God, w to shew his wrath	
w of their own accord	2 Cor 8:3
if there be first a w mind	2 Cor 8:12
not if it were of necessity, but w	Phile :14
God w very abundantly	Heb 6:17
For if we sin w	Heb 10:26
WIND	
floods came, and the w blew	Matt 7:25
Then he arose, and rebuked the w	Matt 8:26
both w and sea obey him	Matt 8:27
arose a great storm of w	Mark 4:37
And the w allayed	Mark 4:39
w bloweth where he listeth	John 3:8
arose with a great w that blew	John 6:18
the coming of a mighty w	Acts 2:2
every w of doctrine	Eph 4:14
WIT	
That is to w Christ	Matt 23:8
at his w and answers	Luke 2:47
but in w be perfect	1 Cor 14:20
I do you to w after what manner	1 Cor 15:2
I do you to w	2 Cor 8:1
that is to w of the congregation	Col 1:18
Let him that hath w	Rev 13:18
WITNESS WITNESSES	
Moses commanded, in w to them	Matt 8:16
in w to them and to the Gentiles	
same came as a w	John 1:7
ye receive not our w	
· which is a faithful <i>w</i>	
whoredom theft false w	

WIITNESS WITNESSES CONT.	
in the mouth of two or three w	Matt 18:16
steal not bear not false w	Matt 19:18
under your feet for a wbear not false w defraud no man	Mark 6:11
	Mark 10:19
all bare him w	Luke 4:22
for a w unto them	Luke 5:14
as a w to bear w of the light	John 1:7
but to bear w of the Light	John 1:8
WOMAN	
w great is thy faith	Matt15:28
W behold thy son	John 19:26
Not to touch a w But the w is the glory of the man	1 Cor 7:1
among the children of w	
blessed art thou among w	Luke 1:28
WONDERS	
great miracles, and w	Mat 24:24
and w to deceive	Mark 13:22
Except ye see signs and w	John 4:48
I will shew w in heaven	Acts 2:19
And many w and signs	Acts 2:43
In mighty Signs and w	Rom 15:19
he did great w	Rev 13:13
WORD WORDS	
but speak the w only	Matt 8:8
every idol w	
my w shall abide	
than hast the w	

WORD WORDS	
not unto you in w only	1 Thess1:5
dividing the w of truth justly Preach the w be fervent	2 Tim2:15
	Heb 4:12
water through the w	Eph 5:26
Minish of the w	Rev 22:19
WORK WORKS	
after their w do not	
shew him greater w	John 5:20
w the w of him that sent me	John 9:4
when no man can w	John 9:4
and greater w than these	John 14:12
every man's w shall appear	1 Cor 3:13
not of w lest any man should boast	Eph 2:9
that the old man with his w	1 Cor.6:7
w out your own salvation	Phil 2:12
w with your own hands	1 Thess 4:11
that the old man with his w	Col 3:9
loose the w of the devil	1 John 3:8
have her perfect w	James 1:4
w shall follow them	Rev14:13
WORKMAN	
w is worthy to have his meat	Matt 10:10
work say to the w	
A w that needeth not to be ashamed	2 Tim 2:15
WORKMANSHIP	
his w created in Christ Jesus	Eph 2:10
WORLD	
Ye are the light of the w	Matt 5:14
Ye are the light of the w	

WORLD CONT.	
all the w should be taxed	Luke 2:1
to win the whole w	Luke 9:25
For God so loveth the w	John 3:16
giveth life unto the w	John 6:33
I am the light of the w	John 8:12
not as the w giveth	John 14:27
If the w hate youJ	ohn 15:18
in the w shall ye have tribulation	John 16:33
like unto this w	Rom16:2
god of this w hath blinded	2 Cor 4:4
from this present evil w	Gal 1:4
to the course of this w	Eph 2:2
are w minded	Phil 3:19
himself unspotted of the w	
friendship of the w is enmity	
If any man love the w	
w knoweth you not	
though the w hate you	
Saviour of the w	
WORM	
their w dieth not	Mark 9:44
Where their w dieth not	Mark 9:48
and vermin, and w	Acts 10:12
WORSE	
w than themselves	Matt 12:45
w than the first	Matt 27:64
and so is the rent w	Mark 2:21
but waxed w and w	Mark 5:26
then that which is w	John 2:10
sin no more, lest a w	
are we the <i>w</i>	
hetter manner hut after a w	

WORSE CONT.	
and is w than an infide	11 Tim 5:8
deceivers shall wax w	
WORSHIP	
are come to w him	Matt 2:2
I may come and w him also	Matt 2:8
fall down and w me	Matt 4:9
he ran and w him	Mark 5:6
In vain they <i>w</i> me	Mark 7:7
and kneeled down and w him	Mark 15:19
If thou therefore wilt w me	Luke 4:7
And they w him	Luke 24:53
w in this mountain	John 4:20
where men ought to wJ	ohn 4:20
WORTHY	
Shoes I am not w to bear	Matt 3:11
answered and said: Sir I am not w	Matt 8:8
for the workman is w	
w to be called thy son	Luke 15:19
not w of the glory	Rom 8:18
walk w of the vocation	
walk w of the Lord	Col 1:10
would walk w of God, and glory	1 Thess1:12
counted w of the kingdom of Go	d2 Thess 1:5
God make you w of the calling	2 Thess 1:10
with me in white: for they are w	Rev 3:4
no man was found w to open	Rev 5:4
WOUND WOUNDED	
and w him, and departed	Luke 10:30
and bound up his w	
they w, and cast out	
and w it in linen clothes and odours	
washed their we and was hantized	

WOUND WOUNDED CONT.	
washed their w; and was baptized Acts 16	5:33
out of that house naked and w Acts 19	
w their weak conscience 1 Cor 8	3:12
w to death; and his deadly wRev 1	3:3
whose deadly w was healedRev 13	3:12
the w of a sword and did liveRev 13	3:14
WRATH	
move not your children to wEph	6:4
not appointed us unto w1 Thess	5:9
without w or doubting1 Tim	2:8
I swear in my wHeb 3	3:11
I have sworn in my wHeb	4:3
and slow to wJames 1	:19
For the w of man worketh notJames 1	:20
and from the w of the LambRev	5:16
the great day of his w is comeRev	5:17
WRESTLE	
we w not against flesh and bloodEph 6	5:12
WRITE	
Moses suffered to wMatt 1	0:4
that I would w unto theeLuke	1:3
sit down quickly and w fiftyLuke 1	6:6
Take thy bill and w four scoreLuke 1	6:7
did w, Jesus of Nazareth King of thr Jews John 1	:19
W not, King of the JewsJohn 19):21
we w unto them abstain Acts 15	5:20
no certain thing to wActs 25	5:26
WRITTEN	
it is w man shall not live by breadMatt	4:4
it is w he shall give his angels	4:6

MID VERTEX CONTE	
WRITTEN CONT.	
names are w in heaven	
were w to put us in remembrance	
In the law it is <i>w</i>	
Ye are our epistle w in our hearts	2 Cor 3:2
and w not withink	2 Cor 3:3
it is w I believed and thereforeh ave I spoken	2 Cor 4:13
YEAR	
let it alone this y also	Luke 13:8
a thousand y	
y of the lord	
y went to Jerusalem	
y shall not fail	
a thousand y as one day	
YESTERDAY	
Same y and today	Heb 13:8
Y the seventh hour	John 5:52
as thou diddest the Egyptian y	Acts 7:28
Jesus Christ y and today and forever	
YET	
the end shall not y	Mark 13:7
y shall he live	John 11:25
we were y weak	Rom 5:6
y are ye in your sins	1 Cor 15:17
y not I but Christ	Gal 5:1
y without sin	
not y appear	
Yield Yielded	
a loud voice, and v up the ghost	

Yield Yielded CONT	
and y up the ghost	Acts 5:10
and did y fruit	
YOKE	
foal of an ass used to the y	Matt 21:5
Take my y upon you	
I have bought five y of oxen	
that ye would put a y on	
Bear not a strangers y	
The y of bondage	
as are under the y	
YOUTH	
and did y fruit	Mark 4:8
from my y	
all these have I kept from my y	
Let no man despise thy y	
Lusts of y avoid	
ZEAL	
z of thine house hath even eaten me .	John 2:17
hatred. Variance z Gal	

Bible Land Maps

